

# THE ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY



Published by the  
STATE DEPARTMENT  
OF  
ARCHIVES AND HISTORY

---

VOL. 2

NO. 1

---

SPRING ISSUE  
1940

WETUMPKA PRINTING CO.,  
Printers and Publishers  
Wetumpka, Ala  
1946

## CONTENTS

	Page
Announcement, Governor Frank M. Dixon.....	4
Hands, a Poem, Edith Tatum.....	7
Central Unit, Alabama World War Memorial Building.....	8
Permanent Home for Department of Archives and History..	9
Alabama State Emblems, Marie Bankhead Owen.....	11
The Supreme Court of Alabama, Its Organization and Sketches of Its Chief Justices—No. 5— Chief Justice John C. Anderson.....	23
Books About the South, Emily Sinclair Calcott.....	28
One of Lee's Flags of Truce, Judge Walter B. Jones.....	36
The Poets on Fish Creek, Renwick C. Kennedy.....	44
Diary of Captain Edward Crenshaw of the Confederate Army.....	52
Charles Teed Pollard, Industrialist, Mildred Beale.....	72
Early History of Madison County, Thomas Jones Taylor....	86
Village Transcendentalist, a Poem, Mary B. Ward.....	92
This House of Paradoxes, a Poem, Bert Henderson.....	93
Billboard .....	94
Genealogical Department—Queries.....	95
Book Reviews.....	96

## ANNOUNCEMENT

*By Frank M. Dixon, Governor*

As Chairman of the Board of Trustees, Alabama State Department of Archives and History, it gives me great pleasure to announce that the Legislature in 1939 passed an Act reviving the publication of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*. This magazine was established in 1930 but after four issues was discontinued owing to the change of administration and a stringent economy program. With the increased impetus in all educational and patriotic matters in the State it was felt by the Trustees of the Department, who fostered the Legislative Act restoring the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*, that that Department was under an obligation to carry out the policy of promoting Alabama history among the people as a whole as well as the professional classes.

It is not the purpose of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly* to confine its subject matter to a few learned articles each issue but to intersperse through its pages subject matter both for the scholar and the laity. There are many avenues through which the history of our State may be presented—articles based on painstaking research fully documented, articles in a lighter vein portraying the folk ways of certain of our more isolated communities, our history represented in named bridges throughout the State, stories of our old modes of travel, of social and economic phases of the life of our people from the most remote period of our recorded history, reviews of books that are being written about our State or our section, or by Alabama authors on any subject, selected poems from the pens of our men and women of creative ability, biographical studies of certain of our public men and women who were notable figures in their day, men and women who left an imprint upon the life of the State itself and whose names are now forgotten by the average person—in fact every phase of the lives of our people from the Spanish invasion to the present time. It is believed by the Trustees of the Department of Archives and History that a record of current history is highly important for the future and for



that reason the *Alabama Historical Quarterly* may differ from the method used in publications of this type by some other States and institutions.

Under the Act re-establishing the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*, the publication is to be edited by the Director of the Department, Mrs. Marie Bankhead Owen. At the request of the Director, it has given me very great pleasure to designate as Co-Editor of the *Quarterly*, Dr. Emmett Kilpatrick, a native of Wilcox County, Alabama, a descendant of Colonial ancestors, a graduate of Johns Hopkins University, with the A. M. Degree and of the University of Paris, France, Docteur es-Lettres with honors, 1924. This degree is bestowed by the French Government through the University and has been received by very few foreigners. Dr. Kilpatrick was for nearly a dozen years Professor of Romance Languages at the University of South Carolina and is now head of the Department of French at State Teachers College, Troy. He served in the World War as First Lieutenant in the 117th Field Artillery of the American Expeditionary Forces and was Captain of Field Artillery in the American Legion of the Lithuanian Army following the Armistice. Dr. Kilpatrick was Assistant Business Manager of the American Commission to negotiate peace in Paris from December, 1918, to September, 1919, and was one of the official interpreters. He was a member of the Legislature from Perry County for four years under the Brandon administration. Dr. Kilpatrick is serving as Co-Editor of the *Quarterly* without remuneration and I take this opportunity to express the thanks of the Board of Trustees of the Department for this valuable aid.

I wish also on behalf of the Board of Trustees to thank all the other contributors to the *Quarterly*, all of whom have rendered this patriotic service gratuitously. While the Legislature has stipulated in the Act reviving the *Quarterly* that copies shall go to all public and high school libraries in the State and to all public officials, the issues, which will be limited to 1,000 copies, should be available to the general public. For that reason the Board of Trustees have set the price of \$2.00 per annum for the four issues to any one wishing to subscribe to the *Quarterly*. Through this modest subscription price the magazine can be enlarged and more fully illustrated

than the sum appropriated by the Legislature will warrant. The public is therefore not only invited but urged to become a part of this patriotic movement. Subscriptions by individuals should be made payable to the Department of Archives and History and will be handled by the State Finance Department as is the case with all public funds.

Respectfully,

FRANK M. DIXON, Governor,  
and Chairman Board of Trustees,  
Alabama State Department of  
Archives and History.

BOARD OF TRUSTEES  
ALABAMA STATE DEPARTMENT OF  
ARCHIVES AND HISTORY

Governor Frank M. Dixon, Chairman

---

First District—Hon. Joseph H. Lyons, Mobile

Second District—Hon. R. Tyler Goodwyn, Montgomery

Third District—Hon. Chauncey Sparks, Eufaula

Fourth District—Judge C. E. Thomas, Prattville

Fifth District—Hon. L. B. Rainey, Gadsden

Sixth District—Judge Robert K. Greene, Greensboro

Seventh District—Senator John H. Bankhead, Jasper

Eighth District—Judge David A. Grayson, Huntsville

Ninth District—Hon. Hugh Morrow, Birmingham



**CENTRAL UNIT, ALABAMA WORLD WAR MEMORIAL BUILDING, A JOINT FEDERAL AND STATE PROJECT**

*The building is a steel and concrete fireproof monolith. It is occupied solely by the Alabama State Department of Archives and History, its several divisions and a number of historical museums. The plans provide wings which will be constructed at a later date. Warren, Knight and Davis, of Birmingham, were the architects.*

## PERMANENT HOME FOR DEPARTMENT OF ARCHIVES AND HISTORY

The great collections of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History at last have a permanent home. Upon the creation of the Department by the Legislature of 1901, the work of the Department, under the direction of Thomas M. Owen, set up its headquarters in the cloak room of the Senate in the Capitol. Almost at once the collections began to grow to such an extent that new quarters were found to be essential. When the south wing of the Capitol was built, half of the basement and half of the top floor were given over to the Department for its archival collections and for its historical reference library and the administrative offices. Very soon these quarters were found to be inadequate for the fast growing collections. An old brick church and four residences on the block now occupied by the new building were secured and these, too, soon were filled. When funds were raised by public subscription for the purchase of a site for the World War Memorial Building, which was to be occupied by the Department of Archives and History, the greater part of the lot opposite the south end of the Capitol was purchased. Governor W. W. Brandon on behalf of the State purchased the remaining lots with the exception of one corner which had been purchased during the Kilby administration for the White House Association. The First White House of the Confederacy was a building rented by the Confederate Government for the occupancy of President Jefferson Davis and his family. They had resided in the house a few weeks when the Confederate capital was removed to Richmond and the President and his family, of course, left Montgomery. In 1920 the State purchased the old house and removed it to the lot Governor Kilby had purchased opposite the Capitol. All other buildings on the square now occupied by the World War Memorial Building were torn away, leaving spacious grounds which will in time be landscaped and beautified.

The Alabama World War Memorial Building is one of the handsomest structures in the South and when the wings are eventually added it will be sufficiently spacious for the ever expanding collections of the Department. The interior of the building is lined with Alabama marble. Stately marble

columns are found in the lobbies on both the first and second floors. While the structure itself is completed it will be several weeks before the equipment is installed and all the divisions and museums set up in their proper rooms.

The first public ceremony to take place in the new building will occur on June 14th, which is National Flag Day. At that time various patriotic organizations invited by the Board of Trustees of the Department to present flags of the several nations who have held sovereignty over the State, in whole or in part, will be in charge of the ceremonies. The beautiful bronze doors on the Washington Street entrance will be dedicated as will the marble lobby on the second floor. That lobby is to be devoted to statuary and historic flags. Not only will the flags of Spain, France, Great Britain, the United States and the Confederacy be given their place in this beautiful marble hall but the flag of the Republic of Alabama and the State flag will all have their place. These flags are made of handsome Federal silk embroidered in their proper designs and are on flag poles and will be placed in bronze standards.

## ALABAMA STATE EMBLEMS

*By Marie Bankhead Owen*

(A bulletin covering this subject may be had upon request of the Department of Archives and History, Montgomery, Alabama)



### ALABAMA STATE CAPITOL

*The central unit was built in 1849 and was the first Capitol of the Provisional Confederate Congress, 1861. Wings have been added through the years.*

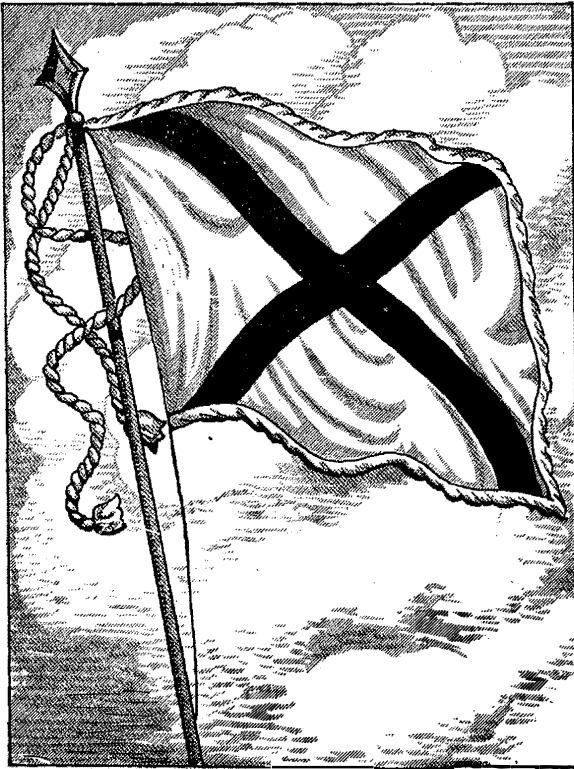
### STATE CAPITOL

Montgomery is the capital of Alabama. The Territorial capital, 1817-1819, was located at St. Stephens in Washington County, on the Tombigbee River. In 1819, when the population had increased to the required number for a state, Governor William Wyatt Bibb called the members of the Territorial Legislature to meet in Huntsville. It was later decided that the capital city should be nearer the geographical center of the State. A rich plantation community near Selma, between the Cahaba and the Alabama Rivers, was designated as the future capital city. After the State was admitted to the Union a capitol was built and the Legislature thereafter met at Cahaba. On account of the floods from the Alabama and Cahaba Rivers it was found advisable to select another location. Tuscaloosa was then chosen as the State capital.

Twenty years later, the Legislature decided once more to change the State capital. A number of places sought the honor but Montgomery was selected.

The cost of erecting the new capitol building was met by the citizens of Montgomery. Two years after its completion the building was burned and the State paid for rebuilding it. It was in that building that the Confederate Government was organized. On the portico Jefferson Davis was inaugurated President of the new government. Wings have been added on the north, east and south until now the building is regarded as one of the most beautiful capitols in the country.

The central unit of the capitol was designed by Stephen D. Button of Philadelphia who became famous as an architect through the succeeding years.



ALABAMA STATE FLAG  
*Adopted by the Legislature of 1895.*

Until the State seceded from the Union Alabama used the United States flag on all formal occasions. However, when the Secession Convention met in Montgomery in 1861 and voted to withdraw from the Union a flag made by the ladies of Montgomery was presented to the Convention by one of the delegates. This flag became the first flag of the State.

On one side of the flag was the Goddess of Liberty holding in her right hand



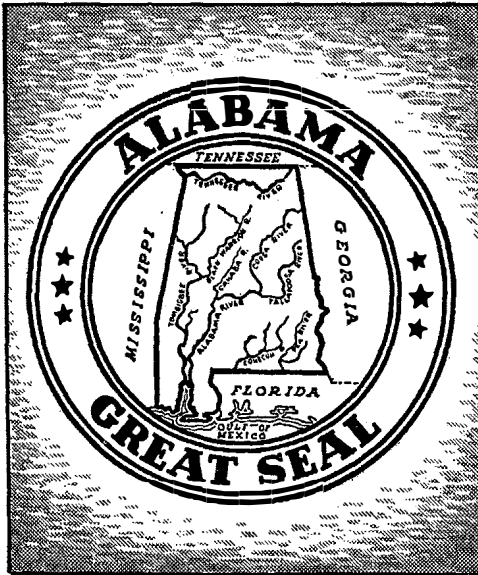
an unsheathed sword; in the left a small flag with one star. In an arch above this figure were the words in Latin "Noli Me Tangere"—Independent Now and Forever. On the reverse side there was a large cotton plant in full fruit and flower, with a rattle snake at the roots about to spring into action, signifying the danger of treading upon the rights of the people. This flag floated over the dome of the Capitol for the day, but on account of the inclement weather was lowered and placed in the Governor's office for safe keeping. There it remained until taken by a Yankee soldier with Wilson's raiders at the end of the War Between the States. For many years this flag reposed in a museum cabinet in Des Moines, Iowa, labeled as a "Captured Confederate Battle Flag." When the facts were brought to the attention of the Governor of Iowa in 1938, the Legislature of that State voted to return this flag to the State of Alabama. It was brought to Montgomery accompanied by three members of the Legislature of Iowa as a guard of honor, and presented with solemn ceremonies to Governor Frank M. Dixon, in the presence of a joint session of the Legislature. This flag was called the "Secession Flag of Alabama" or the "Flag of the Republic of Alabama."

The next flag that floated over the dome of the Capitol in Montgomery was the Confederate "Stars and Bars". After the defeat of the Confederate Army (1865) which was fighting for independence, this flag was supplanted on the dome by the United States flag. It was not until February 16, 1895, that the Legislature of Alabama adopted a new State flag. This flag embodies the principal feature of the Confederate Battle Flag, which was a St. Andrews Cross, and the present State flag is a red St. Andrews Cross on a white field. This bill was introduced in the Legislature by the Honorable John W. A. Sanford, Jr., a member from Montgomery County. Under the law the flag is hoisted over the dome of the Capitol when the Legislature is in session and is used by the State on all occasions when it is necessary or customary to fly a flag, except when, in the opinion of the Governor, the National flag should be displayed. When the Legislature is in session the State flag flies from the Capitol dome and at other times it flies from a tall steel flag pole at the south end of the Capitol.

In 1923 the Legislature passed an act requiring that the State flag as well as the flag of the United States shall be dis-

played on school grounds every day in which the school is in session by those schools which are supported even in part by public funds. The State Superintendent of Education has ruled that the State flag shall be hoisted on a pole on the grounds of the school provided for that purpose. In the new act it is required that the school board of the county shall furnish and pay for the flags used on school grounds and a later act passed provides that the school teachers who fail to display the State flag on their grounds, when the weather is suitable, of course, shall not be paid their salaries.

### STATE SEAL



GREAT SEAL OF ALABAMA

*Used for the first fifty years of the State's history. Readopted as the Great Seal of Alabama by the Legislature of 1939.*

When William Wyatt Bibb, in 1817, was appointed Governor of the newly created Alabama Territory by President Monroe and opened Territorial offices in St. Stephens, he realized that the commissions and other State papers which he issued needed an official seal. Under a law of Congress a Territorial Governor was authorized to select a design for a seal. Governor Bibb realized that no design would be more effective than a map of the State showing its noble river courses. He therefore had a seal made carrying that design. Around the map, which also

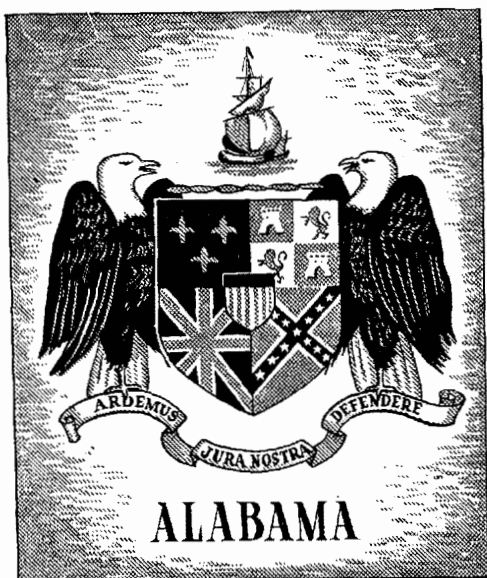
showed the states bounding Alabama, were the words "Alabama Executive Office". No other Department of State used that seal in any way whatever.

In 1819 when Alabama became a State, the Territorial seal was designated by the first Legislature as the State Seal, and was in use for fifty years. In 1868, the Reconstruction Legislature, made up in large part of men from other states who had come to Alabama as "Carpetbaggers" to take over the affairs of the State after the War Between the States, and partly of Negroes who had been put in the Legislature by these out-of-State men, the beautiful old seal which was definitely an Alabama emblem was abolished. These "Carpetbag" members of the Legislature who abolished the State's significant old seal desired to brand the people of Alabama, who had so lately been in arms against the Union, with a United States emblem. The Legislature therefore had a new seal made. It consisted of the shield of the United States seal and on the shield was an eagle. In the beak of the eagle was a scroll on which was written the words "Here We Rest". An Alabama author many years before had written an Indian legend which he later declared was purely fictitious, to the effect that the Indian word "Alabama" meant "Here We Rest". Later students of the subject declared that Alabama meant: "This is a goodly land; here we will make our home". Around the new emblem were placed the words "Alabama Great Seal". This Great Seal was used for seventy-one years to authenticate official documents by the Governor and the Secretary of State. Many officials used it as the letterhead of their stationery.

When the Legislature of 1939 assembled, a bill was introduced to restore the original seal as the Great Seal of Alabama. This movement had been sponsored by the Alabama Division, United Daughters of the Confederacy, and there was not a dissenting vote when the bill came up for action, either in the Senate or the House. Governor Frank M. Dixon approved the new law and the Secretary of State at once had a new Great Seal engraved. Once more the people of Alabama have a Great Seal that carries its own State map showing its magnificent rivers. At the time Governor Bibb first designed this executive seal there were no good roads in Alabama and all heavy shipping was done by the rivers. Nothing was known about the use of waterfalls for the manufacture of hydro-electric power. Today our great cities and our farm homes are lighted with the power of our rivers. Great in-

dustrial enterprises are carried on with electricity from that power. The same Legislature that passed a law restoring the map of the State as the Great Seal also passed a law providing for a coat-of-arms. Instead of the people of Alabama having to defend the phrase "Here We Rest", which implied to some that our people were lacking in energy and industry, we now have a proud motto on our State coat-of-arms. The English translation of the motto is "We dare defend our rights."

### STATE COAT-OF-ARMS



#### STATE COAT-OF-ARMS

*Adopted by the Legislature of 1939*

Since the beginning of recorded history distinguishing symbols have been used by nations, tribes, families and chieftains. Authors of Roman and Greek history have described the devices on the shields of heroes. These devices were also preserved in pictures and on antique vases. The ancient Chinese Empire was represented by the five-clawed dragon, and the Emperor of Japan by the chrysanthemum. Notable clans in the oriental world as well as in Europe are

signalized by heraldic emblems. When the Spaniards invaded Mexico, Indian chiefs bearing shields and banners met them. Indeed, the eagle on the present banner of Mexico is perhaps a copy of the eagle that was carved over the palace of Montezuma. There was not an Indian tribe in the Western World that did not have its tribal totem poles, or other tribal emblems, many of which are still preserved in museums.

Often these heraldic tribal or family symbols were tattooed or painted upon the bodies of the tribesmen. Heraldic designs in Western Europe are traced back to the dark ages. The tournament laws of Henry, the Fowler, required that contenders in the tournament should show four generations of arms-bearing ancestors.

No state in the Union has a more historically significant coat-of-arms than Alabama now boasts. The Bill to legalize a State coat-of-arms was introduced in the Alabama Legislature of 1939 by Senator James Simpson, of Jefferson County and was passed without a dissenting vote by both Houses. The coat-of-arms consists of a shield on which appears the emblems of the five governments that have held sovereignty over Alabama, either in whole or in part, for four hundred years—Spain, France, Great Britain, the United States, the Confederacy and again the United States. This shield is supported on either side by eagles, symbolic of courage. The crest is a ship of the model of the ships in which Iberville and Bienville sailed to our country from France and settled the first colony of white men in the Mobile country in 1699. The ship as the crest of the shield is also significant of the fact that Alabama is a maritime State. The motto beneath the shield in Latin is “Audemus jura nostra defendere”<sup>1</sup> Beneath the motto is the State name—“Alabama”.

The original design of the Alabama coat-of-arms was made in 1923 by B. J. Tieman, of New York, a distinguished authority on heraldry, at the request of Mrs. Marie Bankhead Owen, Director of the State Department of Archives and History. A few years later Mrs. Naomi Rabb Winston, of Washington, D. C., painted the completed design in oil. Mrs. Owen selected the motto, which was put into Latin by Professor W. B. Saffold of the University of Alabama. It was through the influence of Mrs. Juliet Perry Dixon, wife of Governor Frank M. Dixon, that official action was taken by the Legislature.

---

<sup>1</sup>Ou-da-mus yu-ra nos-tra da-fen-de-re.—“We Dare Defend Our Rights.”

## STATE BIRD



## THE YELLOWHAMMER

*Adopted as Alabama State Bird by the Legislature  
of 1927*

The yellowhammer is the State bird of Alabama. A bill introduced in the Legislature, 1927, by Representative Thomas E. Martin, of Montgomery County, was passed by the Legislature and approved by Governor Bibb Graves, September 6, 1927. The reason the yellowhammer was selected as the State bird was because the State has been known as the "Yellowhammer State" since the War Between the States. This

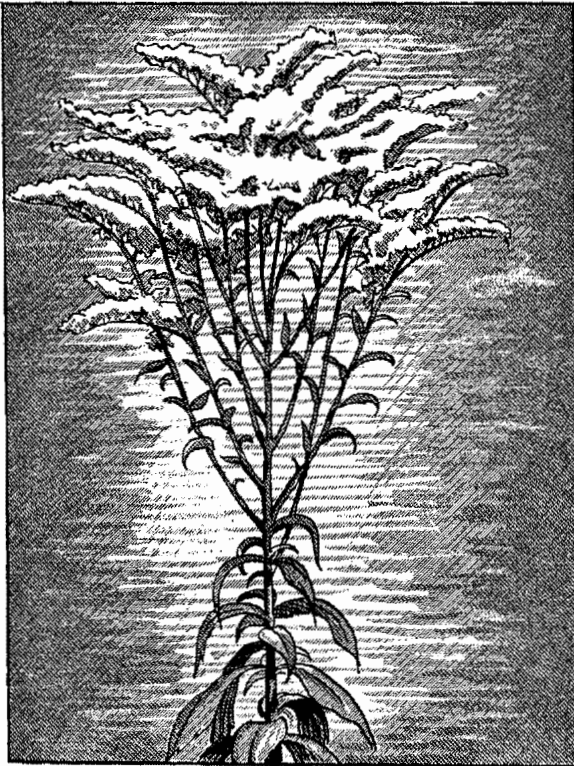
nickname was applied to the Confederate soldiers from Alabama due to an episode that occurred during the war itself. A company of young cavalry soldiers from Huntsville, under command of Reverend D. C. Kelly, who later became a Major under General Bedford Forrest, arrived at Hopkinsville, Kentucky, where General Forrest's troops were stationed. The officers and men of the Huntsville company wore fine new uniforms, whereas the soldiers who had long been on the battlefields of the Confederacy were dressed in faded, worn uniforms. On the sleeves, collars and coat tails of the new cavalry troop were bits of brilliant yellow cloth. As the company rode past Company A, Will Arnett who was a great

humoirst cried out in greeting, "Yallerhammer, yallerhammer, flicker, flicker!" This greeting brought a roar of laughter and from that moment the Huntsville soldiers were spoken of as the "Yellowhammer Company". The term quickly spread throughout the Confederate Army and all Alabama troops were referred to unofficially as the "Yellowhammers."

When the Confederate Veterans in Alabama were organized they took pride in being referred to as the "Yellowhammers" and wore a yellowhammer feather in their caps or lapels during their reunions.

It was very gratifying to the old soldiers when the yellowhammer was adopted as the State bird. They said that the bird, with its grey feathers and yellow patches with polka dots like bullet shots on its breast and a red bandanna on his neck, was a very proper selection as the State bird.

#### STATE FLOWER



THE GOLDENROD

*Adopted as Alabama State Flower by the  
Legislature of 1927*

A bill was introduced in the Legislature of 1927, by Representative Thomas E. Martin, of Montgomery County, making the goldenrod the State flower of Alabama. The bill was passed and approved by Governor Bibb Graves.

The reason for choosing the goldenrod was that it is a State-wide flower and that it had been popularized by Mrs. Aurora Pryor McClellan, of Athens, who hoped to see it made the National flower.

In the Legislature of 1939 a bill was introduced by Preston C. Clayton, of Barbour County, to change the State flower from the goldenrod to the cape jasmine. Objection was made that this flower only grew in the southern part of the State and was therefore sectional and not Statewide. The bill did not become a law so the goldenrod remains the State flower.

### ALABAMA'S GOLDENROD

*By Frances R. Durham*

From the Gulf in the south to the mountains  
That lift their fair strength to the skies,  
The goldenrod springs in bright fountains,  
The crest of the goldenrod flies.  
Out of the dusk of the grasses  
Where the meadows lie rich and broad  
Are spun the starry masses,  
Alabama's goldenrod.

A largesse for all who are living  
A wreath for her sacred dead;  
This land that is fruitful with giving  
This land by a thousand streams fed,  
Acclaims a gallant flower,  
By every hill and road,  
As her emblem of pride and power,  
Alabama's goldenrod.



---

STATE SONG

The words of "Alabama", the State song, were written by Miss Julia S. Tutwiler, a distinguished educator and humanitarian. It was first sung to an Austrian air but in 1931, through the interest of the Alabama Federation of Music Clubs, a tune written by Mrs. Edna Goekel Gussen, of Birmingham, was adopted by the Legislature as the official State song. The bill was introduced by the Honorable Tyler Goodwyn, of Montgomery, and was approved by Governor B. M. Miller.

The inspiration for writing the poem "Alabama" came to Miss Tutwiler after she returned to her native State from Germany where she had been studying new educational methods for girls and women. She found the people of Alabama greatly depressed due to Reconstruction conditions following the War Between the States. She recalled that in Germany patriotism was kept aflame by spirited songs. She thought that it would be helpful toward restoring the spirits of her own people to give them a new patriotic song; so she wrote a father-land song for us and called it "Alabama". The substance of the song is that we live in a land of wide rivers that have beautiful Indian names; that many flowers bloom in Alabama to make the land bright with color and sweet with perfume. She recalled to our minds the fact that orange trees grow on our seashore and that on our fertile land grow snowy cotton for our clothes and golden corn for our food; that inside the earth are mines of coal and iron and quarries of marble. But best of all she emphasized the fact that the people of Alabama are brave and true.

**"ALABAMA"***by**Miss Julia S. Tutwiler**State Song*

---

1

Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee,  
 From thy Southern shore where  
     groweth,  
 By the sea thine orange tree.  
 To thy Northern vale where floweth,  
 Deep and blue thy Tennessee,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee!

2

Broad the Stream whose name thou  
     bearest;  
 Grand thy Bigbee rolls along;  
 Fair thy Coosa—Tallapoosa  
 Bold thy Warrior, dark and strong,  
 Goodlier than the land that Moses  
 Climbed lone Nebo's Mount to see,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee!

3

From thy prairies broad and fertile,  
 Where thy snow-white cotton shines,  
 To the hills where coal and iron  
 Hide in thy exhaustless mines,  
 Strong-armed miners—sturdy farmers;  
 Loyal hearts whate'er we be,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee!

4

From thy quarries where the marble  
 White as that of Paros gleams  
 Waiting till thy sculptor's chisel,  
 Wake to life thy poet's dreams;  
 For not only wealth of nature,  
 Wealth of mind hast thou to fee,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee!

5

Where the perfumed southwind  
     whispers,  
 Thy magnolia groves among,  
 Softer than a mother's kisses,  
 Sweeter than a mother's song;  
 Where the golden jasmine trailing  
 Woos the treasure-laden bee,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee!

6

Brave and pure thy men and women,  
 Better this than corn and wine,  
 Make us worthy, God in Heaven,  
 Of this goodly land of Thine;  
 Hearts as open as our doorways,  
 Liberal hands and spirits free,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 We will aye be true to thee!

7

Little, little, can I give thee,  
 Alabama, mother mine;  
 But that little—hand, brain, spirit,  
 All I have and am are thine,  
 Take, O take the gift and giver,  
 Take and serve thyself with me,  
 Alabama, Alabama,  
 I will aye be true to thee!

## THE SUPREME COURT OF ALABAMA, ITS ORGANIZATION AND SKETCHES OF ITS CHIEF JUSTICES

By John C. Anderson, Chief Justice  
No. 5

(The Spring issue of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*, 1930, carried the first of the series of articles by Judge John C. Anderson on the subject above. The series was continued through succeeding issues, including, in all, sketches of Chief Justice Clement Comer Clay, Abner S. Lipscomb, Reuben A. Saffold and Henry Hitchcock. The sketch of Chief Justice Henry W. Collier, presented in this issue of the *Quarterly*, was written by Judge Anderson shortly before his death, which occurred in Montgomery, on April 26th. The series will be continued in succeeding issues of the *Quarterly*, by Judge Lucien D. Gardner, successor to Judge Anderson as Chief Justice of the Alabama Supreme Court.)



Henry Watkins Collier, jurist and statesman of Alabama, for many years Judge of the Supreme Court, and afterwards Governor of the State, was born in Lunenburg County, Virginia, January 17, 1801. James Collier, his father, was a Revolutionary soldier in the Virginia line and a planter in the state, as was his father before him. In the fall of 1801 the Collier family removed to Abbeville district, South Carolina. Here the son was educated by Dr. Moses Waddell, famous teacher of senators, governors, and congressmen. The future Governor was one of many who learned success in the academy of log and brick at Willington, South Carolina. John C. Calhoun, W. H. Crawford, Hugh S. Legare, George McDuffie, A. B. Longstreet, James L. Pettigru also studied under the stern and scholarly eye of Dr. Waddell. Henry Collier, not the least successful, at twenty-seven held the distinguished position of circuit judge of Alabama.

The Collier family moved to Madison County, Alabama, in 1818. The future jurist, continuing his studies, read law with Judge John Haywood of Murfreesboro, Tennessee (celebrated as a judge both in Tennessee and North Carolina), and with the Honorable John McKinley of Huntsville, Alabama (afterwards judge of the Supreme Court of the United States).

In 1821, before he was twenty-one years old, young Collier was admitted to the bar and commenced practice at Huntsville. In 1823, following his election to the Legislature, he removed to Tuscaloosa, then the seat of State government, where he continued to reside until the time of his death. He entered into partnership with the Honorable Sion L. Perry and was very successful in his profession. In 1827 he went to the Legislature from Tuscaloosa County, and the following year was chosen by that body as judge of the circuit for the Tuscaloosa district over Judge Eli Shortridge. According to the arrangement then existing, he became automatically one of the judges of the Supreme Court. This arrangement ended in 1832, when a separate Supreme Court was established. He continued to serve as circuit judge until 1836, however, when he was appointed by Governor C. C. Clay Associate Justice of the Supreme Court upon the resignation of Judge Reuben Saffold. The following year he was elected Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, a position which he held for the following twelve years, until he was nominated for Governor. His decisions are spread through thirty-five volumes of the reports of the Supreme Court of Alabama.

Although never prominent as a politician, Judge Collier had so completely won the confidence of Alabamians by his wise decisions and stable temperament that in 1849 he was chosen Governor without serious opposition. It was because of his judicial nature, in fact, that he was elected, for the political situation in Alabama was inflammable. The protracted National struggle concerning slave and free territory had disturbed all Southern states to such an extent that old party lines of Whig and Democrat were virtually dissolved. Parties were reorganized into Southern Rights and Union, with extreme and violent declarations from both. Judge Collier declared for neither secession nor union, but instead for Southern solidarity; and solidarity remained the text throughout his administration.

In his inaugural address, December 17, 1849, he promised Alabama representation at a convention of the slave states. "When that convention shall assemble," he said, "Alabama will be there. Some of her chosen sons shall give utterance to the united sentiment of her people—with her

persecuted sisters, she will present an unbroken front to insult and usurpation." Later, when time and place for the convention had been arranged for June, 1850, in Nashville, Tennessee, he fulfilled his promise by calling upon the Legislature to "announce the ultimatum of Alabama upon the grave question which now convulses the union."

But further than sending representatives he refused to go, urging, with native caution, a policy of watchful waiting. He insisted that no actual step be taken until after the second session of the Nashville convention had adjourned and "the conventions of Georgia and Texas and the legislatures of some other states, especially Virginia, had acted." Consequently he refused to call a convention in Alabama.

Shortly afterward, Clay's compromise of 1850 (one provision was that various territories entering the union were to decide their own status so far as slavery was concerned) placated the South somewhat and put off secession for a decade. Alabama showed her confidence in Governor Collier's conciliatory policy by re-electing him in 1851 without even the formality of a political campaign on his part. He was accepted by the Southern Rights party after their leader, William L. Yancey, had refused to make the race, and elected by an overwhelming majority over the ultra-union Democrat B. G. Shields. By masterful strategy he had rebuilt his party by the time of the National elections of 1852. Alabama's electoral votes were cast for the Democrat, Franklin Pierce.

At the expiration of his second term Governor Collier was offered a position in the United States Senate, but declined and retired to private life. His health had been fatally impaired through his arduous labors in public service.

During his terms of office, Governor Collier not only held the State to a steady middle ground through the tense, sectional agitation, but promoted various issues of an educational and economic nature. He suggested many schemes of internal improvement, including railroads, which were not completed until many years later, and the opening of waterways for the transportation of coal to Mobile. In his message of 1851 Governor Collier urged the development of manufacturing and a discriminating tax on the products of the

anti-slavery section. Home manufactures and direct trade with Europe he pointed to as economically imperative. He said that if instead of "continuing the ceaseless round of buying negroes to make cotton to buy more negroes to make more cotton and exhaust the lands, once planters would diversify the employment of their capital, they would be far more independent."

Governor Collier earnestly urged that the public school system should be remodeled so as to meet the needs of the people, although he did not advocate a tax for education. Alabama's plan of common school education, he said, was "eminently defective." He thought it a patriotic duty "to endeavor to raise it higher."

At his invitation and as his guest, Miss Dorothea Dix, celebrated New England social reformer, visited the State in the interest of a plan to establish a hospital for the insane. She suggested other innovations of a philanthropic nature, such as the establishment of a library at the state penitentiary, which were made.

It was during Governor Collier's administration that Alabama was asked by the Washington Monument Association to present a memorial stone to be placed in that great shaft. When the beautiful white marble from Talladega County was presented, the committee at first declined to accept it, declaring that it was of such superior quality that it could only have come from the quarries of Italy.

Governor Collier lived but two years after retiring to private life. In the last year of his life he sought relief at Bailey Springs in Lauderdale County. But his disease was incurable and he died at that place on the twenty-eighth of August, 1855. Governor Collier was a man of clear intellect, and being a laborious student, he was possessed of vast legal learning. In his personal habits he was extremely simple, and although a man of wealth and distinction his whole manner of life was plain and unostentatious. He discharged the duties of every position he was called upon to fill, with eminent credit to himself and to the satisfaction of those who clothed him with fame and authority.

In addition to his judicial and political activities, he was important in various other walks of life. He was first president of the Alabama Historical Society (the duties of which were transferred to the Alabama State Department of Archives and History in 1901). At one time he was General of the State Militia. He was a steward of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and one of the eight men who built the present church at Tuscaloosa.

Judge Collier was descended from an old Colonial family of which Sir Francis Wyatt and Rear Admiral Sir George Collier were members. He was married on April 25, 1826, in Tuscaloosa, to Mary Anne Battle, daughter of Captain William and Mary Ann (Williams) Battle, the former a Revolutionary soldier. Like her distinguished husband, Mrs. Collier was descended from English aristocracy, being of the same family as Sir Francis Drake of that country. Four children were born of this union, among them Evelyn Hewett Collier, who married Captain William Thomas King of Dallas County, nephew and adopted son of the Honorable William Rufus King, Vice-President of the United States.

## BOOKS ABOUT THE SOUTH

*By Emily Sinclair Calcott*

(Dr. Calcott is a graduate of the University of Virginia with a Ph. D. degree. She is a teacher of English at State Teachers College, Troy, Alabama, and is deeply interested in Southern literature.)

The Sharecropper Series seems to be growing with customary lushness. By summer the usual fruits of the season will have been gathered: new varieties of Southern lechery, Southern misery, Southern obscenity, and Southern bad cooking. Most of the books will be dramatically and skillfully written. Some of them will goad Fair Play into writing to the *Advertiser*. And practically all of them will have been forgotten by next spring, because people will be so absorbed with the titillating odors of the new fruit.

Other books about the South will appear, too, of course. But the Sharecropper Series will be most read and discussed and passed about. In fact, these novels of violence always succeed in attracting so much attention that the rest of the Southern literary scene is usually obscured. And after all, they are only a very small part of the complete picture.

Much of the attention they attract is deserved, for they are almost always well written—trenchant, dramatic, skillful. But their very short-lived quality is in itself something of a criticism, a criticism which points to the fact that though execution is good, the books leave a good deal to be desired in concept.

There is more to a story than a grand conglomeration of unshaven chins covered with dribbled tobacco juice, of drunken sluts and roaches and wormy turnips, of storekeepers and hounds that take their respective naps on the recent shipment of flour, of hookworm victims and imbeciles and lynchings with a blow torch, of tubercular Cajuns and sharecroppers.

There is more to realistic writing than one would ever learn from such books as *The Sharecropper*, *Lamb in His Bosom*, *God's Little Acre*, *The Store*, *Light in August*, and *Children of Strangers*.



The South speaks for itself frequently in an oral folk literature. Such stories and sayings are sometimes bawdy, naturally. But the ballads are more numerous, ballads like *Birmingham Jailhouse*, *Eastbound Train*, *Weeping Willow Tree*, and *Lightning Express*. In spite of limited vocabulary and consciousness of frustration the emotion is usually normal and the details in good taste. The underprivileged seem to be aware of the gentler emotions and of idealism. Certainly the characters of the ballads do not offer themselves as prototypes for the consistently uninhibited characters in the best-sellers.

Consider the *Eastbound Train*, for instance, which shows a Southern child at her customary pursuit of being miserable.

The eastbound train was crowded  
One cold December day.  
The conductor shouted, "Tickets!"  
In his old-time-fashioned way.

A little girl, in sadness,  
(Her hair was bright as gold)  
Said, "Sir, I have no ticket,"  
And then her story told.

"My father he's in prison.  
He's lost his sight, they say.  
I'm going for his pardon,  
This cold December day.

"My mother's daily sewing,  
To try to earn our bread,  
While poor, dear, old blind father  
Is in prison almost dead.

"My brother and my sister  
Would both be very glad  
If I could only bring back  
My poor, dear, old blind dad."

The conductor could not answer.  
He could not make reply,  
While taking his gloves and wiping  
The tear drops from his eye.

He said, "God bless you, little one,  
Just stay right where you are.  
You'll never need a ticket,  
While I am on this car."

The conductor is deeply touched and chivalrously offers aid, it will be observed. He does not swear at the little girl or box her jaws or attempt to seduce her. Nor does she try to bite him or steal his plug of chewing tobacco. It all seems very quiet and usual.

It is not realism that our native sons have been writing about the South, but a sort of romantic primitivism. Perhaps they cannot write realistically. It is a rare person who can secede from his own class, refuse to see and to write as his tradition would suggest, and still write accurately. Even Tolstoi has been accused of appearing as startlingly translated as Bottom in certain of his peasant portraits.

Some Southerners have seen cause for social trepidation or social rejoicing in the caravan of naturalistic best-sellers. The former fear the effect of the books in the North and see in them a deliberately menacing campaign. Books about unscrupulous Colonel Milt's, imbecile Benjy's and nymphomaniac Darling Jill's, they point out, by sheer process of reiteration present Southerners to the public as a group in dire need of paternalistic care, as a group which still needs the barriers which have made the South a colony since Appomattox. For, they continue, while the South does have a large number of eccentric citizens, it also has a number of other skeletons in the closet, equally dramatic but not so politically significant. And Southern best-sellers are written for a Northern audience. The South does not buy books.

The school that rejoices in the social result of the books finds happiness in the fact that Southerners read them. (And even if the South does not buy books, many a copy of *Tobacco Road* has been worn thin at the rental library). Southerners have been roused from their defeatist apathy and stirred to action by reading of their miseries, they continue. They have burned the fiery cross and formed such groups as the Southern Sociological Society, the Southern Policy Association, the Council on Southern Regional Development, and the Citizens' Fact Finding Movement of Georgia.

No one can estimate very accurately the social effect of the books in the United States. But it is possible that it is not very great. The North does buy the Sharecropper Series, it

is true, but it also buys the more numerous romantic and idealistic books (also best-sellers) about the South. It has bought *So Red The Rose*, *The Fathers*, *And Tell of Time*. As for Jeeter Lester arousing the South—by all outward and visible signs, he seems to have aroused it (if at all) to a slightly more passionate attachment for *Gone With The Wind*. And the fact must not be overlooked that the various sociological organizations have felt the stimulating touch of such practical idealists as Howard Odum, Francis Miller, Grover Hall, John Temple Graves, Donald Davidson, and others.

Propaganda may be accomplished in both North and South by the Series—no one can say very accurately—but desire to learn about the South is hardly the public's reason for reading the books. People read them because they deal with startling details of physical pleasure or distress. A national situation is responsible for the popularity of books concerned with various aspects of social and personal violence. (The scene of such books is by no means restricted to the South, incidentally). The public has progressed since the days when no nice girl could be seen with *Trilby*.

A recent issue of the *New York Times* contained reviews of forty new books. Thirty-three were concerned with sociology. This is typical of public interest. After fifty years of mass education and growing political awareness, literature and sociology are virtually synonymous, regardless of whether the form is novel — like Lin Yutang's *Moment in Peking*, essay — like Gunther's *Inside Europe*, or autobiography—like Daniels' *Tarheel Editor*. For lighter reading there are such things as the factual little articles of the *Reader's Digest* or the ubiquitous picture magazines, still predominantly sociological.

And a glance through the last named will quickly show how necessary the grotesque is to the general reader. A pleasant evening for many people involves several yards of statistics attached to a series of startling photographs: suicides or cannibals at dinner or tornado victims or prisoners on Devil's Island or a few assorted frozen Russians. Or sharecroppers, of course.

This passion for informations seems to be rather sound, both in psychological and literary implication. But the element of the grotesque, the passion of refined people for dramatic accounts of distress, probably springs from social hysteria. It is the interest of the nervous, who cannot concentrate sufficiently to read a book that makes intellectual demands in vocabulary or background. It is the interest of the unhappy, who have already suffered so much that the normal cannot attract.

One is reminded of Suetonius's account of the evolution of Caligula at Capri. For years the boy was sensitively kind and self-effacing, Tiberius's example to the contrary notwithstanding. Then one day he suddenly began pushing slaves over the cliff (to hear them splash) with even greater enthusiasm than Tiberius. After that, his enthusiasm developed into a really distinguished hobby. The slave-pushing tendency of most Americans finds sublimation in reading.

In the past year or two, however, the national nervous system seems to have been becoming quieter and better adjusted. The growing popularity of romantic and idyllic books would seem to indicate the fact. Five years ago there would have been few readers for such a book as *Follow the Drinking Gourd* or *Journey Proud*.

National literary interest is responsible for the popularity of the Sharecropper Series, not the natural depravity of the characters or of the authors. One regrets upon occasion that various native writers do not select residents of some other section if they are simply looking for people with odd habits. Still their authorship is not necessarily occasion for the dropped tear and the murmured "Ichabod". In one respect it offers occasion for considerable rejoicing: here, at least, are a few Southerners who are not on relief, workmen who find a market for their labor.

While the violent best-sellers are attracting such widespread attention, a quiet but very articulate literary movement is in progress throughout the South. It began about twenty-five years ago, its most colorful originators being Dr. Howard Odum and Dr. Frederick Koch, organizer of the Carolina Playmakers.

Like the best-sellers, these books are about Southern problems, Southern history, Southern people. But unlike the best-sellers they are directed toward a thoughtful, educated, and predominantly Southern (in sympathy if not in residence) audience. Frequently the books are pessimistic, but they are also thoughtful and discriminating. And they are not written simply for the specialist. They are polished, interesting, stimulating—general in interest. Literally hundreds of books on Southern problems for the specialist have been issued, of course, but such books as these are popular reading in literate circles: Freeman's *R. E. Lee*, Woodward's *Tom Watson, Agrarian Rebel*, Abernethy's *Western Lands and the American Revolution*, Dodd's *The Old South*, Hawks's *Economic History of the South*, Dabney's *Liberalism in the South*, Vance's *Human Geography in the South*, Johnson's *The Wasted Land*, Milton's *Age of Hate*, Odum's *Southern Regions*, Davidson's *Attack on Leviathan*, Couch's (ed.) *Culture in the South*, The Agrarian symposium, *Who Owns America*, Heyward's *Seed from Madagascar*, Davis's *The Cotton Kingdom in Alabama*, Caughey's *MacGillivray of the Creeks*.

The regional nature of these books is indicated by the fact that so many Southern universities have established their individual presses in order to print many of them. Books do not have to conform to New York tastes that are published at the University of North Carolina, Duke University, Louisiana State University, the universities of Georgia, Alabama, Oklahoma, Texas, and other Southern institutions.

Written for a Southern audience, too, are the literate and stylistically brilliant articles in such magazines as the *Virginia Quarterly Review* (University of Virginia) and the *Southern Review* (Louisiana State University). Less eclectic in content, but frequently no less well written, are the articles in such magazines as *American Literature* (Duke University), *Southern Economic Journal* (University of North Carolina), *Journal of Southern History* (Louisiana State University), *Journal of Politics* (Louisiana and the University of Florida), *William and Mary College Quarterly*.

And obviously editorials in Southern papers are written for a Southern audience. Stimulating, level-headed, and brilliant are the long series of editorials on social problems that

have come from such newspapermen as Grover Hall, Louis Jaffé, John Temple Graves, Virginius Dabney, Mark Ethridge. The first two have been read by a Northern audience sufficiently to receive Pulitzer awards, but desire for a Northern audience has hardly been their motive in writing.

This is not a complete picture of the Southern literary scene. But it is typical—typical of the type of material being used, the type of author using it, and of the widespread interest in worth-while reading and writing throughout the South.

In many of the individual Southern states personal interest in writing keeps pace with the general productiveness of the whole scene. In Alabama, for instance, a virtual passion for authorship seems to have swept over the state. Various scholarly groups have been producing for some time and such writers as James Saxon Childers, Hudson Strode, Maud Lindsay, and Alice Alison Lide have, of course, been established as professional authors for years. But recently, amateurs in a mass—college students, club women, clerks—have entered the local or national scene in practically every field: radio, juvenile literature, poetry, the novel, the essay, and others. Not only do the consistently fecund groups, such as those at Mobile and Birmingham, produce literature, but individuals who live in places without tradition of particular literary consciousness. Prize-winning poems emerge unexpectedly from Spring Hill or Greenville. A popular novel comes suddenly from Uniontown. Usually the material is Southern—lyric, realistic, or romantic though the treatment may be.

This, then, seems to be the real Southern literary scene, which the much-discussed Sharecropper Series frequently tends to obscure. The South is highly self-conscious and extremely articulate. When one looks at the literature—even at the quantity of it—one is not surprised at the existence of the various sociological societies for bettering Southern conditions. Or, for that matter, at numerous other indications of profound social awareness. At the fact, for instance, that Alabama Polytechnic Institution issues so many well known brochures on practical agricultural problems, or that Birmingham-Southern College has established an elaborate school of

recreation, or that various organizations in Alabama and other Southern states are fighting for free libraries, or that classes in Southern problems are crowded in the numerous colleges where they are offered.

There is so much in Southern culture—past and present—of which Southerners may be very proud without being remotely sentimental. The present literary renaissance is one phase of such culture. Scholarship combined with polished writing is a phenomenon to be respected under any circumstances. In a section as notoriously poor as the South, it (and the widespread support which makes it possible) is a phenomenon to be much more than respected.

It is rather a pity that the lush foliage of the Sharecropper Series should tend to overshadow the more hardy growth. Perhaps loyal Democrats might consider the feasibility of ploughing under (psychically speaking) a small percentage of next year's crop so that the less colorful but more nourishing fruits of other labors can be seen.

## ONE OF LEE'S FLAGS OF TRUCE

*By Judge Walter Burgwyn Jones, Montgomery, Alabama*

When the twilight of April 8, 1865, gradually settled into night in the quaint little Virginia town of Appomattox, General Robert E. Lee's Army of Northern Virginia had reached there and halted for rest. General Lee realized that the Southern Confederacy was dying. But the gallant Southern commander, now reckoned among the great military captains of all time, was unwilling to surrender his brave army, wearied by continual fighting and marching, without one final effort.

General Lee saw that his communications and retreat to Danville had been cut off, that his entrenched lines had been broken and overrun, saw the right of his army rolled up, Richmond and Petersburg evacuated, and his army desperately endeavoring to effect a junction with Johnston in North Carolina. Two corps of the Army of the Potomac, First and Second, under the command of General Meade, were pressing his rear; General Phil Sheridan, with three divisions of his cavalry, and General Griffin, with the Fifth Corps of Federal infantry, were making a flying march to block General Lee's path and circumvent his plans.

Late that night (April 8), two miles from Appomattox Court House, the last Confederate war council was held. It was seen by the generals present, among them Lee, Longstreet, Gordon, Pendleton, and Fitzhugh Lee, that unless on the morrow the Confederate troops could break through the heavy lines of Federal troops surrounding them, surrender would be inevitable. There were only 28,000 Confederate soldiers left. Less than 9,000 of these could be mustered for battle with muskets.

Major-General John B. Gordon was selected to command the troops which were to attempt to cut through the Federal lines at dawn on Sunday, April 9. It had been agreed, in the council of war the night before, that in event General Gordon was unable to cut through the Federal lines, flags of truce were to be sent out asking for a cessation of hostilities until Generals Lee and Grant could agree upon the final terms of a surrender.

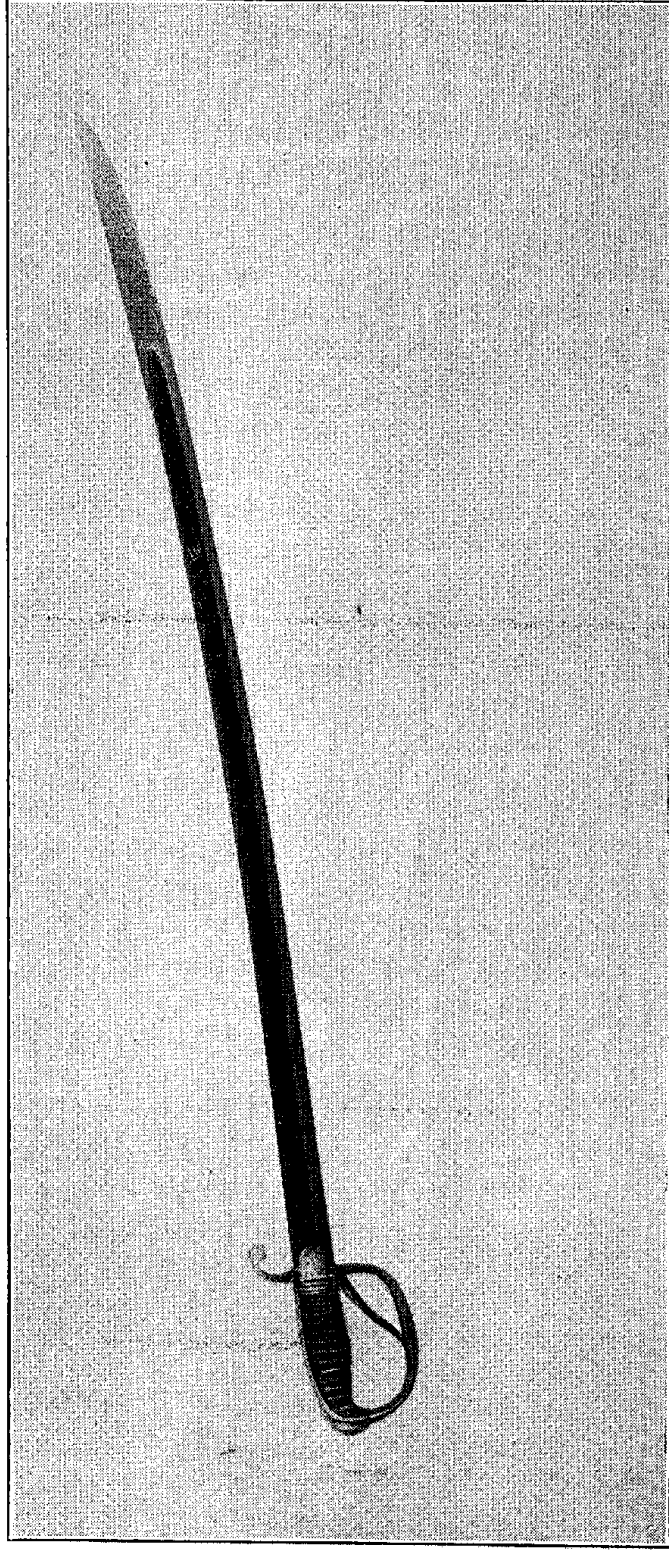


At about half past five, on the morning of Palm Sunday, April 9, 1865, General Gordon, who had formed his command nearly a half mile from the court house, advanced his line. One of Lee's veterans, a gallant young Alabamian, who rode at the side of General Gordon in the heroic Confederate charge on that memorable morning, now three quarters of a century ago, tells us that Gordon's troops were in proud array, "although the men were so worn, jaded and famished, that they could hardly carry their muskets." Divisions had dwindled to the number of full regiments, and regiments and companies were represented by a few miles of men, but the colors of nearly all the organizations remained.

### **The Confederacy's Scarlet Line of Battle**

"The sharp skirmish fire soon grew into a furious and heavy volume of musketry. The ever faithful Carter joined in with his deep-toned guns. The cavalry at our right pressed forward at a gallop, and wild and fierce shouts resounded through the heavens. As the sun drove away the Sunday morning mist, it looked down upon a scene that will forevermore thrill Southern hearts. In a steady line, sustained on the left by artillery which flamed forth at every step, with cavalry charging fiercely on the right, the Confederate line of battle, scarlet almost from the array of battle flags floating over it, went forth to death, driving before it masses of blue cavalry and artillery. Spring was just budding forth, and the morning sun glistening from leaf and tree, shed a halo about the red battle flags with the starry cross, as if Nature would smile on the Nation that was dying there.

"We pressed on and beyond the court house, Fitz Lee and his cavalry rode unmolested on the Lynchburg road, but Gordon's infantry was impeded by a desperate resistance. Gordon's men captured a battery and still pressed on. It was too late. The infantry under Ord, nearly thirty thousand strong, now filed across our pathway, throwing out batteries from every knoll, and rapidly advanced lines of infantry against us. Gordon could not withstand what was in front, and to stop to resist it, would be to involve his flank and rear in clouds of the enemy. Slowly this glorious color guard of the 'Army of Northern Virginia', retraced its steps to Appomat-



SEXTON  
SWORD ON WHICH MAJOR THOMAS G. JONES, C.S.A.  
BORE ONE OF GEN. ROBERT E. LEE'S FLAGS OF TRUCE  
APPOMATTOX, APRIL 9, 1865

tox Court House, bringing with it prisoners and captured artillery. The probable success of Gordon's movement, and what was to be done in event of failure, had been the subject of discussion between General Lee and his corps commanders."

### **Flags of Truce from the Confederate Lines**

As soon as General Gordon saw the impossibility of cutting through the thousands of Federal troops across his front, in accordance with the agreement reached at the war council held the night before, he sent out from his line a flag of truce to the lines of the Federal army in front of him. Due to the great difficulty in reaching Lieutenant-General U. S. Grant, who was located in a distant portion of the army, and, as the emergency was very pressing, several flags of truce were sent out from the Confederate lines. One flag was carried by a major on General Longstreet's staff, another was carried by a captain attached to the division commanded by General Evans, and another was carried by Major Hunter of General Gordon's staff.

The flag of truce which has been most written about, and which is believed to have finally reached General Grant, and brought the historic order to "cease firing," was carried by Major Thomas Goode Jones, of Montgomery, Alabama, a staff officer under General Gordon, and afterwards (1890-1894) Governor of Alabama.

### **Major Jones Rides Through Battle Fire**

As Gordon and his troops were falling back, notification was received from General Lee that he had sent a flag of truce through the lines asking for an interview with General Grant. General Gordon thereupon sent two flags of truce, and General Longstreet also sent a flag of truce from his lines to General Meade's front. While General Sheridan's dismounted cavalry were falling back in a feigned retreat from the fire of the Confederates, the infantry of the Fifth United States Army Corps advanced and opened fire. It was at this time that Major Jones rode out rapidly from the Confederate lines, between the skirmishers of both armies, towards the Union lines some two hundred yards away. Be-

cause of the heavy smoke lying over the battlefield that morning, neither Confederate nor Union troops appeared to see the bearer of the flag of truce and both sides continued their fire as he rode swiftly through the morning mists. Several times he had narrow escapes from being shot.

Years after the War, one of Major Jones's old comrades in arms told of the incident in this language: "A horse was seen to dart from the firing line of the Confederates to the line of the Union men two hundred yards away, and from his side hung a man clinging to the saddle with his legs while his body hung down after the fashion of a cowboy. A small white flag fluttered from above the saddle and although it was seen that the rider carried a flag of truce, the hot firing did not cease from either side as the man with the message of surrender neared the Union lines."

### **The Confederate Major Arrives at the Union Lines**

General Joshua L. Chamberlain, U.S.A., who commanded the First Division, Fifth Corps of Grant's Army, at Appomattox Court House, gives an eloquent and picturesque description of Major Jones as the General first saw him riding toward the Union lines: "Suddenly rose to sight another form, close in our own front . . . a soldierly young figure, handsomely dressed and mounted . . . A Confederate staff officer undoubtedly, to whom some of my advanced line seemed to be pointing my position.

"Now I see the white flag earnestly borne, and its possible purport sweeps before my inner vision like a wraith of morning mist. He comes steadily on, the mysterious form in gray, my mood so whimsically sensitive that I could even smile at the material of the flag—wondering where in either army was found a towel, and one so white. But it bore a mighty message—that simple emblem of homely service, wafted hitherward above the dark and crimsoned streams that never can wash themselves away."

### **General Lee's Message Delivered**

"The messenger draws near, dismounts with graceful salutation and hardly suppressed emotion, delivers his message: 'Sir, I am from General Gordon; General Lee desires

a cessation of hostilities until he can hear from General Grant as to the proposed surrender.'

"What word is this! So long, so dearly fought for, so feverishly dreamed, but ever snatched away, held hidden and aloof, now smiting the senses with a dizzy flash! 'Surrender?' We had no rumor of this from the messages that had been passing between Grant and Lee, for now those two days, behind us. 'Surrender?' It takes a moment to gather one's speech. 'Sir', I answer, 'that matter exceeds my authority. I will send to my superior. General Lee is right. He can do no more.' All this with a forced calmness, covering a tumult of heart and brain. I bid him wait awhile, and the message goes up to my corps commander, General Griffin, leaving me amazed at the boding change."

It is stated by some writers that General Lee had furnished Major Jones with a letter accepting General Grant's overtures for peace. This is a mistake, for Major Jones carried only a verbal message from the noble Southern commander.

### **Peace Broods Over the Battle Field**

Sergeant-Major William Shore, 155 Pennsylvania Volunteers, U.S.A., says that Major Jones, bearing the Confederate flag of truce, approached the Union skirmish line and asked him where the commanding Federal general was. He directed the Confederate officer where to go and pointed out to him General Chamberlain, who was sitting on his horse in a conspicuous position on quite an eminence within the Union lines. He was the first Federal officer of rank to see the flag of truce. Afterwards it passed many commands, and finally reached General Sheridan. Within a few minutes the order to "cease firing" was given. The War for Southern Independence was over. The gallant soldiers of the Army of Northern Virginia had fired their last shots.

### **Confederate Officer Handsomely Dressed**

In a letter written April 14, 1902, to Sergeant-Major William Shore, then living in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, the first Federal officer encountered at the Union lines, Major Jones gives a full and vivid account of the part played by him at the Surrender. Major Jones wrote:

"I was then not quite twenty-one years old, was mounted on a good looking bay horse and was in full dress, having put on our best uniforms for fear they would be captured with the wagons. We all expected the worst and wished to be dressed as decently as possible. I rode in on the right of the Appomattox Court House, coming from the direction of our lines. Some of your skirmishers opened fire on me at first, but they stopped as soon as they perceived my flag of truce, which was a large, white napkin in which some ladies had wrapped some snack for me the day before—the napkin being all that remained in my haversack. I have always had a vague recollection that the officer I met was an artilleryman, and it may be that you were the man who told me where to go, and that I mistook the artilleryman for a man in zouave uniform. I was so intent on getting the firing stopped that I did not pay very particular attention to what happened on the skirmish line. Thirty-seven years have elapsed since then, and my memory is not very distinct as to the details.

"I think the first general officer I was carried to, was General Chamberlain of Maine, who was a division commander, and, if I am not mistaken, he carried me to General Griffin. I remember distinctly having some talk with a General Forsythe, who, if I remember correctly, was a cavalry general. General Sheridan was nearby. I think he or some of his staff rode out into a part of the field where I was, and said something about having another flag of truce, and that we seemed anxious to stop, and so on. From that point, I was sent with a Union officer to some Confederates who did not understand the situation, and were trying to move off and were occasionally firing. After this I went back into the Confederate lines to where General Lee was sitting on the road about a mile from Appomattox Court House, on some rails, near an apple orchard, waiting to hear from General Grant."

### **Description of Major Jones's Sword**

After receiving his parole at Appomattox Court House, Major Jones rode on horse-back from Virginia to his father's home in Montgomery, Alabama, carrying with him the sword which had borne General Lee's flag of truce that April morning when history was made. The sword is now owned by one of Major Jones's sons at Montgomery.

The sword is a cavalry sabre with a broad, heavy blade, one edge curved toward the point. It is made of finely tempered steel, handsomely chased, and is thirty-eight inches long. The blade is a little over one inch in width, and about a quarter of an inch in thickness. The hilt is five and one-half inches in length, and the basket, or bow of the hilt, which protects the hand, is three and one-quarter inches across.

The historic sword hangs today in the library of Judge Walter B. Jones, of Montgomery, who owns it and who is the son of Major Jones.

## THE POETS ON FISH CREEK

*By Renwick C. Kennedy*

(Mr. Kennedy, author of this folk study is the Pastor of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church, Camden, Alabama. He has for a long while been interested in the socio-economic conditions in Alabama and has contributed articles on that subject to some of America's leading journals.)

The people on the creek were essentially poets. They lived in the piney woods down near the bottom of Alabama close to the Florida line. The environment was favorable to poetry.

Being none too literate they never wrote any poems. Mr. Quincy, the old Presbyterian preacher, had a boxful he had written during his lifetime. A few of them had been published in obscure religious papers but he had never been much interested in getting them into print. He wrote them for his own satisfaction and when they were about a week old he put them into the box and never looked at them again. In the later years of his life he quit his practise of poetry. Few people have ever been able to read his hand-writing at all and no one has been able to read it with certainty. His script was beyond doubt the worst in the world. His poetry is thus lost to mankind although there is a whole boxful of it extant.

The people never bothered to write their poetry. But in their ways of life, their conversation, their similes and metaphors, it crept out every day.

When Sam Hord got to talking about deer he always expressed himself in great poetry of his own spontaneous creation.

"A deer," he said, "is jest natcherly made fer gittin' away from here. He's built for leavin' here, on land or in water, runnin', jumpin' or swimmin'. You see him one minute and the next you don't. He's like a buzzard's shadow slippin' through the woods."

The people used forceful, vivid, direct language. They dropped word endings. They had never heard about syntax. They had no theories about the parts of speech. They had



no interest in learning to use correct English. Their language was a flexible instrument suited to all necessary uses and circumscribed by no petty rules. "Ain't" and "taken" and "done" and "seen" answered their purposes as well as "is not" and "took" and "did" and "saw". On their lips the speech of the piney woods was adequate for the common needs and upon occasion became music.

The poetry of their unlettered souls came out quite clearly in many aspects of their lives but in no point more riotously than in the given names of their children. Family names were conventional enough, being almost exclusively Scotch-Irish and English though there were a few German and French. There were no Jews, Italians, Russians or Asiatics, and strangely no one of Spanish descent in the community though there were a few Spanish place names.

Due to the strong Baptist tradition there were few christenings on the creek. Mr. Quincy did baptize a few babies, officially giving them their names.

Nonetheless babies were given names in the early days of infancy whether christened or not. A person must have a name. It must be chosen for him since he is unable to select it himself. Great crimes are committed upon defenseless innocents in this matter. Out on the creek name choosing was a highly developed art. The people had a genius for giving names. The imagination was set free. The arts and the sciences, the Bible and the zodiac, the traditions of the community and of the human race, nature, the heavenly bodies, and the future life were utilized. There were still other names without known origin. Only God knows where they came from.

There were prosaic names like Fred, Joe, John, Willie, Sam, Mary, Margaret, Jane, Mamie and Hattie. Some people had to bear these names to preserve a balance of sanity in the mass nomenclature of the people. Otherwise the condition would have been too enormously cock-eyed to have maintained itself within the limits of reality.

Dave Reed went in for high poetry in a deliberate way when he named his children. His masterpiece was acknow-

ledged by the community. The names he gave his five girls were:

Willie May  
Jewel Gray  
Bessie Ray  
Edith Fay  
Elsie Gay

He also had a son whom he named Willard, but having expended his genius on his girls it is not to be wondered at that he could do no better for his son. He might have been forgiven had he merely named him John.

David's girls, it will be noted, had double names. This was considered desirable on the creek. A double name was always preferable to a single name and particularly in the case of girls. However, awkward combinations of syllables were instinctively avoided. A double name, it was felt, should be short, quick and easy to the tongue, and if possible alliterative. In the case of a large family it was good to have a series of rhyming double names. Some people were not good enough poets to achieve this but the real honest-to-God poets like David Reed and old man Hood were highly successful.

Carson Hood first and last had five daughters and two sons whom he named:

Allie Maybelle  
Lela Vermelle  
Mamie Estelle  
Rebecca Moselle  
Alabama Odell  
Charlie  
Silas

Lucius Smith said that if the old man had had another daughter he should have named her:

Go To Hell.

But Lucius was not a sensitive fellow and was incapable of appreciating a creation of art. The names of the Hood girls are almost perfect. They are double, they are easy to say, they rhyme with each other, and each within itself is more or less alliterative. The only criticism that can be made of them is that they are four, five and six syllable terms,

while David Reed got the same results with three syllables and kept each name uniform in syllable quality. The point must be granted. Technically David did a superior piece of work. In fact, he was absolutely perfect. Yet an unbiased critic would probably grant Hood a more luxuriant imagination. His form was more difficult than simple three syllable rhyme and to anyone but a hide-bound purist his completed work is more striking.

As in the case of David it is to be noted that Hood, too, had pretty well petered out by the time he got through thinking up rhyming names for his girls. The best he could do for his boys was Charlie and Silas.

The decadence of genius is a sad thing to contemplate.

Rosa Newton did right well with her three girls' names:

Shella Ray  
Della May  
Rosa May

Rosa faltered with her namesake. The muse failed her and she found it necessary to use May a second time. This did not bother Rosa nor Rosa May nor Della May, but it was an inferior piece of art.

Mr. Dale did better by his two girls whom he named:

Zomeree  
Estherlee

He only had two, however, and might have failed with a third. It really takes four or five girls to prove a parent's art in devising names for them. Two are not enough. Anyone can sit down and figure out two homogeneous names, particularly if he figures on the matter when he names the first child. Right there is how and where many people fail. They name the first one in a thoughtless moment giving it some unpoetical name for which there likely is not a rhyme in the universe. Elbert Reed named his first daughter Dorothy and though he had six more he was never able to find a girl's name to rhyme with it. He was a poet at heart and would have done well had he named her Verseray or Sally Lee. It always worried Elbert that he had made such a mistake, he having the soul of a poet.

Will Seller's wife was named Velma. He named his son and daughter:

Vernon  
Vera

Will did well but was not really a high class poet. He was far inferior to Anderson Griggs who was really one of the top-ranking poets on the creek. Anderson turned in a fine piece of work, naming his children:

Ruby Fay  
Clara May  
Ima Jay  
Pearly Gay  
Homer  
Henderson  
Hupert

The girls' names are perfect. Here, too, is a strong talent that did not exhaust itself upon the girls but also did justice by the boys. Homer, Henderson and Hupert represent a splendid imaginative piece of work in their naming.

Zodiac Martin had no daughters but did right well with his sons' names:

Ora  
Zora  
Fonso.

Zodie would have done better had he had daughters.

Mr. Quincy knew all the groups of poetical names in the whole community and could rattle them off at any moment, always adding a comment of his own, usually the same comment.

"It makes you think of the old *Blue Back Spellin' Book*," he said, "'horseback, lampblack, ransack, barrack; amity, jollity, nullity, quality; Zachariah, Hezekiah, Jeremiah'."

Most of the people did not go in for rhyming poetry but selected names for their inherent beauty. Their efforts were a kind of blank verse. Some of the names were a bit startling but were imaginative and beautiful and not a whit less poeti-

cal than the rhymes. Scattered about over the community there lived women and girls whose names were:

Beadie	Gatsy
Lanie	Carmilou
Nobie	Gertha
Clodine	Gretha
Una	Celie
Ovary	Eelon
Vonceil	Dicey
Ovelma	Zora

Una, Ovelma and Zora are old names preserved in the family traditions of the people. Gertha and Gretha came through families of German descent.

Beadie, Lanie, Nobie, Celie, Dicey and Gatsy indicate the liking of the people for diminutive endings.

There are several girls on the creek named Ovary. The name is accented on the second syllable and is very pretty. Only a few people have any idea about the meaning of the word and they never give it any thought, accustomed as they are to hearing it used as a feminine name.

The use of the word for a name is unusual and quite interesting. Mr. Quincy, who was a student of names, said that it was a corruption of a Spanish name, Ovara, or O'Vara. Out on the creek the use of the name was totally without anatomical significance. But when one of the girls who bore it happened to go off to a teachers' college she found it embarrassing. Innocently enough the community had put its mark upon her. She changed her name to Ovelma.

Mr. Quincy knew the meaning of all ordinary names that had meanings and went around telling people what their names meant, though of course he never told any of the girls who were named Ovary. Sometimes he was asked to give names to children by parents who were lacking in poetry or exhausted by the practise of it. He gave Isaiah Hord and Zebulon Foster their names, though Isaiah was always known as Cooncy and Zebulon as Zebby. He named Lavinia Hord. The people had never heard the name Lavinia. It took well and in a few years there were a half dozen Lavinias. Will Garrison named a son for Mr. Quincy, John Quincy Garrison.

It was a common thing to name a son for some preacher. Formerly there was an old hardshell preacher named Grider who lived in the community for many years. He was childless so far as could be observed but ever since his time there has always been at least a half dozen men and boys with the first name of Grider.

Names were common property and no one objected to another family using a name borne by one of its children. There were several Ovaries and Lavinias, and a great many Voncells and Ovelmas. The latter was always shortened to Velma and the O became virtually lost. Strangely the not very attractive name Nobie was more widely used than any other.

It must not be supposed that masculine names were neglected. The following list is evidence enough that fantasy was at work over the boy babies, too.

Pleasant (Plez)	Denzer
Phone	Denver
Willie Snow	Jesker
Joe Willie	Esker
Alto	Esther
Baalam	Zora
Zimri	Seaph
Crum	Welcome
Bethel	Nollis
Greenberry	Bunkum
Below	Foy
Jack Dempsey	Blueford
Woodrow Wilson	Shang
Teddy Roosevelt	Cumi
Cuvee	

These are names, it must be remembered, and not nick-names. Some of them are not unusual, but to find all of them and others equally intriguing in one small community out in the piney woods makes one pause in admiration.

Ora, Zora and Fonso Martin have been mentioned but deserve to be noted again.

Phone was evidently named for the telephone. There were no telephones in the community. Zimri, Cumi, Baalam and Bethel, along with a number of Jacobs and Isaiahs indi-

cate a Biblical source, though none of them were Jews. Joe Willie is a beautiful name, a fine poetic achievement. Greenberry, too, is a beautiful name, drawn ultimately from nature. Esther and Zora indicate some confusion as they bore feminine names. Gender in the grammatical sense was not understood very well on the creek. Jesker and Esker are fine-sounding distinctive names. Mr. Barnett did well by his boys, Seaph, Welcome and Nollis. Seaph spelled his name the short and sensible way—Sef—. Welcome suggests its origin but it might be difficult to account for Seaph and Nollis. As for Below, Cuvee, Denzer and Bunkum, only God knows where they came from.

Mr. Quincy was very plausible in getting up an explanation for names. He had a derivation or definition for most of them.

But even Mr. Quincy had no theory to account for a name like Gatsby, or to explain why parents should name a son Below and accent it strongly on the first syllable.

Besides the names that have been mentioned there were a good many nicknames, but the nicknames get over into the fantastic and are not a proper subject for a serious study.

## DIARY OF CAPTAIN EDWARD CRENSHAW OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES ARMY

(In the Fall and Winter issues of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly* of 1930, portions of Captain Crenshaw's diary were reproduced. The remainder of the diary will be completed in this and future issues. Captain Crenshaw, a native of Butler County, Alabama, was a student both of the University of Alabama and the University of Virginia. He was attending the latter institution when he joined the Confederate Army. He participated in the Battle of Chickamauga as a captain, was severely wounded. He was later transferred to the Marines under Admiral Raphael Semmes. At the end of hostilities Captain Crenshaw returned to the University of Virginia where he graduated with honor. He located at Greenville, Alabama, where he practiced law. He died in that place, September, 1911, at the age of 69.)

### **Monday, July 18th, 1864.**

We delivered our two vessels to their owners today. At 1 P. M. were ordered to Smithville at the mouth of "Cape Fear River." Arrived at sunset. Marched out into the adjoining sand hills one mile from the village and pitched our tents in a very pleasant location where the delightful sea-breezes could have a fair sweep at us.

### **Tuesday, 19th.**

News reached us today that Gen. J. E. Johnston had been relieved from the command of the "Army of Tennessee," and that Lieut. Gen. Hood had been promoted and put in command. We can scarcely believe it. If so, we fear the future now.

### **Wednesday, 20th.**

All the Marines were ordered back to Richmond and Drury's Bluff today, except myself and a guard of one sergeant, two corporals and twenty-two privates. It is now no longer a matter of doubt that we are intended for the crew of a regular Confederate Cruiser or Privateer.

### **Thursday, 21st.**

Rainy and cloudy. Remained in Camp all day. Not as pleasantly situated as in the Army. Do not like the class of men have to command. Have not heard from Home in nearly two months. Reduced Corporal James Nugent to ranks for killing hogs, and promoted Private Patrick Harris to Corporal.

### **Friday, 22nd.**

Still in camp—nothing new to enliven the monotony. Cloudy and cool. Wrote home. Wrote to Uncle Tom, Capt.



Holland, and Col. Jones. Visited Dr. Sandford in Smithville. Dr. Kay Kendall, C. S. N. and 2nd Lieut. H. M. Doak, C. S. M. C. visited us in the evening. Flag Officer Lynch made a short visit. He is an intelligent looking old gentleman.

**Saturday, July 23rd, 1864.**

Disagreeable day. Nothing new. Went to Smithville and staid a few hours. They are fitting out at Wilmington as a Cruiser the fast running double screw steamer "Atalanta" formerly a blockade runner. I am getting tired of our expedition and wish I was back in the army.

**Sunday, 24th.**

Rained all day. Lieut. Ward, C. S. N., and in command of our party in the absence of Col. Wood, came to our camp from Wilmington. He said it would take a week to get the "Atalanta" ready for sea. Dined with Dr. Sandford today. Lieut. Ward started back to Wilmington in the evening. Wrote to Pa. today.

**Monday, 25th.**

Bad weather; Nothing new. We are all dreadfully tired of being camped out here in the sand, and are anxious for a change. We are anxious to get on our ship.

**Tuesday, 26th.**

Lieut. Gardner and his detachment of sailors went to Wilmington today to go on board the "Atalanta". Went as far as Smithville with them. Played several games of chess with Dr. Kuykendall, C. S. N. Beat him playing. Called on Dr. Sandford in the evening. Mr. Shippey, Master in the Navy is sick with neuralgia and is staying with the Dr. Returned to camp after dark and lost my way. Stumbled on the camp after walking nearly all around it.

**Wednesday, 27th.**

Remained in camp all day. Nothing of importance transpired to relieve the monotony of the same. Read the "Lost Heiress" by Mrs. Southworth. Well pleased with it. Admired the characters of Mr. and Mrs. Hunter and Maud very much.

**Thursday, 28th.**

Remained in camp all day. Weather very warm and unpleasant. All quiet. No change in our situation. \* \* \* \* \*

Captain A. C. Benthuisen, Commanding C. S. Marines on the Wilmington Station, wrote a note to Lieut. H. M. Doak, comm'd'g the Marine Guard at Smithville, and to me, asking us to have our guards to vote for Gov. Vance at the approaching election, that their votes would not be challenged. Accompanying the note was a package of Vance Tickets. None of my guard being entitled to vote, I, of course, did not do as he requested.

**Friday, July 29th, 1864.**

Our detachment of sailors and Marines went to Wilmington today and went on board the "Atalanta". She is a very fast running double screw propeller, very long and narrow. She was built for running the blockade. It is said that the Government owns part of her. She has been fitted out as a war vessel and is at last ready for sea. Her armament consists of one 12 pounder howitzer on the forecastle, one one hundred pounder Parrot amidships, mounted on a pivot carriage so as to be used on either side of the ship—and a 30 pounder Parrot aft. mounted on a pivot carriage. The decks were well strengthened for these heavy guns.

**Saturday, July 30th.**

The crew of the "Atalanta" were mustered today. I detached Privates Bessent, Burns, Crump, Petitorry, and Tierney from my guard and turned them over to Capt. A. C. VanBenthuisen, by order of Commander Wood who is in command of the "Atalanta". Tried to get some clothing for my men from Capt. VanBenthuisen; but he had none. Lieut. Coak dined with me on board the "Atalanta" today. Drew 1,000 rounds of Musket ammunition for my guard today. Taking in supplies and munitions of war all day. Took on board ten or twelve bales of cotton and lashed them around the exposed parts of the boilers to protect them from the shot of the enemy. Took on board a large quantity of Tobacco. \* \* \*

**Sunday, 31st.**

Entire crew of the ship mustered today. Commander Wood made a short speech, saying that we went into commission as the C. S. Steamer "Tallahassee," and that we were going to cruise against the Yankee Commerce whenever we could find it, and that all who did their duty would be richly rewarded, and those who did not do their duty would be

punished and no privileges would be allowed them, and that he intended to have strict man-of-war discipline on board. Services were then read and we were dismissed. \* \* \* \* \*

**Monday, Aug. 1st, 1864.**

Coaled Ship and took on stores and supplies and hauled out into the middle of the stream. \* \* \* \* \*

**Tuesday, 2nd.**

Received on board our ship from Flag Officer Lynch one set of Yankee Signals complete and one United States' Ensign. Everything ready for going to sea. Draft of Ship 10 ft. 9 inches aft. and 9 ft. 8 inches forward. At 5:30 P. M. got under weigh and proceeded down the river. Anchored off Fort St. Phillip at 7:30 P. M.

**Wednesday, 3rd.**

Had target practice at 1000 yards. The firing was very accurate, the shells bursting over the target. At 2:40 P. M. got under weigh and went down to "Five Fathom Hole," and came to anchor. At 7:30 P. M. got under weigh and stood for the "Rip". Got aground on the "Rip" and the tide falling the engine was stopped at 9:30 P. M. A large blockade runner going out passed us while we were aground. She glided by like a spirit and was soon out of sight. The success of the blockade runners in eluding the Yankee cruisers no longer seemed wonderful to me; for these steamers can not be seen more than a hundred yards distant when there is no moon. They burn Welsh coal which emits a very light colored smoke, and they can glide right by a vessel without the least sound being heard.

**Thursday, 4th.**

Aground off Fort Fisher on the "Rip". Got ship off and started out again, but got aground again at nearly the same place. \* \* \* \* \*

**Friday, 5th.**

Tried hard all day to get the ship afloat, with the assistance of the C. S. Steamer Yadkin, but without success.

**Saturday, 6th.**

Still around on the "Rip", the draft of water of our vessel being too great to pass the Eastern Bar at these tides. The

Steamer "Cape Fear" was made fast to us at high tide and in a short time we were afloat. We then steamed down to Smithville and came to anchor off that 'little old town' intending to pass out by Fort Caswell and the Western Bar to-night.\*\*\*\*

At 8 P. M. weighed anchor and stood out over the Western Bar of Wilmington. Rounded the Fort at 9 and at 10 were on the bar. The moon was just going down as we got under weigh, and it is rather too light for us to hope to get out without being seen. Just after passing over the bar made two Federal Cruisers—one on each bow. Stood between them. When they bore a beam they discovered us, showed lights, sent up rockets and commenced firing at us. The vessel on the Starboard beam fired four shots; the one on the Port beam fired one shot. All of the shots passed very close over us; but happily none of them struck us. Made another cruiser on the Port bow—ran to the Westward and made another on the Starboard bow; but passed them both without being discovered. Running at a speed of nearly fifteen knots we soon passed through the Yankee Fleet and were out at sea. "Bald Head" light was the last thing in the Confederacy that we saw—and it was soon out of sight. \* \* \* \* \*

### **Sunday, 7th.**

At 4:10 A. M. Discovered a steamer in chase. At 7:50 A. M. Made another sail on the starboard bow. At 12 M. the steamer discovered at 7:50 could barely be seen astern. Lost sight of both steamers at 1 P. M. At 5:20 P. M. strange steamer reported right ahead. At 5:40 P. M. the stranger altered his course and steered for us, and chased us until night when we lost sight of him. A strange steamer discovered very close to us at 8 P. M. showed signal lights and fired five shots at us. We altered our course and ran from him as soon as we discovered him. Four of the shots passed very close over us, but the fifth shot fell astern, we left him so fast. At 9 P. M. we lost sight of him entirely. This sabbath has been a beautiful day, and was properly observed. Capt. Wood read services to us on the quarterdeck. We ran through a large school of porpoises today. Early this morning three deserters from our fleet at Wilmington were found secreted in the ship. They were put on duty as we could not carry them back, and needed men.

**Monday, 8th.**

A fair pleasant day. We are in the Gulf Stream and there is some swell but not enough to make it unpleasant. Masses of seaweed float by us, and we see innumerable swarm of Mother Carey's chickens and seagulls skim along the waves and fly over us. Spoke the Hamburg barque "Louise Wilhelmine".

**Tuesday, 9th.**

Spoke Bremen Brig Santiago, and Schooner Fanny of St. Johns New Brunswick, four days from New York. At 9:45 P. M. boarded the English Brig H. F. Calthuse, of Turk's Island. Saw a large steamer on our port bow but passed her unobserved.

**Wednesday, 10th.**

Spoke British barque "Armenia" and schooner "Emma" of Nassau. From the latter obtained New York papers of the 8th instant. After dark gave chase to a very large vessel under steam and canvass, and running down very close to him found that we had caught a large first class frigate—so we very quickly altered our course and got away without being discovered.

**Thursday, 11th.**

Captured Yankee Schooner Sarah A. Boyce of Boston bound to Philadelphia for coal. Took the Captain and crew on board and scuttled her and set fire to her. About 9 A. M. a beautiful pilot boat appeared in sight and ran down to us—with the intention no doubt of putting a pilot on board to take us into New York. We are not more than 20 miles from Long Island and 60 or 70 from N. Y. He was soon alongside of us, and seeing the Yankee Ensign flying, we had not yet run up our glorious flag, he immediately lowered a boat and a big pompous looking New York pilot stepped into it and pulled off for our ship. We had in the mean time very quietly and before the boat reached our side run up the Southern flag. The pilot looked somewhat startled and inquired in anxious tone "if there was not some mistake; if this was not a union vessel." He must have thought at first that it was only done to frighten him for he stepped over the side of our ship and walked up to Capt. Wood and asked him in a very pompous tone 'What he was doing in 20 fathoms water without a pilot,

and if this was not a union vessel'. Captain Wood told him that it was the Confederate Cruiser Tallahassee. He then asked Captain Wood what he was going to do with him. Capt. Wood told him he would have to keep him a short time and then he would send him away. He appeared to be considerably frightened and dropped down into a seat and had nothing more to say during the whole of the time he remained on board. The captain and crew of the pilot boat were then brought on board and Capt. Wood placed Master Curtis and Pilot Davis with a prize crew in her, and used her as a tender. This was the New York Pilot-boat, "James Funk", "No. 22". We obtained Fulton Market Beef mutton, ice, butter, fresh vegetables and a quantity of other stores from the boat. At 11 o'clock captured and burned the Brig Carrie Estelle of Boston, with lumber for New York. In the meantime our little Tender "22" brought down to us the Barque Bay State, from Alexandria to Boston. The Captain's wife two children and nurse were on board and were badly frightened. Everything of value having been removed, the ship was set on fire. I went with the boarding party on board this ship. I got several copies of the New York Ledger, and much to my surprise found them filled with miscegenation stories and stories of the war, in which Southern Character was illustrated and represented in the worst possible light. All the heroes and heroines were fairhaired and fairskinned sons and daughters of the South. We brought off from this ship a small box in which were neatly packed away a school boy's toys, trinkets, keepsakes &c. There were some old letters and school reports giving the youth's name and showing that he had been and was probably then going to school in Alexandria. If he was a Northern boy he had very strong feelings and sympathies with the South. There were packed away in his box seemingly with pious care little miniature likenesses of President Davis, Generals Lee and Beauregard and Southern Songs and many other little relics dear to Southern hearts only. The little miniature of Gen. Beauregarde fell to my share, and I gave it to a beautiful little English Girl who visited our ship in Halifax, the daughter of Dr. DeWolf, the surgeon in charge of the hospital. While this ship was burning the "22" brought down another to us, the Brig A. Richards, of Boston, but mostly owned in the State of Maine. We set fire to her after re-

moving her crew, nautical instruments, provisions &c. Captured and burned the Schooner "Atlantic" from Adison to New York loaded with wood. Overhauled schooner Carroll of East Machias, Maine, and having over 40 prisoners with an immense quantity of baggage on board of our ship, and being anxious to get rid of them, we sent them on board of the Carroll with their baggage and with provisions. We bonded the Carroll for \$10000 in gold, and the Captain pledged himself to take his passengers into New York. (We have since learned that the captain landed his passengers on Long Island and gave information concerning us at the nearest telegraph station, thus violating his oath; but this is only characteristic of the Yankees). At 6:30 P. M. another beautiful little pilot-boat appeared in sight on the port bow and bore down for us, but soon discovering her mistake or taking the alarm from some cause she put about and tried to make her escape. We soon overhauled her. This was the William Bell, No. 24, and a perfect beauty she was. We all hated to see her destroyed. She cost \$16,000 in gold and her furniture \$1000 more. She was built three years ago and was elegantly fitted up. Her owner Mr. Callahan appeared to be a very gentlemanly man. We found two passengers on board, an old gentleman traveling for his health, and a New York drummer on a pleasure excursion. These men all appeared to be very gentlemanly, and seemed to be very much surprised at their kind treatment. They repeatedly said that it was much better than they expected or even hoped. They spoke frequently of the outrages committed by their own people during this war, and condemned them in the strongest terms. (But these same people after arriving in New York published unfavorable accounts of us in the Herald saying they had been badly used). After setting fire to the William Bell we stood on towards Montauk Point. We had a heavy ground swell all night. Took tender "22" in tow.

#### **Friday, 12th.**

Several sail were in sight at daybreak. Cast off the "22" and sent her after some vessels in the distance, while we steered for a large square rigged ship on our starboard bow. When alongside we ordered her to heave to, but in doing so she collided with us carrying away our main mast and sweeping our deck clean, aft, even to the iron bulwark

railing. I was lying in my bunk when the collision took place. The shock was so great that I was thrown to the floor instantly. I hurriedly dressed myself and ran up on deck. The ships had not been disengaged and this large ship towered over our little ship like some huge monster of the deep over its smaller inhabitants. It took sometime to clear away the wreck of the mast and rigging. All being clear at length we moved ahead a short distance and Lieut. Gardner was sent aboard after the captain and his papers. In a few moments the captain, Moore, came on board with a very confident air, believing that he being an Englishman and the ship being partly owned by Englishmen would be allowed to proceed without molestation. This was the Adriatic from London to New York, with one hundred and sixty-three passengers, nearly all foreigners. Capt. Wood at first determined to bond this ship and allow her to proceed on her voyage, on account of the great number of passengers on board; but finding that she had a great quantity of pig lead and iron on board he determined to burn her, and ordered the captains to get the crew and passengers ready to go on board a barque that the "22" was then bringing in, with their baggage. There was a great deal of consternation on board among the passengers when they learned that their ship was to be burned, and it was some time before we could persuade them that they were not to be burned with it. Women and children ran to and fro crying and wringing their hands and bemoaning their fate, and the men were cussing and trying to drown their cares and troubles in wine and other spirits of which there was a great quantity on board, and in many instances forcing the wine cup on their female companions. I was sent on board with a guard of Marines by Capt. Wood to enforce order and quiet. I never saw such a scene before as presented itself to my view as I climbed over the side of the ship. There were some very beautiful young girls among the steerage passengers. An American gentleman and his wife and daughters occupied the cabin. One of his daughters was a very beautiful young lady. After an incredible amount of labour we succeeded in transferring the crew and passengers to the barque "Suliot" with most of their baggage. The poor creatures tried to carry with them everything that they owned. I never saw such a collection of old boxes, bags, crockery &c. We could not move all of these old things for



them. We tried to move as many of their things as we could. But I am afraid that many of the poor creatures lost all of their clothing, bedding &c. their male companions being too drunk to look out for them. Some of them were so drunk that they had to be lifted over the side of the ship into the boats, among which number was Captain Moore himself. Our disagreeable work was at last over, and sending on board the Suliote the prisoners who were on our ship with water provisions &c. we bonded her and sent her away. Nearly half the passengers of the "Adriatic" were able-bodied young men and will no doubt join the Yankee army as soon as they are landed in New York.<sup>1</sup> We set fire to the "Adriatic" and when she was in full flames we started on our course. Later in the day we captured and destroyed the Schooner "Spokene" of Maine bound to N. Y. with a cargo of laths. The captains of these two vessels were cousins, and had sailed from port together keeping close to each other up to the time of their capture. At 6 o'clock P. M. captured schooner "R. E. Packer", of Pennsylvania, bound to Boston with a load of coal. Our decks were crowded with prisoners and baggage, so that we bonded the schooner for \$30000 in gold and put them on board of her. She had a valuable cargo besides coal. During the night steered northeast, by east. Passed a large steamer with lights supposed to be a Federal cruiser without being seen.

### **Saturday, 13th.**

Passed an English vessel. Captured the barque "Glenavon" of Thomaston, Maine, from Glasgow to New York loaded with pig iron. This was a fine new vessel. The captain had his wife on board and a female Irish servant. There were two passengers on board, an old sea captain and his wife, the latter a perfect termagant and a Scotch woman. She was quarreling with some one from the time her foot touched our deck until she left it. Her husband appeared to be an especial object of her displeasure. She took particular pains to let us know that she was a thorough Union woman in politics. "Which is the Union side of the deck," asked she when she

<sup>1</sup>After burning the "Adriatic", the "22" being no longer of any use to us, was consigned to the flames and her crew taken on board. Our boys enjoyed their sail in the little New York pilot boat very much and almost cried when she was destroyed.

first came on board, "I will not sit on the Secesh side." From that time I do not think her tongue was idle one minute while she was on board. The wife of Captain Watts was a brave and good woman of a very sweet disposition, and bore her husband's misfortunes with sweet resignation. Once only do I remember to have seen her yield to her feelings and that was when alluding to her little children at home, and the fact that all her husband's property was vested in his vessel. She said she had five little children. She spoke of the wrongs and insults heaped upon the women of the South during this war, and said she had read of them often with horror, and that she sympathized with them deeply. Our termagant friend threatened to report her husband and herself as Secesh sympathizers at the first police station that she reached in the United States. When dinner came on we invited Captain Watts and his wife to dinner in the ward room and there being no more room, our termagant friend and her husband were invited to dinner in the steerage with the Ass't Engineers and other warrant officers. She seemed to take this as a pre-meditated insult, and resented it as such. She said she was as good as the captain's wife, that she knew why she had been slighted and the captain's wife invited into the Officers' cabin, that the captain was a Southern sympathizer and she was a Unionist, that she intended to report him as soon as she reached land. Whereupon she launched a torrent of abuse upon the head of her good-natured husband, saying that if she had a husband worthy of the name that he would stand up for her rights &c.

Burned the "Glenavon", and proceeded on our course. I regretted exceedingly to see this fine ship destroyed. At 3 o'clock P. M. captured and destroyed the schooner "Lamot Du Pont" of Wilmington, Delaware, from Cape Breton with coal for New York. While we were occupied with this schooner, a Russian barque passed. We engaged with her captain to take our prisoners—we then had a goodly number on board—into port. The barque had three or four hundred German Emigrants on board. I never saw so many people in so small a space before. We saw several sail in the evening. They were all small and at some distance from us and having a foreign look, we would not go out of our course after them.

**Sunday, 14th.**

Weather thick and foggy. Light breezes from the South-east and later in the day from south south-west. At 10 o'clock A. M. all hands called upon the quarter-deck and services read by Commander Wood. From Meridian to 4 P. M. thick and foggy; the air being very chill and damp. It is very cold for August. Judging from the coldness of the atmosphere we must be progressing considerably to the northward. During the day there was rain with thunder and lightning. At 3 o'clock P. M. exchanged colours with an English ship. A little after 6 o'clock in the evening the fog lifted and we made a sail in sight. Steered for her and at 7:40 P. M. overhauled the ship "James Littlefield", of Bangor, Maine, with a cargo of Cardiff coal for New York. First Lieut. Ward was sent on board with a prize crew to take possession of her and stand her on our course. We were nearly out of coal and this was just the kind we wanted. Captain Wood tried to devise some means of getting it on board our vessel; but the sea was so rough that it could not be done except by bringing it alongside in small boats, and that was too slow and tedious to be thought of for a moment. The "Tallahassee" and her prize were now steering northward. About 9 o'clock P. M. a thick fog came up suddenly and completely hid our prize from our view. We feared for a short time that we would lose her entirely in the fog; but we steamed on in her direction ringing our bell and blowing a fog horn. In a short time we heard her bell in answer and made her light. She was made fast to us by a hawser and we took her in tow while her crew and stores were being removed and she was being prepared for scuttling. At 10 o'clock the fog lifted and the moon shone out brightly. About midnight the ship was scuttled and set on fire, and we steered away from her due north.

**Monday, 15th.**

Two or three sail in sight at daybreak. Captured the schooner "Mercy A. Howes" of Chatham, Massachusetts. She had been for four months in the Bay of Chaleurs fishing and was now returning with a full cargo of cod fish and mackerel. After supplying ourselves with fish and taking the crew on board we destroyed the schooner. Light breezes and smooth sea today. At 8 o'clock A. M. spoke schooner "Sophy" of Nova Scotia from Turks Island to Yarmouth with a cargo

of salt. Engaged with the captain to take our prisoners as passengers. Sent some provisions on board with them, and half a keg of tobacco as a present to the captain. The news of the prizes "Lamot Du Pont", "James Littlefield", and "Mercy A. Howes" were sent off on this schooner with their baggage and personal effects. At 9 o'clock A. M. captured schooner "Howard" of Bridgeport Connecticut from Cape Breton with a cargo of coal. This vessel was captured by the Florida about six weeks ago, and bonded by Captain Morris to take sixty-three prisoners to New York. But her bond only protected her for that voyage, and being a very fine vessel we destroyed her. About 12 o'clock M. captured fishing schooner "Floral Wreath" of Georgetown, Maine, just returning from four months' fishing in the Gulf of St. Lawrence. She had on board over three thousand dollars' worth of cured fish ready for market. Her captain, Chandler Jewet was a genuine Yankee, and was much grieved at the loss of his vessel. He said that he would have rather have lost his wife than that schooner." This was a good specimen of the Yankee fishing vessels. She was worth about two thousand dollars in gold. In these fishing vessels some eight or ten men are engaged and fish on shares. Half of the fish goes to the vessel and the remainder is divided among the crew. One man generally receives about 200 dollars for four months' work. This is considered a very profitable business by these simple-minded people. After scuttling the "Floral Wreath" proceeded on her course. At 3 o'clock P. M. captured and destroyed the fishing schooner "Restless" returning from the Gulf of St. Lawrence with a full cargo of fish. Some of the crew shed tears when their vessel was destroyed. After a short chase overhauled the schooner "Sarah B. Harriss" of Dorchester Massachusetts, returning from the Gulf of Caress. She had spoken the schooner "Coward" and several of our prisoners had changed into her as she was bound to their homes. Having a considerable number on board, Commander Wood bonded her for eight thousand dollars in gold, and put all our prisoners on board of her. She was bound for Portland, Maine. About sunset came upon the "Etta Caroline", a small fishing schooner from Portland. She was at anchor with her sails down and her crew were busily engaged in fishing. The captain was ordered on board. He came over the

side with much trepidation, and walking up to Commander Wood made an awkward bow and stood with his hat under his arm. Commander Wood said, "Well, Captain, I must take charge of your schooner." "Oh, no?" said he, "You wouldn't do that—I'm a poor man—only a fisherman, Sir". "But you are the very fellows we are after," said Captain Wood. The poor fellow looked like that he was about to lose all he ever expected to own in this world. He was allowed to go on board and get all his private effects & c. and the schooner was destroyed. The captain and his crew were then put into their small boats with all their baggage and towed down to the "Sarah B. Harriss" and when he had seen them all on board we steamed rapidly away. We see several beautiful mirages of wonder distinctness. We see beautiful images of vessels reflected on the fog clouds hanging low on the water.

### **Tuesday, 16th.**

Spoke a Nova Scotia schooner at an early hour. At 7 o'clock A. M. Overhauled and destroyed the barque "P. C. Alexander", of Harpswell, Maine. She was a splendid vessel of about 300 tons and valued at twelve thousand dollars in gold. She was bound to Glace Bay for a cargo of coal. Later in the day, overhauled and burned the following named vessels:—Schooner Leopard of Boston, from Cornwallis, Maine, with wood, George Cowley, master; Schooner Pearl of Friendship, Maine, fishing vessel from the banks of Newfoundland, with a cargo of fish, Rufus Greyer, master; Schooner Sarah Louise of Jonesboro, Maine, with wood for Boston, George Dobbing, master; Schooner Magnolia, of Friendship, Maine, fisherman, Owen Wincapaw, master.

We had now a great many prisoners on board, all of them Yankees, and by their own accounts Southern sympathizers, and had been frequently threatened, some of them, with a coat of tar and feathers for their Southern proclivities. I think that they hoped to secure better treatment at our hands by talking this way. But it was a useless violation of truth and conscience, for we treated all alike, and they could not have possibly been treated any better. But I am sorry to see from the Yankee papers that we get now, giving accounts of the 'atrocious deeds of the Pirate Tallahassee', that these same people whom we treated so kindly, wilfully misrepresented us

when they got home, telling in many instances sad tales of the outrages they had undergone. These Yankee people have very fertile imaginations, or they very poorly appreciate the many kindnesses chivalrickly tendered them by a deeply outraged enemy from whom they had no right to expect any but the roughest treatment. Among the last batch of Passenger prisoners—for we treated them more like passengers than prisoners—was a rather beautiful dark-eyed Yankee girl of more modesty and refinement of manner than any we had yet seen. Her father was captain of one of the vessels we had captured. One of the officers gave up his own room to her while she was on board, and she was treated with every kindness during her short stay with us. Later, overhauled schooner "Sea Flower". Bonded her on condition she would take our prisoners into port. All these vessels were captured while running along the coast of Maine, and the last three or four near the islands of Martenicus and Monhegan in Penobscot Bay. We ran quite close to the island of Martenicus and saw the villages on shore and the people watching our movements. Towards night Mr. Tynans, our chief engineer, reported the coal as nearly out. Commander Wood concluded to go into Halifax for a new supply, and at dark we were dashing off nearly fourteen knots an hour towards Cape Sable.

### **Wednesday, 17th.**

At 6 o'clock A. M. were on Brown's bank about forty miles from the Cape. It was a dull, misty day, the sea calm and the air quite cool, and although it was the middle of August we found an overcoat comfortable. We saw several fishermen in the distance but we did not turn from our course to pick them up. But one unlucky fisherman, coming directly in our way, was captured and destroyed—the schooner North America, of New London, Connecticut, David Mainwaring, master. We got some fresh fish and a few provisions from the vessel. At 9 o'clock A. M. captured brig "Neva" of East Machias, Maine, from Lyngan bay, C. B. to New York, with a cargo of Coal. Bonded her for seventeen thousand and five hundred dollars in gold and put our prisoners on board. 2 o'clock P. M. made the Nova Scotia coast above Cape Sable, and during the day, steamed along it near mouth to distinguish the houses, villages, and forts on the shore. A large steamer standing to the Southward passed us in the evening;

but night being too near and we not having coal enough could not give chase. Captured and destroyed schooner "Josiah Achome" of Rockland, Maine, bound to Cape Breton for coal. Two small schooners in sight when we captured the "Achome", taking alarm when the flames blazed up in sight, tried to escape us by running in for the coast, and they did succeed in getting in neutral waters before we could come up with them. But the crews supposing as they afterwards said that we would murder them if we caught them, deserted their vessels and took to their boats and commenced pulling for the land for dear life. We ran around them and made them go back to their vessels and then ordered them to heave-to and the captains to come on board. Commander Wood gave them a good lecture when they came over the side about deserting their vessels, and asked them what they did it for. They replied that they did it because they were so afraid of us that they did not know hardly what they were doing. They were sent back on board of their vessels, and allowed to go on their course without being disturbed. At dark we were still running along the coast, and about 60 miles from the entrance of Halifax harbor. We go under slow steam so as to make it at daybreak.

#### **Thursday, 18th.**

Entered the Harbor of Halifax, Nova Scotia at Daylight. Raining slowly and quite cold. Found several English 'men-of-war' at anchor in the harbor among them the Frigate "Galatea", the sloop "Buzzard", Rear Admiral Sir James Hope's Flag Ship "Duncan", and other vessels.

As soon as we had come to anchor off the town, the health officer came off to inspect us. He was a Southern Sympathizer and only went through the form of inspection. We saw him several times afterwards, during our stay. He invited the Paymaster, Surgeon, and myself to his house and feasted us on champagne and fine segars. It soon became known through the town, that the Tallahassee was in the port, and soon all of the wharves and docks, from which could be obtained a view of the vessel, were crowded with people, looking at our little vessel, though it was raining, and several of our Naval Officers who were in Halifax returning to the Confederacy from Europe, came off to see us. Captain Wood went to see Admiral Hope and the Governor and obtained

permission to remain in port long enough to coal and repair. The Ship's officers, and Crew were paid off in Gold, Ward Room officers, 100, Steerage officers, 50, and all others 10 dollars in gold. Went on shore and bought me a valise full of clothing &c. The citizens of Halifax treated us very kindly. We had champagne, segars, and fine dinners in profusion. I was particularly struck with the fine appearance of the English soldiers and sailors that I saw in the town. Portions of the 16th and 17th regiments were stationed here. I saw many fine looking men also, but I saw very few pretty women. Returned on board ship in the evening and found that during my absence armed boats had come alongside from the English Squadron and ordered us to take on only so much coal as would take us to the nearest Confederate Port, and to leave the harbor as soon as that was done. An officer was left on board to see that the order was obeyed. It seems to account for this sudden change in their conduct towards us, that, as soon as it had become known to the American Consul that we were in the port, he had telegraphed to Mr. Seward at Washington, and on Mr. Seward's representation, Lord Lyons, the English Minister at Washington, had telegraphed to the Governor not to allow us to repair but to order us from the harbor; but the Governor and Admiral afterwards gave us permission to take in coal enough to carry us to the nearest Confederate Port. We were taking in coal from a Prussian Ship when we first received the order to leave. We had to wait for a while; but permission having been granted us we go on with our work but very slowly. Our ship has been crowded with visitors all day, all anxious to see the "Tallahassee", but going away very much disappointed I am afraid at finding such a small little vessel and such an ordinary looking set of officers and men. The English Naval Officers seem to be very friendly disposed towards us.

**Friday, August 19th, 1864.**

Yesterday while we were coaling ship and everything and everybody were black with coal dust, Dr. DeWolf, Surgeon of the Queen's Hospital at Halifax, came on board, with his little daughter, the prettiest little English girl I ever saw, about 15 years of age. She was quite intelligent and interesting, but exceedingly modest in her manners. It fell to my lot, being the youngest officer on board ship, to entertain her,



while the other officers entertained her father. I found her to be an ardent little rebel in her sympathies. She had the most exalted ideas of the greatness and goodness of President Davis, Generals Lee and Beauregarde. It did my heart good to hear her speak in such warm praise of our beloved leaders, and I internally blessed her for it. She seemed to take a great fancy to Gen. Beauregarde on account of his great deeds and his beautiful name, and said she would like so much to see a picture of him, that she knew he must be very handsome. Glad of an opportunity to show my appreciation of her disinterested friendship for our poor suffering and badly abused people, I took out of my pocket the little miniature likeness of Gen. Beauregarde, which I have mentioned before, and begged her to accept it as a little memento of the Tallahassee and the Southern Confederacy, and not to take us as specimens of our noble soldiers and sailors, but to turn to this little miniature as a noble specimen of a true Confederate Soldier. She accepted it with pleasure, and her eyes fairly danced with delight as she took it. She said he was the handsomest man she ever saw. The picture was taken in 1861 and he was indeed handsome and noble looking then. It was with extreme reluctance that we saw our sympathizing little friend and her father leave our ship. He was a noble looking old gentleman, after the Old Virginia type. We took on coal until after dark, when all the shore boats and people on board were sent off, and I was sent on shore with other officers a guard to gather up and bring off our missing liberty men, 60 or 70 of whom had not yet come off—being drunk and scattered all over town as is the custom with sailors. With the aid of the Town police and their officers, we succeeded in gathering together and carrying to our boats all but 27 of our men. Some of them were so drunk that they had to be carried on the shoulders of the guard to our boats. The police were very polite and kind to us, and very good-naturedly took some hard knocks from our drunken sailors and marines without using their clubs.

### **September 29th.**

Stirring events today in our immediate neighborhood. Enemy opened a terrible fire along our lines at Petersburg & Bermuda Hundred as they intended to attack last night, but they did not advance. Today they advanced in overwhelming

numbers against our forces in Deep Bottom and our works on the North Side of the James. Our forces opposed to them were principally Reserves who ran early in the action. The enemy easily captured Fort Harrison, which is one mile from Chaffin's Bluff its garrison of Reserves having ingloriously fled. The enemy advanced almost into Richmond before they were checked. But reinforcements were hurried over by Gen. Lee and along towards night things grew quiet. We can learn nothing definite. Some suppose it is only a feint, and others say that all of Grant's Army is on the North Side, and that Lee is in motion. Dearing's Brigade Cavalry is said to have fought splendidly today. Prisoners report Gen. Ord. Killed (which turned out to be false). Our gunboats one mile below Chaffin's Bluff having been firing heavily on the enemy all day, we supposed they were firing on Fort Harrison after the enemy took it. The enemy did not return their fire. Wrote to Uncle Tom today.

**September 30th.**

Everything was comparatively quiet about 12 o'clock and there was very little artillery firing, the position seemed to be unchanged, neither party having advanced. But at about 3 o'clock the musketry became quite heavy & continued more or less all the evening, and the artillery fire became very lively. But the enemy still did not reply to our heavy batteries and gunboats. Our troops made a gallant but ineffectual assault from Fort Harrison which was taken by the enemy yesterday. We cannot learn anything definite. We have not been forced back on the North Side today, but steadily held our ground. A little before sunset a terrible artillery fire was heard at Petersburg and was very heavy until after dark when it ceased entirely. The ball has opened beyond a doubt and Grant is making his final effort to take Richmond. Wrote to my friend Charlie Baskerville 6th Miss. Cavalry Forest's command. Cloudy and gloomy all day. Rained in the evening.

**Saturday, Oct. 1st.**

Cloudy and rainy all day. Sharp fighting on the North Side all day. Our forces attempted to storm Fort Harrison yesterday evening and though partially successful did not succeed in taking the Fort. Every man in Richmond able to bear arms is in the trenches. Our army is in fine spirits. The

enemy attacked Gen. Picket's line at Bermuda Hundred yesterday evening but were repulsed. We can learn nothing definite from the firing at Petersburg. No change in the position of our army today. The Richmond Examiner published a speech today purporting to have been delivered by President Davis at Macon, Geo. and reflecting severely on Gen. J. E. Johnston. The speech is very undignified and very unlike Mr. Davis. I sincerely trust it was not delivered by him.

**Sunday, Oct. 2nd.**

Everything was comparatively quiet today. There was very little firing. There are a great many rumors afloat about the capture of prisoners at Petersburg. Cloudy all day. Cleared off a little in the evening.

**Monday, Oct. 3rd.**

A very cloudy and disagreeable day. No firing on the North Side today. Some artillery firing down the River, probably the Gunboats. Gen. Lee is reported to have said that all was well. My wounded jaw is improving very slowly. It is still open and running. Borrowed a sword from Capt. Simons today.

(To be continued)

## CHARLES TEED POLLARD INDUSTRIALIST

*By Mildred Beale*

(In the Winter issue, 1930, of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*, the first pages of this biography of Colonel Charles T. Pollard were presented. The remainder of the biography will be presented in this and future issues. Miss Beale was describing the first trip over the first twelve miles of the railroad line from Montgomery to West Point, Georgia. Colonel Charles T. Pollard as president of the railroad had issued invitations to friends to accompany him in the opening run which was made on June 3, 1840.)

The guests assembled at the depot<sup>1</sup> on Saturday, the sixth of June, to ride on the first train to run from Montgomery and the first steam engine to run in the State<sup>2</sup>. The Tuscumbia and Decatur Railroad used horse power.<sup>3</sup> The trip was most enjoyable, and on the return the party stopped about seven miles from Montgomery and were entertained with a barbecue given by the Railroad Company. After dinner, Judge Martin was appointed president and William Sayre was appointed vice-president of the day. Toasts were drunk and when the train reached the depot, James E. Belser, on behalf of the guests, made a short address thanking President Pollard and the directors for their hospitality.<sup>4</sup> On June the eighth these twelve miles of road were opened to the public.<sup>5</sup> After six years of the most severe trials and hardships, and at times the keenest opposition from those who should have assisted, the little company, led by President Pollard, had achieved success.

The *Alabama Journal* carried an advertisement to the effect that the road would soon be opened to Franklin (thirty-three and one-half miles) and that a daily train for both

---

<sup>1</sup>The Depot was about one-fourth of a mile from where the Union Station is now.

<sup>2</sup>*Alabama Journal*, June 10, 1840; Screws, W. W. Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads", *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>3</sup>This was the first railroad chartered in the State.

<sup>4</sup>*Alabama Journal*, June 10, 1840.

<sup>5</sup>Blue, M. P., *City Directory and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, page 63.

passengers and freight would leave Montgomery at eight A.M. and return at two P.M. Passage to Franklin was \$2.00 and intermediate points six cents per mile. A cotton bale of not more than five hundred pounds was hauled for eighty-two cents from Franklin to Montgomery. Merchandise was hauled between the two points for seventeen cents per hundredweight and to intermediate points at the same rate in proportion to distance.<sup>6</sup> The charter specified that six cents per mile was the maximum passenger rate that could be charged, and fifty cents per hundredweight per hundred miles was the maximum that could be charged for freight.<sup>7</sup> The advertisement further stated that cotton would be carried free of charge over the Marshall's and Ware's ferries on the Tallapoosa and over the Franklin bridge due to the fact that the railroad controlled them.

This road was run in the most primitive way. The engine and cars operated upon wooden stringers, having a surface of flat or band iron.<sup>8</sup> The company owned one steam engine, but it ran only on rare occasions and consequently horse power was resorted to.<sup>9</sup> There was little difference in the speed, the average being about ten miles per hour. In June, 1840, the road was completed to Franklin.<sup>10</sup> It could not be profitably operated. The gross receipts were a little less than the cost of operation. The road being unprofitable, the owners decided, in 1841, to lease the property to Abner McGehee.<sup>11</sup> McGehee was one of the largest stockholders and a director of the company. He operated the road until July 5, 1842, but did not succeed with it. The road having failed to be a financial success, it was now sold under mortgage foreclosure. At the public auction, the property was bought by S. Gilmer, William Taylor, James S. Scott, Judge B. S. Bibb, Abner McGehee, Thomas M. Coles, Colonel Lewis

<sup>6</sup>November 4, 1840.

<sup>7</sup>*Acts of Alabama* 1830-1833, Number 84.

<sup>8</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railroad of Alabama*.

<sup>9</sup>Clarke, T. H., *Memorial Record of Alabama*, page 321.

<sup>10</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railroad of Alabama*.

<sup>11</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railroad of Alabama*.

Owens, Charles Teed Pollard and Charles Shannon. The sale was approved by the Legislature and the company began to reorganize.<sup>12</sup> The name was changed to the Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company, and the old charter was transferred to the new company February 13, 1843.<sup>13</sup> The new board of directors was practically the same as the one of the former company, and the same man was chosen president, Charles Teed Pollard.

The Legislature provided that six months would be allowed the stockholders and creditors of the old Montgomery Railroad Company to pay their proportion of the amount expended for the road. If this were done, they would be placed on the same footing as those who had purchased the road and incorporated it under the new name. When the six months had elapsed, many of the stockholders and creditors had failed to pay their proportion. The new directorate under Pollard's leadership, and upon his suggestion, extended the time to one year in which the delinquents might make payment of their proportion and renew their interests in the company. Pollard's unqualified integrity is exhibited by his allowing an additional year to the stockholders and creditors of the Montgomery Railroad Company to prove their rights and retain their interest, which legally they had lost. Pollard explained that there was a moral obligation which required this, regardless of the legal obligation.<sup>14</sup>

The reorganized company encountered financial difficulties and could not secure the capital necessary to complete the road beyond Franklin, Alabama. The State was called upon to aid them, and in the winter of 1844, the Legislature passed an act which allowed the Governor to lend the railroad one-half of the "two per cent fund" upon favorable terms, provided that the return of the money at the expiration of ten years be satisfactorily secured, and, further, that

---

<sup>12</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>13</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 372.

<sup>14</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

the road be extended and operated to Auburn, Alabama, for public use by January 1, 1849.<sup>15</sup>

After the passage of this act another difficulty was encountered. No security which the company offered was satisfactory to the Governor. Finally, in desperation, to secure the desired loan from the State, the owners of the property, that is, Abner McGehee, William Taylor, Colonel Thomas M. Cole, Charles Teed Pollard and Alfred V. Scott, mortgaged their personal property and managed to obtain personal security acceptable to the Governor. Consequently, on March 1, 1845, the Governor directed the State Treasurer to pay the railroad company \$116,782.64. This enabled the company to continue construction on the road.<sup>16</sup>

The cost of railroad building, of upkeep, and of operation in those pioneer days of railroad enterprises was stupendous. The most rigid economy was, of necessity, practiced by the directors of the Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company. They sent to Virginia and purchased eighty-four Negroes for \$42,176.20 to be used as laborers in the construction of the road beyond Franklin, to Auburn and West Point. Some idea of the expense can be gathered from the fact that Richmond, Virginia, was the nearest place where railroad spikes were manufactured. When it was found that the band iron upon which the wheels were run wore out too rapidly, and that "T" rails had to be substituted, it was necessary to purchase them in Philadelphia. They were brought from there by ship to Savannah, Georgia. One cargo of these rails was lost in a storm off Cape Hatteras, and this delayed completion of the road.<sup>17</sup> Pollard purchased many acres of land adjoining the terminals in Montgomery. This is an example of his farsighted policy, for these lands have been of great value to the company in recent years.

<sup>15</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>16</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>17</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

After many years of vicissitudes, President Pollard brought his road to completion on May 1, 1851.<sup>18</sup> Fifteen years had been required for the actual construction. Pollard gave not only his brain, time and money to the undertaking, but also mortgaged his personal property to tide the road over tight places. The *Advertiser* and *State Gazette* congratulated the company and the city of Montgomery on the completion of the road to West Point and called it the "first road of any importance ever constructed in the State."<sup>19</sup>

Colonel Pollard was admirably assisted in bringing the road to completion by his chief engineer and superintendent, Samuel G. Jones, the father of the late Governor Thomas G. Jones.<sup>20</sup> They not only completed the road but also built up its business so as to enable it to pay dividends and to put aside reserve funds for betterment and improvement.<sup>21</sup>

The first link in the Pollard system was completed. This road connected with a Georgia line at West Point, and thus Montgomery was put in direct communication with the Atlantic Seaboard and the East. The Montgomery and West Point Railroad was a link in the chain from the Gulf of Mexico to the Atlantic Ocean.

Under Colonel Pollard's guidance the earnings of the Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company were enormous during the fateful years of 1860-1865. A dividend of ten per cent. was declared payable on February 15, 1863, and another twenty per cent. payable on March 1, 1864. However, most of the profits of 1862-1863-1864 were represented by Confederate bonds and money. The road was not left untouched by the War. It suffered just as everything else in the South did. In 1865, General Wilson and his men marched through Selma, Montgomery, Opelika, West Point, and Columbus, Georgia. As they passed through these places, they completely demolished every destructable thing owned

<sup>18</sup>Blue, M. P., *City Director and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, page 59.

<sup>19</sup>May 7, 1851.

<sup>20</sup>Screws, W. W. Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads", *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>21</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.



by the company. The records show that the destruction included depot buildings, workshops, bridges, cars, locomotives, and machinery. The treasury was left without one dollar of available means.<sup>22</sup>

Due to the ravages of war, the company in 1865 was in a most deplorable condition. It was one part in the picture of ruin and devastation which the South represented after the War Between the States. Mortgages had fallen due for more than one-half million dollars. Interest coupons on the bonds had reached maturity, amounting to hundreds of thousands of dollars. Practically none of this was claimed by the owners of the securities, because the payment would have been in Confederate money, and the owners preferred to take the promise to pay of the railroad, rather than to exchange it for something not so valuable.<sup>23</sup> In the face of such conditions, which would have brought dismay to the heart of the bravest, President Pollard and his competent assistants set themselves to the seemingly impossible task of rebuilding the road. The company floated new bonds and took up old ones that had matured during the War, raised money with which to purchase new equipment and with which to rebuild the bridges, depots, and so forth. They made a fairly successful effort under the most unfavorable conditions.

Pollard wished to extend the railroad from Montgomery to Selma where it would connect with the Alabama and Mississippi Rivers Railroad and the Alabama and Tennessee Rivers Railroad.<sup>24</sup> By connecting with the Alabama and Mississippi Rivers Railroad, a line of communication across the State and then to the Mississippi would be completed. By connecting with the Alabama and Tennessee Rivers Railroad, it would solve Alabama's leading transportation problems by connecting the Tennessee and Alabama River Valleys through the mineral belt.<sup>25</sup>

---

<sup>22</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>23</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>24</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 373.

<sup>25</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 373.

On February 16, 1854, Pollard secured the first charter to build a road from Montgomery to Selma in order that his plans be carried out. The charter authorized the company to construct a line westward to Selma, which would connect with the Alabama and Mississippi Rivers Railroad and form the desired line of communication across the State. The charter empowered the directors to purchase the property of the Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company, and to consolidate with any lines necessary to complete the plan. The enterprisers had to grade thirty miles of the road within two years of the date of the charter or forfeit it. The promoters failed to comply and the charter was forfeited. Another unsuccessful attempt was made by Pollard in 1859 to carry the Montgomery and West Point Railroad to Selma.<sup>26</sup>

On February 23, 1860, Pollard was granted another charter by the Legislature empowering him and six others to form the Western Railroad Company of Alabama, with capital stock of \$5,000,000. The charter gave the company the power to purchase the Montgomery and West Point Railroad and to connect with or consolidate with any other roads to make the continuous road across the State. Pollard managed to interest the Central of Georgia Railroad Company in the project, as a western outlet for its lines, and subsequently received from it material financial aid for the young company.<sup>27</sup> A survey was made of the road, but nothing was done toward construction. On September 28, 1860, the subscribers to the Western Railroad stock elected the board of directors, Charles Pollard, president, and Samuel C. Jones, chief engineer.<sup>28</sup>

In 1863, the time for the completion of the road from Montgomery to Selma was placed at two years after the ratification of peace. In 1866, Samuel C. Jones conducted another survey and began work. In 1870, the work was completed and the line opened for traffic from Montgomery to Selma. The line terminated on the east bank of the Alabama

<sup>26</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography* Vol. II, page 1397.

<sup>27</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1397.

<sup>28</sup>Blue, M. P., *City Directory and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, page 75.

River. The bridge was not completed across the river until 1872.<sup>29</sup> Another part of the Pollard system was now a reality.

Pollard served as president of the Montgomery and West Point Road until September 1, 1870, at which time it was consolidated with the Western Railroad of Alabama.<sup>30</sup> In the meantime, he was elected president of the Western Railroad Company, which was incorporated February 23, 1860.<sup>31</sup> Thus at the time of consolidation, he was president of both companies. September 1, 1870, he assumed the role of president of the consolidated company. Pollard served as the president of the new company until April 1, 1874. At this time the road was placed in the hands of a receiver, the receiver being Charles Teed Pollard. He operated the consolidated company under the receivership until May 31, 1875, when his service as receiver terminated. He was head of the road which now operates as the Western Railway of Alabama from January 15, 1834, as president, until April 1, 1874, and as receiver from that date until May 31, 1875.<sup>32</sup>

The need for a connection between Montgomery and Pensacola, or preferably Mobile, was soon realized. The need for a quick and cheap transportation system between Montgomery and Gulf of Mexico was pressing. At this time the only road leading from Montgomery was the Montgomery and West Point which led to the northeast. South of Montgomery lay hundreds of thousands of acres of rich land which had not been penetrated. The farmers were forced to haul their cotton under the most difficult circumstances fifty or a hundred miles to the river ports.<sup>33</sup> During the dry seasons traffic on the Alabama River was so slow and the expense so great that instead of the farmers shipping their cotton to a port in Alabama they sent it by rail to Charleston and Savannah.<sup>34</sup>

<sup>29</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1397.

<sup>30</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>31</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>32</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>33</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 372.

<sup>34</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 372.

On December 23, 1836, the City of Alabama and Montgomery Railroad Company was chartered to remedy the existing transportation needs. The plan was to construct a road from Montgomery to Pensacola. Due to the six years time limit, the charter lapsed, because the enterprise was not carried through. The project was revived in 1850 by the Alabama and Florida Company.<sup>35</sup> The company was chartered on February 11 to construct a road from Montgomery to Pensacola, or to Flomaton on the Alabama-Florida State line where it would make connection with a road being built north from Pensacola by the Alabama and Florida Company of Florida.<sup>36</sup> However, this company accomplished nothing at the outset. Pollard and Samuel G. Jones were enterprising and progressive enough to anticipate the possibilities of a road which would give Montgomery a connection with the Gulf. Consequently in 1851, when Pollard made his report to the directors of the Montgomery and West Point Company, he called their attention to the need of establishing a connection between the Gulf and the sections of the country served by their road.<sup>37</sup>

By 1853, he had interested them enough for them to render substantial aid to the languishing Alabama and Florida Company. The road had accomplished nothing up to this time, but under the guidance of Pollard great progress was made. Pollard and Jones appreciated the significance of the opportunity presented to them and availed themselves of it.

Samuel G. Jones was a noted civil engineer and was chief engineer and superintendent of the Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company.<sup>38</sup> He became chief engineer of the Alabama and Florida Company and was appointed to make a survey and estimate the cost of various routes from Montgomery to Pensacola. Soon after Pollard became interested,

<sup>35</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1013.

<sup>36</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

<sup>37</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1013.

<sup>38</sup>Screws, W. W. Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads", *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

he was made president of the road. The Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company became the foster parent of the Alabama and Florida Company, which later became a section of the Louisville and Nashville Railroad Company. The Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company furnished the brains for the project. It also subscribed liberally to the capital stock and in addition aided the young enterprise by endorsing its bonds. January 30, 1857, was the date when \$300,000 worth of bonds at eight per cent. per annum were issued by the company and guaranteed by the Montgomery and West Point Railroad Company. They were validated on January 11, 1858.<sup>39</sup>

Pollard and Jones possessed unbounding energy, and they exercised it to the fullest extent in interesting the people in the new road. On June 27, 1853, the real estate owners of Montgomery took a vote upon a subscription by Montgomery of \$500,000 to the capital stock of the Alabama and Florida Railroad Company. Everyone who owned one hundred dollars' worth of real estate was entitled to one vote. The vote for the subscription was 18,171 to 650 against it.<sup>40</sup> Pollard and Jones obtained authority from the Legislature on February 16, 1854, for the company to receive subscriptions to its capital stock from the city of Montgomery. The Legislature also granted permission to the company to invite or to make joint stock with the Alabama and Florida Company of Florida, to enable them to work together for the construction of the road from Montgomery to Pensacola. The charter was amended to enable the company to build a branch to Mobile from the southern terminus of the road at the southern boundary of Conecuh County.<sup>41</sup>

Further aid was obtained in 1861 when the Legislature authorized the Governor to make a loan of \$30,000 to the company for three years, at eight per cent. interest, payable annually. Satisfactory personal security was required and the road must be completed between Montgomery and Pen-

---

<sup>39</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1013.

<sup>40</sup>Blue, M. P., *City Directory and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, page 64.

<sup>41</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1013.

sacola by June 1, 1861.<sup>42</sup> Alabama had refused to aid the railroads time and time again, due chiefly to the conservative policy of Governor Winston, who refused to sign the acts authorizing aid to the railroads.<sup>43</sup> In time Alabama most probably would have been granting material aid to the railroads had it not been for the War.<sup>44</sup> The Alabama and Florida Railroad Company received aid from both State and local sources.

Construction on the road was begun in 1858, personally supervised by Engineer Jones, and by the outbreak of the War the road was completed to Pollard.<sup>45</sup> It was opened for traffic on May 1, 1861.<sup>46</sup> At Pollard the road was to take a westerly direction to Pensacola. By 1862 the road was completed to Pensacola.

Pollard was at the helm of this company during the War. This road was of the utmost importance to the Confederate Government. Troops were sent from all parts of the State to Mobile and Pensacola by this road. It was of especial importance to the navy yard at Pensacola, which received most of its supplies over this route.<sup>47</sup> Just before the completion of the Alabama and Florida Railroad, Chief Engineer Jones wrote to President Pollard advising him of the necessity for placing guards on the main bridges of the road. Jones feared that spies disguised as lumbermen might destroy part of the road.<sup>48</sup> Any mutilation to the road would have been a blow to the Confederate Government, as an uninterrupted line of communication with Pensacola was of the greatest importance. Therefore, Engineer Jones wrote asking

<sup>42</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1013.

<sup>43</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 328.

<sup>44</sup>Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, page 377.

<sup>45</sup>Screws, W. W. Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads," *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>46</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1013.

<sup>47</sup>Screws, W. W. Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads," *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>48</sup>*War of Rebellion, Official Records*, Series 1, Vol. LII.

President Pollard if he would not have the Secretary of War place a guard of volunteers at each bridge.<sup>49</sup>

The road to Pensacola was supplemented by the Mobile and Great Northern Railroad which was built in the early sixties from Tensas to Pollard.<sup>50</sup> The company was chartered in 1856 and its purpose was to build a road from Mobile to Pollard where it would connect with the Alabama and Florida Railroad and thus make a complete line of communication from Montgomery to Mobile. It was also to connect with the Alabama and Tennessee Rivers Railroad at some point on that line.<sup>51</sup> Mobile capital was behind the road, and it was built from Tensas to Pollard. When it was completed in 1866, Montgomery possessed a railroad connection almost to Mobile, Tensas being only six miles from there. In those early days of railroading, they could not construct a road through the Tensas swamp to Mobile and complete the line of communication from Montgomery to Mobile, so the Mobile and Great Northern operated steamers at Tensas, which took the passengers from the train there into Mobile. Not until March 5, 1872, was the road completed to Alabama's seaport.<sup>52</sup> One train left Montgomery daily at seven o'clock in the evening and arrived at seven the next morning in Tensas. It took twelve hours to go one hundred and sixty miles.

On November 23, 1874, the Alabama and Florida Railroad Company and the Mobile and Great Northern were consolidated to form the Mobile and Montgomery Railroad.<sup>53</sup> Thus a through line of communication from Montgomery to Mobile was accomplished. Pollard served as president of the consolidated company.<sup>54</sup> He had completed a portion of his

---

<sup>49</sup>*War of Rebellion, Official Records*, Series 1, Vol. LII.

<sup>50</sup>Smith, Milton H., *Statement Made Before the Alabama Railroad Commission*, April 5, 1905. (Mr. Smith was president of the L. & N. Railroad Company.)

<sup>51</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1014.

<sup>52</sup>Screws, W. W. Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads", *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>53</sup>Clarke, T. H., *Memorial Record of Alabama*, Vol. I, page 326.

<sup>54</sup>Facts furnished by Frank G. Browder from the *Records of the Western Railway of Alabama*.

proposed system; communication from the Gulf of Mexico to the Atlantic Ocean was established. The charter allowed the company to issue eight per cent. preferred stock not to exceed \$2,250,000 and bonds as it became necessary to raise funds. On February 25, 1870, the Governor endorsed on the part of the State \$2,500,000 of the first mortgage bonds issued by the Montgomery and Mobile Railroad Company. The State stipulated that they should not run for more than thirty years nor bear interest exceeding eight per cent. per annum. This was payable semi-annually. The State, desiring to have the first and only lien on the property, road, and equipment, provided that the bonds should be issued in two installments, and the proceeds of the first \$1,500,000 was to be used in paying off the property liens that existed. When this was done, the Legislature authorized the Governor to endorse a second installment of \$1,000,000 provided that he had evidence that a contract had been made to complete the road from Tensas to Mobile. There was provision for a sinking fund to retire the bonds. The railroad company was required to pay a trustee appointed by the Governor to manage all transactions in connection with the bonds.<sup>55</sup>

The road was leased on January 1, 1881, to the Louisville and Nashville for twenty years, and on December 17, 1900, it was deeded to this company.<sup>56</sup> Therefore, the road from Montgomery to Mobile and the branch to Pensacola, which was constructed largely by the brains, means, and efforts of Charles Teed Pollard, became a section in the most important trunk line in the South.

It is evident that a man who could contribute so greatly to the transportation system of his State in those pioneer days of railroading possessed unusual ability and knowledge. He was a most unselfish, sanguine and hard-working promoter and builder. Skill and enterprise beyond measure were necessary to carry out such projects as Pollard undertook. Pollard was able to weather the storms of financial distress

<sup>55</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1015.

<sup>56</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, Vol. II, page 1015.



that swept the country and by his integrity to secure means from Europe, as well as from America, to keep his enterprise from going on the rocks.<sup>57</sup> He contributed great amounts of his own means to finance his enterprises, mortgaging his personal property to secure loans.

The story of Charles Teed Pollard's connection with railroads is the story of a man who contributed more of his means, time, energy and ability to developing the transportation system of Alabama than did any other one person. It is truly an epic in the history of railroad building.

(To be continued)

---

<sup>57</sup>Garrett, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Alabama*, page 382.

## EARLY HISTORY OF MADISON COUNTY

*By Thomas Jones Taylor*

(This installment of an article printed serially in the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*, 1930, concludes the early history. The later articles treat of more recent history and will appear from time to time in the *Quarterly* until completed. These sketches were printed originally in the *Huntsville Independent*, of 1883 and 1884. The articles were copied by the late Thomas M. Owen from the scrap book loaned to the Department of Archives and History by Judge Taylor's grandson, Thomas W. Taylor, at the time residing in Decatur, Alabama. Judge Taylor was born in 1829, at Talladega, and died at Huntsville in 1894. He was a Confederate soldier, teacher, surveyor, held a number of minor offices in Madison County until finally elected Probate Judge, a position he was holding at the time of his death.)

### CHAPTER XV

#### Conclusion of Early History

I have given a brief outline of the early history of Madison county to the year 1820. I thought it best in the article on Huntsville's corporation to trace it through its changes and progress down to the present time. The superior court and inferior court, as peculiar to the old county, I have also brought down to their abolition by the State constitution and legislative enactment. Among the subjects of paramount interest to our people, I have written nothing of education, and it would be unjust to our ancestors to leave an impression that they did nothing to foster education. I am constrained to say a few words on that subject. I am gratified that we have facts to show that the early settlers of the county were actively interested in the promotion of learning. Many of them were men of culture, and as early as the year 1812 the old Green Academy was incorporated by the Territorial legislature<sup>1</sup>, with William Edmonson, John Brahan, Wm. Leslie, James McCartney, Peter Perkins, Charles Burnes, Wm. Derrick, James Neely, John Grayson, Henry Cox, Bennett Woods, Samuel Allen, Andrew K. Davis, William Evans and Nathan Powers as trustees. Many of these names are familiar to

<sup>1</sup>Mississippi.

the old citizens of the county. Bennett Woods and Andrew K. Davis, were well known ministers of the gospel. Wm. Edmondson afterwards settled in Limestone County and was a prominent citizen of that county; nearly all the others are represented by direct descendents or relatives in the counties of the Tennessee Valley. Many citizens of the county offered to donate or sell sites for the new academy, but the trustees chose the "Green Academy lot", on which the public school building now stands, which was then on the land of Gen. John Brahan and which was deeded by him to the trustees. With the exception of the academy at St. Stephens, incorporated one year earlier, this was the oldest institution of learning in the State. I have never seen a catalogue of the students of Green Academy from the year 1812 to 1820, but it is a well known fact that nearly all of the prominent men educated during that period were students of Green Academy, and that it was the leading institution in the State until the establishment of the State University in 1821. The act of incorporation authorized the academy to raise four thousand dollars by lottery (a favorite scheme of that period of raising money), but there is no evidence to show that the trustees resorted to this method of building up their academy. In the year 1816 the Territorial legislature donated five hundred dollars for the academy, and in the year 1818 Lemuel Mead, Henry Chambers, Henry Minor, John M. Taylor, C. C. Clay and John Williams Walker were appointed to fill vacancies occasioned by death, removal or resignation. Nor was the interest in education confined to Huntsville alone. In every part of the county there was an effort to keep up the common schools, and those who can remember the generation raised in the county in its early period will also recollect that very few of them were unable to read and write. The rising generation of that time could see the necessity of education and fully availed themselves of the opportunity of acquiring a knowledge of reading, writing and arithmetic, which, outside of the academy, comprised the English course of the period.

Many of the ancestors of the citizens in the southwestern portion of the county purchased their homesteads in the year 1818. Among these were the James Collier, Joshua Dillard, John and W. G. Rowe, Harris and Caleb Toney,

James Wiggins, Charles Betts, Stith B. Spragins, Reuben Crutcher, M. Farley, William East, Wilsey Pride, and Rowland Gooch. Many of the early settlers prior to the year 1819 had died and many had passed the period of life for active participation in public affairs. But those who came here young men had built up their fortunes as the new country progressed, and when the State was admitted into the Union were fairly entered on a prosperous and successful career. Among the merchants, William Patton, Stephen Ewing, John Reed and Francis T. Mastin were among the last survivors. Of this number, if I mistake not, Francis Mastin was the last, dying about the year 1865 at the age of 85 years. Among the mechanics were Thomas and William Brandon, "the builders of the city," who came here with no property except their working tools, but who rapidly accumulated property by working in brick mortar and were highly respected by all classes of our community. Martin Miller's tanyard and Jere Murphy's blacksmith shops were known to every citizen of the county. Leroy Pope, John Withers, Samuel Allen Cabiness, Uriah Bass, John Brahan and many others brought capital with them to the Territory, which they increased by judicial investments. Of this number Charles Cabiness and Uriah Bass, two of the most enterprising and public spirited of the number, died before the maturity of their plans, the development of which would have given them a leading position among the enterprising men of that era of enterprise. Among the farmers and planters of the old county, William Dickson removed to Lawrence; the Winstons went to South Alabama and were a wealthy and influential family; John Anthony Winston, a distinguished politician and Governor of the State, was a descendant of this family, several members of which were among the earliest settlers in our county. The Lawlers were among the first settlers in the county, and Jack Lawler left the county at an early day and went to Shelby county, where he was successively justice of the peace, member of the legislature, trustee of the State University, and at his death was a member of Congress, and if I mistake not, was the ancestor of the well known Lawler family of South Alabama. There were so many prominent and successful planters who came to the county at an early date that it is impossible to mention even a small

portion of them, but I have alluded to many of them in giving names of the original purchasers of the land sales in 1809 and 1818. Among the physicians and surgeons of the time, Dr. Thomas Fearn was by far the most celebrated—holding a high rank among the scientists of the South. In his youth he had considerable practical experience in the war of 1812, and spent the years 1818 and 1819 in the hospitals and medical schools of Europe. On his return he took a high position among the physicians and surgeons of the day and was a valuable contributor to many of our medical journals. His article, published in the medical journals, on the use of quinine in typhoid fever, attracted the attention of medical men and was the beginning of a revolution in the treatment of that dread disease. Among the oldest ministers of the gospel mentioned in the county are David Thompson, Thomas Moore, Woodson Loyd, Robert Hancock and William Lanier of the Methodist Episcopal Church, all licensed before the year 1814; Bennett Woods, John Nicholson, John McCutcheon, John Canterberry and William Bird of the Baptist Church, and Andrew K. Davis and James W. Allen of the Presbyterian Church. The roll of attorneys who were admitted to the practice in the superior court at Huntsville from the year 1810 to 1820 is an exceptionally brilliant one, and would of itself furnish material for an interesting volume. Among the attorneys admitted to the bar at the first superior court held in Huntsville, in November, 1810, were George Colter, John W. Walker, Marmaduke Williams, Gabriel Moore and John M. Taylor; of whom John W. Walker was Circuit Judge and U. S. Senator. Gabriel Moore was Governor and U. S. Senator, Marmaduke Williams was a member of the Legislature and Judge of County Court in Tuskaloosa county, George Colter was Circuit Judge of the Florence judicial circuit, John M. Taylor was Circuit Judge and Justice of the Supreme Court. After the year 1810 were, C. C. Clay, Circuit Judge, Member of Congress, Governor, Justice of the Supreme Court and U. S. Senator, Henry Minor, Circuit Judge and Supreme Court Reporter; John McKinley, member of Congress, U. S. Senator and Judge of U. S. Circuit Court, Samuel Chapman, Judge of Madison County Court for fourteen years and Circuit Judge of Tuskaloosa Circuit for twelve years; William Kelly, Member of Congress

and U. S. Senator; Henry Chambers, member of the Legislature and U. S. Senator; Hugh McVay, President of the Alabama Senate and Governor; Wm. I. Adair, speaker of Alabama Lower House and Circuit Judge; James G. Birney, member of the first Alabama Legislature, first proselyte from the South to the old abolition party and its first candidate for President of the United States; and last, but not the least, Arthur F. Hopkins, admitted to the bar in 1817, and Jas. W. McClung in 1818 or 1819. Arthur F. Hopkins was the trusted leader in the old Whig party of the State, was circuit judge and Justice of the Supreme Court. James W. McClung was several times a member of the Alabama Legislature and twice Speaker of the Lower House. A graceful and eloquent speaker and ready debater, he wielded considerable influence in our legislative councils, and in native talent and legal acumen he had no superior, if an equal, at the Huntsville Bar.

Of the early settlers of the county, not members of the bar, who served in the legislature, Thomas Miller, Frederick Weeden, Isaac Lanier, John Vining, John M. Leake, Dr. David Moore, James Penn, James W. Camp and Samuel Walker. Thomas Miller lived near New Market and was twice Speaker of the lower House. Samuel Walker, with a limited education, is said to have been the most accomplished public speaker of his time, and was, whenever he chose to be a candidate, a member of the Legislature, from the Convention of 1819 until he resigned the Speakership on account of ill health, in the year 1840. He lived north of Madison X. Roads in the barrens of north Madison. Among the noted men of this time was Hunter Peel, who came here about the year 1816. He was an Englishman by birth and had been an engineer in the English Army, and he surveyed part of the public domain sold in 1818, and was an accomplished surveyor and engineer. He was also an excellent draughtsman. In the year 1819 he drew a map of the old county that was a model of neatness and accuracy, which unfortunately was lost during the war. He also drew a map of

the old Huntsville corporation, and planned and assisted in the construction of the Huntsville water-works. He was county surveyor from the year 1820 to 1830, which later date was a few months before his death.

With this brief sketch of some of our old citizens, I close my history of old Madison.

## POEMS

(It will be the policy of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly* to present a group of poems by Alabamians in each issue of the magazine. Two poems are presented in this issue. "Village Transcendentalist" is by Mary B. Ward, of Birmingham. This poem won first prize in a contest of American poets offered in the Century of Progress lyric contest. It was published in the *Golden Book* and is reproduced here with permission of the publication. The poem "This House of Paradoxes" by Bert Henderson, of Montgomery, is reproduced by the courtesy of *Southern Literary Messenger*, which is featuring Mr. Henderson's poetry in its current issues. It won the Society Award (1940) in the annual contest sponsored by the Poetry Society of Alabama.)

### Village Transcendentalist

By Mary B. Ward

A thousand crosses stretch in line  
Back through the years;  
And there appears  
This interlude  
Of life from patterned solitude.

As many nations made this seed,  
So many nations war and bleed  
Within this slender frame of her,  
Where winged thoughts beat a barrier;  
And it is treason  
Here to reason.

She sits upon her front door stoop  
To watch the sky  
Each afternoon while from the street  
Dust clouds float by;  
But she has eyes for only this—  
The artifice  
Of sunsets that intensify  
A throbbing ache within her breast:  
She cannot rest.

She cannot wet her lips with limpid phrase,  
Or cool the beauty-thirst of knowing eyes;  
Yet, from her heart flows rivulets of praise,  
And torpid ecstasy stirs in surprise.



---

**This House of Paradoxes**

*By Bert Henderson*

This house of sinewed bone that stands against  
The ultimate corrosion of the years,  
Is proved a paradox, and recompensed  
By latent stratagems of joy and tears.

It has been victor in the swift assault,  
Yet known defeat upon a careless phrase;  
Erected temples without stain or fault,  
Before a pagan altar knelt in praise.

It has renounced the board that life prepared,  
Yet turned to banquet on a sodden crust;  
Has traveled roads where only gods have fared,  
And traced a futile pattern in the dust.

This inconsistent citadel has been  
The dwelling place of vast illusive hosts;  
Here sage has been the mate of harlequin,  
Here saint and heretic have pledged a toast.

This sentient house has witnessed love disproved,  
Yet kept her walls impervious to hate,  
Then by some esoteric power moved  
To harbor both in subterfuge of fate.

Some day the shutter will be mutely drawn,  
The waning candle lose the fragile flame;  
Then this chaotic vessel will have gone  
To seek the paradox from which it came.

## **BILLBOARD**

### **Public Library Service**

The Alabama Legislature in 1939 passed a Public Library Service law providing an appropriation of \$10,000 a year, an Executive Board to administer the law and a Director to execute its provisions. The Public Library Service operates in connection with county and area units locally financed and with WPA personnel and book contributions. The Public Library Service is a division of the Alabama Department of Archives and History and has its offices in the World War Memorial Building, Montgomery, Alabama. Miss Lois Rainer is Director of the service. Any county or group of counties wishing the installation of the service should write to Miss Rainer.

### **New Court Building**

The Scottish Rite Temple which was purchased by the State has been remodeled and after July 1st will be occupied by the State Supreme Court, the State Court of Appeals and the Attorney General's Department. Architectural changes have been made on the interior to make the building available for its new uses. Changes have also been made in the entrance, making it more significant of its new purposes.

### **New Curved Bridge**

The State Highway Department is now erecting on State highway No. 14 at Tallassee the only highway bridge of its kind in the world. The structure is being built on a  $2\frac{1}{2}$  degree curve with a 5 per cent grade, to fit the only available right-of-way across the Tallapoosa river at that point. Published photographs of the complete sub-structure showing the reinforced concrete piers extending across the river in a graceful curve instead of a perfectly straight alignment, have been observed with amazement, and the unique design has created widespread comment and interest throughout Alabama.

## GENEALOGICAL DEPARTMENT

### Queries

(Space will be given in this Department of the *Quarterly* for genealogical queries. Any one having information desired please communicate with the inquirer.)

Council or Councill family. Information on descendants of Hodges Councill of Isle of Wight, Va. Judson Councill, Clifton Station, Va.

Courington family. Information desired. Miss Murill Courington, Rt. 8, Parrish, Alabama.

Thomas Goodwin, who died in Talladega, Alabama, in 1843. Any information gratefully received. Mrs. J. B. Sanford, Talladega.

Major James Mahan and family who removed to Alabama about 1820. He died June 1820 and is buried in Bibb County. His sons were James, Edward, Archimides, and Jonathan. Mrs. Robert M. Brunet, 803 W. 12, Pine Bluff, Ark.

Rev. Jeremiah Gadi Gurley, born in 1827, in N. C. and his wife, Mary Anne Stokes, born in S. C. He served as a chaplain in Confederate Army either in N. C. or Alabama and after the War became a presiding elder in the Methodist Church at one time serving the Jasper District. His wife claimed to be a direct descendant of Pocahontas. Any information gratefully received. John M. Bradley, 4211 Overlook Road, Birmingham.

James M. Waits, Wade Waits and Redmond Waits. James was born in 1842 and removed to Corinth, Miss., from Blountsville, Alabama. Mrs. Albert Ewing, 111 Highland Summer Club, White Bluff, Tenn.

Alfred Johnson and wife, Dolly Fancher. Left Alabama around 1831. Dolly Fanchers had two brothers, Sam and Elsa. Alfred Johnson had a brother Snell, supposed to have been sheriff of Bibb and Tuscaloosa Counties for a number of years. Miss Lena Parish, Rosedale, Miss.

Isaac Frederick Crum, of Orangeburg County, S. C., removed to Greenville, Alabama, about 1800. Sons Isaac and Louis Crum, brother Harmon Crum, daughter Peggy who married a Stein, another daughter who married a Mattchett. Address George B. Hartness, West Columbia, S. C.

Jesse M. Summers and wife, Maria H., last name unknown. She was born in Huntsville, Alabama, Dec. 5, 1815 and died in Sulphur Springs, Tex., October 9, 1890. Understand they lived at Fail, Alabama. Address Mrs. Nina M. York, 1612 5th Ave., Scottsbluff, Neb.

**BOOK REVIEWS**

*Freedom of Thought in the Old South.* By Clement Eaton.  
(Duke University Press, 1940, pp. 343. \$3.00.)

Dr. Eaton maintains that "the Jeffersonian phase of Southern history affords a valuable yardstick to measure the later recession of tolerance below the Potomac." To the extent that the South deviated from the lofty ideals of the Jeffersonian group of liberals, her course was charted in the direction of reefs. It must be noted, however, that these "liberal ideas were largely those of a small group of cultivated and aristocratic leaders who were under the spell of eighteenth century Reason." It should also be taken into consideration that those who lived during this age of liberalism were unaccustomed to the abuse and insults which the abolitionists heaped upon the succeeding generation and that liberal principles began "to lose popular favor even before the death of Jefferson."

The economic fabric of the South was dyed black. Four billion dollars were invested in slaves. By all reasonable estimates a class of Southerners can claim to have been rich. "The large slaveholders were really cotton capitalists." The opinion of the civilized world ran counter to slavery and in opposition to the South. Southern thought therefore became more conservative and defiant. This attitude was goaded into desperation by the abolitionists.

Aside from the economics of slavery, the social system "nourished a quixotic pride in the ruling class." Sir Walter Scott's medieval romances were appreciated with an understanding which the author intended. The Southerner was firm in the belief that "woman was made of finer clay than man." She was thus circumscribed by convention and held to a narrow sphere.

An idea which may appear paradoxical is presented by the author when he says: "The rise of the common man was a potent factor in the decline of tolerance." But it is definitely shown that the vast majority of the Southern people in 1850 were "hard-working farmers whose reading was limited to the Bible and an occasional newspaper." The aris-

tocracy of Virginia and the Carolinas was not "sufficient" "to leaven the vast inchoate regions of the Cotton Kingdom." Freedom of thought is hereby presented as the "delicate fruit of a mature civilization."

Education was not neglected in the South. In 1850 New England had about one thousand academies, the Middle States nearly twenty-one hundred, while the Southern States had more than twenty-seven hundred. The Southern States were the first to establish state universities. According to the census of 1860, Virginia had twenty-three colleges with 3,302 students, while Massachusetts had eight institutions of higher learning with 1,733 students and New York had only seventeen colleges with an enrollment of 2,970. The enrollment at Harvard in 1856 was 361 students, while the University of Virginia had 558 students. This vigorous movement in the field of education was in large part designed for the benefit of the superior classes and was really a deterrent to the founding of an effective public school system.

The fear of servile insurrection was a dominant cause of the passing of many laws which limited freedom of thought and even activity. The Denmark Vesey plot in Charleston in 1822 and later the Nat Turner revolt in Virginia started a "wave of contagious fear" throughout the slave-holding areas. By 1835 a severe black code had been completed. Like many other severe codes, it was hard but often "tempered in practice." A continuing "fear of servile insurrection cannot be dismissed in assessing the causes for the atrophy of the great traditions of Jeffersonian liberalism."

The Calhoun influence is treated with historical precision by the author. Southerners, as a minority group, needed a political theory of defense. The great South Carolinian observed that the numerical majority can be an absolute despot. He argued that "genuine constitutional government must protect the minorities from a selfish and unscrupulous majority." His practical proposal was the state veto. Calhoun's logic was difficult to attack even by the most skilled. He maintained that slavery was a positive good—the best solution of the race problem—and that it freed the South

from the evils of conflict between capital and labor. The author holds that "Calhoun loved the Union and yet took every course to destroy it."

The South was single-minded in regard to its political, economic and social system. Southern youth were rarely found dallying with isms. The land was strikingly free from reformers. People of all classes were prepared to defend the stand already taken. "When one surveys this overwhelming propaganda by the most distinguished men of the South, when one takes into consideration that the Old Testament and Saint Paul sanctioned slavery, and when one realizes the formidable police problem of regulating semi-barbaric negroes and the great property loss arising from emancipation, the surprise comes, not at the uniformity of opinion in the South, but at the number of men who did think independently on the question."

Dr. Eaton has treated a large subject profoundly and with disinterested judgment. His only prejudice is in favor of truth. From the vast quarries of Southern material he has erected a monument to freedom of thought.

—Emmett Kilpatrick.

*The Cotton Kingdom in Alabama.* By Charles S. Davis. (Montgomery: Alabama Department of Archives and History, 1939. Pp. xi, 233. Bibliography, maps, appendices, and charts. \$2.50.)

The subject of this monograph is a description of the economic aspects of cotton production on Ante-Bellum plantations in Alabama. Chapters I and II deal with the geography, soil, climate and settlement of the State. In the third chapter the author plunges into a discussion of plantation management using much of the same material employed by U. B. Phillips in his *Life and Labor in the Old South*. Then follow two chapters on slave trading and care and legal status of slaves. Because of the increasing fear of insurrections, Alabama, like other Southern states, passed drastic laws restricting the activities of slaves.

The best chapter is the one dealing with the cotton factor. Until recently the marketing of cotton by Southern planters has been neglected by historians. The factorage system, having its origin in Colonial days when tobacco was the important export crop, reached its greatest development in cotton in the Ante-Bellum period. The Alabama planters conducted business with commission merchants in Mobile, New Orleans and Charleston. Through the factor plantation supplies were purchased. The author finds little evidence in Alabama to show that the planter was at the mercy of a single factor. It appears that each producer usually carried on business with several factors each year.

In conclusion the author considers the profits of the planters. The methods of agriculture on Alabama plantations were not unlike those in the South Atlantic states in the twenties and thirties—no rotation of crops and no diversification. The planters of the State found it cheaper to buy new land rather than to conserve the old. Some Alabama planters made large profits, but “for the majority the planting profession meant only a living.” (p. 180)

This book is a contribution to the literature on Ante-Bellum Alabama history. It is well documented and contains a voluminous bibliography. It is by no means a definitive work on the Cotton Kingdom, since it deals only slightly with the small farmer and nonslaveholders, who were also producers of cotton.

Alabama Polytechnic Institute.

—J. E. Kendrick.

*The South to Posterity.* By Douglas Southall Freeman. (Charles Scribner's Sons. 1939. pp. 235. \$2.50.)

“The first historians of the Confederacy,” says Dr. Freeman, “were those who wrote home of the events they had witnessed.” Under all sorts of conditions, with pencil and pen, by the educated and the illiterate, letters went home by the thousands. Surely many of these letters remain as valuable historical evidence to throw light on a war

which has captured the imagination of the world. "Some of them would help to explain the morale of the Confederate armies, a morale so notable that the United States War College annually studies it."

The next historians were those who "supplied the press its reports, and those who determined they would preserve letters or paste newspaper articles in scrapbooks." The first known historical works on the battles of the South relied on newspaper accounts as the source of material. Dr. Freeman finds some excellent reporting, but "there was no end of speculation, of eulogy and of stupid flattery."

The South early took up its pen and sought with an energy and a devotion to justify its ways and acts to posterity. "Pollard, sitting in a Richmond office through which drifted the sound of cannon, could write with an apparent detachment that would have done credit to a writer of another clime and a later age." The spirit of the South might well be expressed by the *Southern Literary Messenger*, which proclaimed early in the War: "A great work is to be done. A subject people are to be rescued from the domination of fanatics; a new literature and new centers of trade are to be established. Until this is accomplished, perish all minor matters." As the War wore on and the military and economic condition of the South sank lower and lower, Confederate "paper was grayer and poorer, month by month, the publications thinner, the print dimmer and the punctuation of the gun-fire louder and nearer."

The fall of the Confederacy found the South dismembered. There were eleven conquered states—"each one of which felt itself in a strange manner the guardian of a disembodied Confederacy and the defender of its history." Leaders in every state felt that the South had fought for its constitutional rights and that posterity should be the judge. The longest of all books on this subject and the ablest was Alexander H. Stephens' *Constitutional View of the Late War Between the States*. Dr. Freeman says: "This surely is one of the most unusual books ever written in the United States by a man of high intelligence." This is the only sentence in *The South to Posterity* which is ambiguous. Whether Dr. Freeman



means to praise or to damn the book is a question yet unanswered.

The chief works of sound historical value concerning the history of the Confederacy by Southerners, Northerners and foreigners are considered and weighed by Dr. Freeman. Controversy and apologia are analyzed. The War is looked at through women's eyes. But with all this much remains to be written, as for example, the Army of Tennessee, the vast realm of social psychology and the part played by Southern women.

Dr. Freeman has given the South and the world a work which shows refinement, discriminating judgment and taste, if we may be allowed to use Periclean standards is evaluating a book which closes with the words: *Character is Confirmed*.

—Emmett Kilpatrick.

# THE ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY



## ALABAMA

---

VOL. 2

NO. 2

---

SUMMER ISSUE  
1940

# **THE ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY**

MARIE BANKHEAD OWEN, Editor  
EMMETT KILPATRICK, Co-Editor



Published by the  
STATE DEPARTMENT  
OF  
ARCHIVES AND HISTORY

Price \$2.00 annually; single copies, 50c.

---

VOL. 2

NO. 2

---

**SUMMER ISSUE**

**1940**

WETUMPKA PRINTING CO.  
Printers and Publishers  
Wetumpka, Ala.  
1940

## CONTENTS

	Page
Dedication Hall of Flags—Marie Bankhead Owen.....	108
The Supreme Court of Alabama, Its Organization and sketches of its Chief Justices—No. 6— Chief Justice Gardner.....	124
Alexander Beaufort Meek, Pioneer Man of Letters— Margaret Gillis Figh.....	127
The Care and Custody of Alabama Historical Materials—David L. Darden.....	152
The Martin Marshall Book—Dr. Weymouth T. Jordan.....	158
The Genesis of the University of Alabama— Thomas M. Owen, Jr.....	169
Charles Teed Pollard, Industrialist—Mildred Beale.....	189
Confederate Pensioners.....	208
Pettus Bridge—Marie Bankhead Owen.....	217
Diary of Captain Edward Crenshaw of the Confederate Army.....	221
Later History of Madison County.....	239
Physicians of Alabama 1828.....	248
Poems—	
Entering Birmingham—Anne Southerne Tardy.....	252
Remembering An English Grandfather— Louise Crenshaw Ray.....	252
Belated Heritage—Martha Lyman Shillito.....	254
A Letter from Yancey to his Pastor.....	256
A Letter from Jefferson Davis to William L. Yancey.....	258
Genealogical Department.....	262
Book Reviews.....	264

## DEDICATION HALL OF FLAGS ALABAMA WORLD WAR MEMORIAL BUILDING JUNE 14, 1940

*By MARIE BANKHEAD OWEN, Director*

The first public ceremony held in the handsome new World War Memorial building was in honor of Flag Day, June 14, 1940. The presentation of the flags that have flown over Alabama during her four hundred years of history took place in the main lobby on the first floor; but after the ceremonies had concluded the donors of the flags carried them in procession up the stairs to the second floor where the beautiful marble lobby was dedicated as the Hall of Flags.



The Flag Day ceremonies were conducted by Honorable J. Miller Bonner, legal adviser to the governor, assisted in certain features of the program by Honorable R. Tyler Goodwyn, for many years a member of the Board of Trustees of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History. The invocation and benediction were pronounced by the Reverend F. N. McDonald, World War veteran and rector of the Church of the Ascension, Montgomery.

The first flags to be presented was a group of banners brought from Oklahoma by a delegation of Indians of the five tribes living in Alabama from time immemorial but who had migrated to the West more than a hundred years ago. These tribes are known as Nations and are the Creek, or Muskogee, the Cherokee, Chickasaw, Choctaw and during a later period the Seminoles. The Indian banners carried the seals of these several nations, emblematic of the history and characteristics of the respective Indian Nations. These seals have been designed by modern historians but are now used by the Nations in an official way. The pageant of the flags was led by a full blood Creek, Marcellus Williams, who wore his tribal ceremonial costume and was indeed an effective figure. The explanation of the historical significance of the Indian banners was made by Miss Muriel H. Wright, of Choctaw descent, and author of the state history of Oklahoma.



INDIAN BANNERS CARRYING SEALS OF THE SEVERAL NATIONS.

### **Miss Wright's Address**

"It is with pleasure that we, representing the Cherokee, Chickasaw, Creek, Seminole, and Choctaw Indian nations of Oklahoma, have come at your invitation to join you in dedicating Alabama's Hall of Flags on this National Flag Day of our great country, the United States of America.

"This Southeastern region, of which Alabama is a part, was occupied by a confederacy of many Indian tribes, employing the Choctaw language as the trade language and extending from the Atlantic coast to far beyond the Mississippi River. The name of one of these tribes was that of your State, Alabama. However, many of the tribes, members of this Indian confederacy, have long since passed away, leaving only their names in historical records.

"We who are here today from Oklahoma represent five large tribes whose lands formerly included portions of Alabama. These are the Choctaw, Creek, Seminole, Cherokee and Chickasaw, referred to in history since their settlement west of the Mississippi as the Five Civilized Tribes.

"Over a hundred years ago, our ancestors departed from the country now within the boundaries of Mississippi, Tennessee, Georgia and Alabama. They were grief stricken with thoughts of enforced removal from their old homelands forever. Traveling mostly on foot through the wilderness, encountering fierce winter storms in open camp, lack of food, dismal swamps, pestilence and death, the long road west was called the 'Trail of Tears' by the survivors.

"After arriving in the Indian Territory, still more deprivation and hardships were overcome by them. They established their tribal organizations as republics with written constitutions and laws, under the protection of the United States. Before many seasons had passed, the Indian people were beginning to flourish as nations, with churches, schools, farm and ranch homes, and a budding regional literature—all fine attributes of Christian civilization. Yet they strove to keep the good and true of their real Indian character.



"The history of these nations in the Indian Territory forms one of the remarkable chapters in the history of the United States. Though Oklahoma is counted one of the youngest commonwealths in the Union, this Indian history makes the State nearly a century and a quarter old in its social, political, and educational development, linked with the South in much of its culture and romance.

"With the South, too, the Indian nations in the West, having aligned themselves with the Confederate States suffered in the dark period of the War Between the States. The bright hopes of the Southern Indian people seemed again destroyed, the end of the war finding their homes and farms laid waste and a vast portion of their lands—the whole western half of the Indian Territory—demanded by the Federal Government. In 1866, these land cessions were made by the five Indian nations in new treaties with the United States. Soon afterward, the Government began moving Indian tribes from other parts of the country to the Territory. This region finally became the home of one-third the Indians of the United States.

"The Treaties of 1866 provided plans for the organization of one territorial government in the Indian Territory, delegates from all the tribes and nations living in this region to participate in the organization, though the plans never matured. Of all the Treaties of 1866, the Choctaw-Chickasaw was the only one that gave a name to the proposed territory. In this document, a clause stated: "The Superintendent of Indian Affairs shall be the Executive of the said Territory, with the title of "Governor of the Territory of Oklahoma'."

When the Choctaw-Chickasaw Treaty was being prepared, the name 'Oklahoma' was suggested for the new territory by Reverend Allen Wright, one of the Choctaw delegates to Washington in 1866. The name is from the Choctaw words **okla** meaning "people" and **homma** meaning "Red". Thus, "Territory of Oklahoma" would mean "Territory of Red People"—i.e., a translation of "Indian Territory" in Choctaw.

The name "Oklahoma", euphonious and easily pronounced, became widely known during the next quarter of a

century. It appeared in many bills introduced into Congress for the regular organization of this region as a Federal commonwealth. The name was publicized by newspapers in the States, reporting the efforts of the "boomers", white colonists under the leadership of David L. Payne who claimed the right to settle a large tract in Central Indian Territory, a tract called the "Oklahoma Country" by the "boomers".

Able Indian leaders in behalf of the Five Civilized Tribes were strong in their opposition to any others than Indians coming to live in the Indian Territory. These leaders demanded adjustment of Indian affairs that had remained unsettled for more than a half century at Washington. After a ten-year struggle, adjustment of some Indian claims having been made and others under consideration, the cause of the "boomers" finally won in Congress. The "Oklahoma Country" was officially opened to white settlers on April 22, 1889, with a spectacular race from the border for homesteads within the tract. A year later, the western half of the old Indian Territory was organized and officially declared the "Territory of Oklahoma"; the eastern half including the country of the Five Civilized Tribes was still called the "Indian Territory". In 1907, these "Twin Territories" were admitted into the Union as the State of Oklahoma.

During the Constitutional Convention, the year before statehood, the Great Seal of the State of Oklahoma was adopted. Its design, symbolical of the part the Indians have had in the formation and the development of the commonwealth, includes each of the five ancient seals of the Indian nations—Chickasaw, Cherokee, Creek, Seminole, and Choctaw.

Each nation at some time during its peaceful existence as a separate republic adopted a great seal for use on all its official documents. None of the nations regularly adopted an individual flag of its own, though there is a tradition that a company of Choctaw soldiers of a Confederate Indian Regiment carried its own flag (the design based on the Choctaw seal) for a period during the War Between the States.

Having in mind the Indians' part in this history briefly reviewed and having accepted the invitation of your Director, through the auspices of the Oklahoma Historical Society, to have a part in your Flag Day program, the members of our Indian committee have had banners specially designed and made for this occasion. These banners are in remembrance of the ancient Indian people who first ruled the country within the borders of Alabama. Symbolical of peace with these Indians, symbolical of the prairies assigned them as homelands in the West long ago is the white field of these banners.

That of the Choctaw Nation is surmounted with the Great Seal of this nation, described as "an unstrung bow, with three arrows and a pipe-hatchet blended together, engraven in the center", in a law of the Choctaw General Council, approved October 24, 1860. Diplomacy and great strength in defensive war for their country were characteristics of the Choctaws. The pipe in the Great Seal is a symbol of discussion of national affairs in council. If necessary for defense, the bow is strung and the three arrows made ready for each of the three districts into which the Choctaw Nation was divided by its constitutional law. These three districts in the new country west were named respectively for the noted chiefs Apuckshennubbe, Mosholatubbe and Pushmataha, all of whom signed the Choctaw Treaty of 1820. This date appears on the lower portion of the Choctaw banner and is that of the first cession of lands in the Indian Territory (now Oklahoma), made by the United States to any of the Indians living east of the Mississippi.

"We regret that the banner for the Creek or Muscogee Nation has not been provided in time for this program though representative Creeks from Oklahoma are present. The Great Seal of this Nation was officially adopted sometime after the period of the War Between the States. This seal presents a modern symbol of the industry of the ancient Creeks as agriculturists. The device shows a sheaf of wheat and a plow surrounded by the words 'Great Seal of the Muscogee Nation, I. T.'

The Cherokee banner bears the Great Seal of this nation and the date of the first cession of lands in the Indian Terri-

tory to the Cherokees,—1928. This seal was adopted by law of the Cherokee National Council, in December, 1869. In the center of the Cherokee seal appears a symbol of the mystic number seven, a seven-pointed star representing the seven ancient clans of the nation, surrounded by a wreath of oak leaves symbolical of a strong, virile people. In the margin around this device are the words, "Seal of the Cherokee Nation". This is followed by the words "Cherokee Nation" in the letters of the Sequoyah alphabet, pronounced "Tsa-la-gi-hi A-ye-li", and by the date of the adoption of the Cherokee Constitution in the Indian Territory, Sept. 6, 1839.

The banner of the Seminole Nation shows its seal,—a warrior rowing a boat across a lake to a factory (or trading post),—which was adopted in a late period of Seminole history. The executive of the Seminole Nation was a hereditary chief, or his close kinsman, selected to rule for life or successively for a long period of years. Significant of this ancient law, the outer border of the Seminole seal is inscribed with the words "Executive Department of the Seminole Nation."

The banner of the Chickasaw Nation is surmounted with its Great Seal adopted by the Chickasaw legislature in August, 1860. This seal shows a Chickasaw warrior carrying two arrows and a long bow, with a shield swinging on his left shoulder, as he stands looking about him on the heights. The Chickasaw seal in its symbolism blends tradition and history of a proud nation of warriors. The wealthiest of all the Southeastern Indian nations, the Chickasaws purchased their homelands in the Indian Territory in 1837.

In behalf of the Indian nations and their delegations here to-day from Oklahoma, I am happy to present these banners to the State of Alabama.

### **Spanish Flag**

Mrs. W. T. Knight, Regent of the Peter Forney Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, presented on behalf of her Chapter, the flag of Spain, stating:

"The first white men to explore this beautiful land we now call Alabama were Spaniards. In 1528 a small party under Narvaez visited here. The stay of these Spaniards was

brief and fraught with misfortune. In 1540 Hernando DeSoto, leading a party of several hundred men explored the area in quest of gold and after many months of bitter conflict with the native inhabitants the surviving members of the invading party passed out through the west. The next Spanish party to visit Alabama was led by Tristain DeLuna. The DeLuna party was the first to come to our shores with the intent of establishing a permanent colony. Visited by illness, storms and other catastrophes, this party also made its retreat. Two hundred years later the flag of Spain again floated over Alabama soil. Bernardo Galvez, appointed Spanish governor of the Province of Louisiana in 1777, on March 14, 1780 captured Fort Charlotte on Mobile Bay and forced the city of Mobile to surrender. For eight years the flag of Spain floated over us. Our relations with Spain after its withdrawal until the Spanish-American War in 1898-99 were friendly. From the conclusion of that war until the present time we have been at peace with a proud country over which for so many centuries floated the banner of the lions and castles of Spain."

### **French Flag**

Mrs. P. P. B. Brooks, regent, Francis Marion Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, presented on behalf of her chapter, the flag of France, with the following remarks:

"During the reign of Louis XIV, of France, a number of explorations were made in the American wilds by subjects of that king. Seeking to increase the landed possessions of their monarch Frenchmen explored the Southwest. The object of these explorers was colonization and not the conquest of the Indians. In 1698 a French party sailed from Brest under command of Pierre LeMoyne, Sieur de Iberville, a French Canadian who had distinguished himself as a naval officer in recent wars with Great Britain. Early in the new year following, the party reached the bar of Mobile point and began to explore with great eagerness the new country to which they had come to establish homes. Their attitude towards the natives was one of friendliness. For sixty-four years the lilies of France floated over not only the Mobile country but French

forts that were established along the rivers of our state. Churches and homes were built and the culture and civilization whose impress still remains were firmly established.

"In 1818, more than a century later, following the defeat of Napoleon Bonaparte; a number of his most distinguished generals and followers set up a colony on the banks of the Tombigbee River and called the town Demopolis. In 1825 General LaFayette visited Alabama as the guest of the nation and was entertained in Montgomery, Cahaba, then the capital, in the town of old Claiborne and in Mobile. From that date until 1917 when Alabama soldiers went to France as a part of the American Expeditionary Forces, until the present day, our relations with France have been not only friendly but I may say affectionate.

"I feel honored as regent of the Francis Marion Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution in presenting the flag of that great country to be preserved for all time in the Hall of Flags in this building."

### **Flag of Great Britain**

The flag of Great Britain was presented by Mrs. John C. Curry, representing the Society of Colonial Dames of Alabama, stating:

"In 1763 by the Treaty of Paris, Mobile fell to Great Britain, passing from French sovereignty. That port then became the base of supplies for the eastern half of the rich and fertile Mississippi Valley. Already there were British trading posts in the Indian country and representatives of that government were active in the Carolinas, Georgia and Alabama. It was only when the French retired across the Mississippi River into Missouri that the English occupied that area that is now Alabama. With characteristic British enterprise the whole Southwest territory was opened to white settlement. British domination, however, ceased when the Spaniards captured Fort Charlotte near Mobile, in 1780. In this wise England lost possession of the Gulf coast. The people of Alabama are in the main of British origin and we look upon

that country as our original mother land. All that concerns the people of the British Isles is of direct interest to us of America and especially the South. The Colonial Dames of Alabama are gratified that they have the privilege of presenting the flag of Great Britain to the State, to be placed in the Hall of Flags in this beautiful building dedicated to historical uses."

### **United States Flag**

The flag of the United States was presented by Mrs. Henry I. Flinn, President, on behalf of the American Legion Auxiliary of Montgomery:



"From the time Alabama became a Territory in 1817 until the State seceded from the Union in 1861 and since the end of the War Between the States, the stars and stripes have floated over our capitol dome. This flag stands for the just use of undisputed national power, and is the emblem of justice and of liberty. As Woodrow Wilson said on Flag Day, 1914, 'It has never been debased by selfishness and has vindicated its right to be honored by all nations of the world and feared by none who do righteousness.'

"This flag represents 'the cause of human progress, the enfranchisement of human thought, the freedom of human conscience and guarantees equal rights to all peoples everywhere.'

'Beneath the stars and stripes  
Is found no tyrant's rod,  
Unfettered is our faith,  
Our sacred trust in God.'

### Secession Flag

The secession flag of Alabama, sometimes called the flag of the Republic of Alabama, was presented by Mrs. Jesse Roberts, President of the Alabama Division, United Daughters of the Confederacy, on behalf of the Division. This flag represents different scenes on each side and was, as all flags presented on that day, especially made for the occasion, in beautiful federal banner silk by the outstanding national flag makers. In presenting the flag Mrs. Roberts said:

"As President of the Alabama Division, representing every chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy in the state, I have the honor of presenting to you for the Hall of Flags, the flag of the Republic of Alabama. The original of this flag, of which I give you in the silken banner a true copy, was presented by a group of patriotic Montgomery women to the Secession Convention on the day the State withdrew from the Union, January 11, 1861. In recent months the original of this flag which had been taken as a supposed war trophy to the State of Iowa was returned to us with stately ceremonies.



"That original flag of Secession lies enshrined among the Confederate flags in this building. It portrayed the Goddess of Liberty bearing in her hand the flag of the Republic of Alabama with its one star. The words 'Independent Now and Forever' had a different significance at the time the flag was presented to the Secession Convention in the hall of Representatives in our historical old Capitol. We are still independent of all influences adverse to our love of liberty but there is nowhere in this great nation a people more loyal to our re-united country. The movement symbolized by this flag was prompted by the same spirit that prompted the founders of our nation who fought for local self government and the right of self determination by its people."

### **Stars and Bars**

The first flag of the Confederate government, the Stars and Bars, was presented by Mrs. George Savage, president of the Sophie Bibb Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, with the following remarks:

"As President of the Sophie Bibb Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, I have the honor to present to the State, on behalf of the Chapter, the Stars and Bars, the official adopted flag of the newly organized Confederate Government. On February 4, 1861, the Provisional Congress of the Confederacy assembled in the Capitol in Montgomery and organized with six states a new government. On March 4, amidst the booming of cannon a new flag was unfurled. The Stars and Bars of the Confederacy was hoisted to the breeze from the flag staff on the dome of the Capitol. The flag was raised by Miss Letitia Tyler, granddaughter of former President Tyler. One by one the other states were added to the new Confederacy, until like the old Union there were thirteen states in all. From Charleston, where the first shot of the War Between the States was fired, to Appomattox Court House, where General Lee surrendered his brave army; on the battlefields of Seven Pines, at Manassas, at Shiloh, on a thousand blood soaked fields of honor, wherever the Stars and Bars was hoisted by the color bearer, that flag was the rallying point of valor and of daring.

'Furl that banner! True 'tis gory,  
Yet 'tis wreathed with glory,  
and 'twill live in song and story,  
    Though its folds are in the dust;  
For its fame on brightest pages,  
Penned by poets and sages,  
Shall go sounding down the ages—  
    Furl its folds though now we must.' "

### **Confederate Battleflag**

The battleflag of the Confederacy was presented by Mrs. H. H. Keynton, President of the Dixie Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy. Mrs. Keynton said:

"The Confederate soldiers fought bravely under the Stars and Bars but it was a few months after its adoption that the Battleflag of the Confederacy was born upon the field of glory. There was no mistaking this flag for the 'Star Spangled Banner' of the opposing army, nor for a flag of truce. Square in form for greater convenience in carrying in battle or on the march, showing as its principal feature a St. Andrew's cross in blue, glowing with stars that represented each state of the Confederacy and with its red triangles distinctively its own, this flag became as dear to the hearts of the men in gray as was the first symbol of their Confederacy, the Stars and Bars. It was this flag that flew over the ships in which Raphael Semmes harried the enemy's commerce and carried the name of Alabama to the seven seas. It was the Battleflag of the Confederacy that after the end of hostilities was used by the veterans and their daughters on their organization badges. It is the Battleflag that enfolds them in their last sleep and the Battleflag that is carved upon their tombs. It is the Battleflag of the Confederacy that I give to you today in the name of the Dixie Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, to have its place among the historic banners that commemorate the great nations that have had dominion over our beloved State.

'Once ten thousand hailed it gladly,  
And ten thousand wildly, madly,  
    Swore it should forever wave.

\* \* \* \* \*

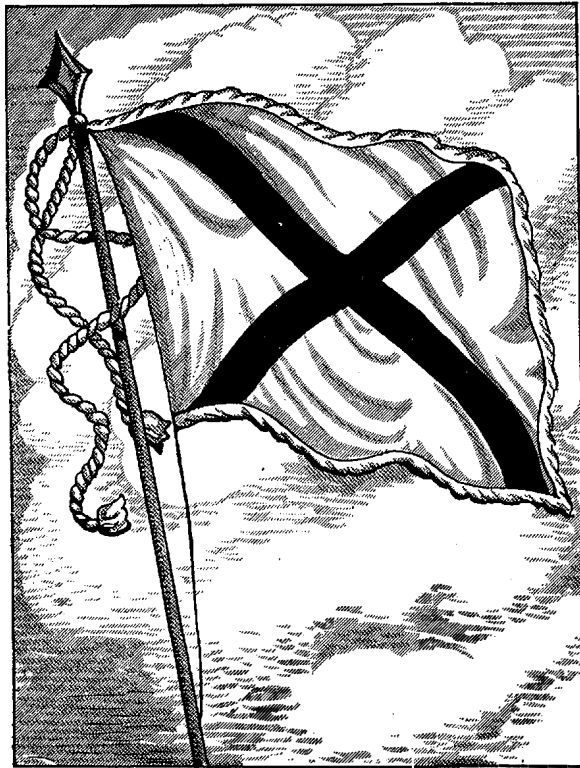
'Broken is its staff and shattered  
And the valiant hosts are scattered  
Over whom it floated high.

\* \* \* \* \*

'But though conquered, we adore it,  
Love the cold dead hands that bore it  
Weep for those who fell before it.

\* \* \* \* \*

'For its fame on brightest pages,  
Penned by poets and sages,  
Shall go sounding down the ages.' "



ALABAMA STATE FLAG.

**State Flag**

The official State flag of Alabama was presented by Mrs. Albert J. Pickett, President of the Cradle of the Confederacy Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy. Mrs. Pickett said:

“On behalf of the Cradle of the Confederacy Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, I present to you the flag of the State of Alabama. When the lawmakers of the State of Alabama adopted a State Flag in 1895, out of their veneration for the heroes of the Confederacy and for the glorious history made by our soldiers under the Confederate Battleflag, the form of that flag was adopted as our official state emblem. That legislative body would have adopted the

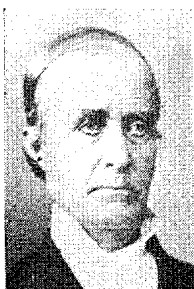
Battleflag in full as our State banner had not one of our sister states already done so. The St. Andrew's Cross in red upon a field of white, the State flag of Alabama, flies today over the dome of our state capitol because our lawmakers are again sitting there, but on other days this flag of ours floats from a tall steel staff beside our capitol building. From all the State's halls of learning, whether the little one-room school in the hills or over the great universities and colleges of this State, this flag floats as an emblem of the State's sovereignty. The Cradle of the Confederacy Chapter is proud that it has the honor of adding the State Flag to the collection of flags given here today for our beautiful marble Hall of Flags.

'Little, little can I give thee,  
Alabama, mother mine;  
But that little—hand, brain, spirit,  
All I have and am are thine,  
Take, O take the gift and giver,  
Take and serve thyself with me,  
Alabama, Alabama,  
I will aye be true to thee!' ”

## CHIEF JUSTICE EDWARD SPANN DARGAN

By LUCIEN D. GARDNER

(Editor's Note: The late Chief Justice John C. Anderson in previous issues of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly* wrote articles on several Chief Justices of the Alabama Supreme Court including C. C. Clay, Abner S. Lipscomb, Henry Hitchcock and Henry Watkins Collier. The article on Chief Justice Reuben Saffold which appeared in a previous issue was written by Mildred Reynolds Saffold. Chief Justice Lucien D. Gardner has kindly accepted our invitation to continue this series of articles on the Chief Justices of the Supreme Court.)



Edward Spann Dargan was born in Montgomery County, North Carolina, on April 15, 1808. Little is known of his early life but it must be presumed that his father's teachings formed the foundation of his education. His father, a Baptist minister, as exemplified in Judge Dargan's life, must have devoted considerable time teaching the "basic law" to his son Edward.

Due to the death of his father Edward was forced to support himself at an early age. This he accomplished by farming. At the age of twenty-three Edward Dargan was given the opportunity of reading law in the office of Colonel Joseph Pickett in Wadesboro, North Carolina. Viewing his brilliant legal career it is easy to assume that much "mid-night oil" was burned by young Edward during this period.

Our records are not clear as to why he came to Alabama but in 1829 Alabama was a young state and perhaps young Dargan believed the opportunities for the fulfillment of his desires to be greater in Alabama than in his native state.

After teaching school for a short time in Autauga County he moved to Montgomery and began the practice of his chosen profession. It required little time for Dargan to establish his reputation as a successful advocate at the bar. Here he married Miss Roxana Brock of Montgomery.

It was in 1840 that Dargan made his first venture into politics as a candidate for the State Legislature from Montgomery County. He was defeated but shortly afterwards was

elected by the Legislature as Circuit Judge of Mobile County. He immediately moved to Mobile and assumed the duties of this office. Two years later he resigned and again chose to follow his profession, this time in Mobile.

The mutual admiration and trust between Dargan and the people was twice demonstrated in 1844. In that year he was elected mayor of the City of Mobile and state senator from that county. He resigned as Senator the following year and as the Democratic candidate for Congress defeated the Whig candidate, Mr. William D. Dunn. He served only one term as congressman and refused a renomination.

In December of 1847 he was elected by the legislature to the supreme court to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Judge Goldthwaite and upon the resignation of Chief Justice Collier in July, 1849, Dargan assumed the duties of that high office. Thus a man who had given much of his time to public service was rewarded by receiving the appointment to the highest judicial office in our state.

His opinions while on the Court reflect the simplicity of his philosophy. He shunned the technicalities of the law and was ever anxious to decide all cases according to their merits. It is apparent to all who have studied his opinions that they are based on logic and common reasoning. His opinions are evidence of his brilliant mind, his sincerity of purpose and his belief in justice and fair play.

While Chief Justice in 1851 the legislature increased the number of the supreme court justices from three to five and he was the first Chief Justice to preside over the five member court. In December, 1852 he resigned as Chief Justice and retired from public life but a few years later he again felt the "call to duty" and became a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1861 as a delegate from Mobile County. True to his ideals and beliefs he voted for the ordinance of secession. He was elected as representative from Mobile County to the first Confederate Congress. He served in this capacity for one term and declined re-election.

Chief Justice Dargan died on November 22, 1879. Thus was closed the career of a plain and unassuming man, a man who was a faithful trustee of the many trusts placed in him by the people of Alabama.

Judge Dargan had one son, Moro, born March 24th, 1845. Moro became a broker and made his principal place of business in San Francisco, California. He was major and aid on the staff of General Clayton, C.S.A. He died at Spokane, Washington, on May 6, 1883.



## ALEXANDER BEAUFORT MEEK, PIONEER MAN OF LETTERS

By

MARGARET GILLIS FIGH

MARGARET GILLIS FIGH (Mrs. John P. Figh), of Montgomery, was born in Brewton, Ala., where her father was Superintendent of public schools. She graduated at Judson College with the degree of A.B., and with A.M., both at the University of Alabama and at Columbia University, New York. She also studied at Peabody and at Cornell University. She is associate professor of English at Huntingdon College, a talented book reviewer and writer. She is active in literary and civic organizations in Montgomery and has for many years been a member of the Alabama Writers Conclave.



Alexander Beaufort Meek made his mark as a poet, historian, orator and statesman, but he is most representative in the work he did as intellectual leader of his section. In his own time the editor of the *Mobile Register* said, "It would be difficult to say whether he makes a better display as an orator, an editor, a social companion, a historian or a poet," and it is noteworthy that Meek used his versatility of talents to one end. He centered his forces in inspiring his compatriots with a pride in their native land and a desire to develop to the fullest all the boundless possibilities latent within it. In a peculiarly vivid sense was endowed with the ability to see these potentialities and particularly was this true of the resources of his own state, Alabama. Always there seemed to be present with him a sense of the crying need for their development.

While Meek is remembered today largely by four or five lyric poems and in many instances is not given the rank to which he is entitled by the merits of these works alone, he deserves recognition in a far broader sense. This poetry is only one medium through which his influence was wielded. He was an uneven writer and his works had comparatively little vogue outside the South; yet he possessed real literary talent. By virtue of his example and of his constant reiteration of the value of things cultural in a time when not much emphasis was laid upon such things he did more for his state

in a literary way than did any other man in her early history. The modern trend of his thought, always expressed with vigor and charm, influenced his contemporaries and left a decided impress upon his successors. And so it is that Meek shall be treated here, as a literary man, not simply as a charming and refreshing poet, orator or historian, but as one who laid the foundations for future times to build on.

Meek was a native of South Carolina, born of a well known family in Columbia, July 17, 1814. His father, Reverend Samuel M. Meek, and his mother, Anna McDowell, were of Irish descent. The older Meek was not only a minister but a physician as well, an educated man in easy circumstances, who was able to give his sons the best schooling available in his day. The mother was of the sturdy pioneer type, religious and exerting a strong moral influence over her sons. She was especially proud of her first born, the small Alexander, who at a very tender age memorized the entire old Testament and recited it at Sunday school. Two other of her sons attained eminence, Colonel Samuel M. Meek, as one of the first lawyers of Mississippi, and B. F. Meek, who for thirty years occupied the chair of English literature at the University of Alabama and who was a literary critic of no mean ability. However, Alexander Meek was the most distinguished of the brothers. From early boyhood he took every opportunity for reading, and when he entered the University of Alabama upon its opening in 1831 he stood with the first of his class. Here he gave promise of the literary ability which was to develop later. He became noted for the verses he wrote in autograph albums and always he favored his youthful loves with poetic effusions—sentimental but on the whole superior to those turned out by most callow youths in like circumstances. Probably he had a sense of his impending reputation as a man of letters for he kept many of these sonnets and odes carefully copied along with his diary.

He entered into every phase of University life. In fact so pleasant was the social atmosphere in Tuscaloosa that the student found it necessary to call a halt upon participating in many functions. He made stern regulations for guarding himself against the society which sought him and to which his

natural inclinations tended. It may be that he was influenced by the similar list of rules compiled by Benjamin Franklin in his youth. At any rate there is a striking resemblance in the contents of the two sets of rules. However, most of Meek's regulations are directed against a weakness which was entirely foreign to Franklin's nature. Like many of his fellows he was congenitally lazy, so along with admonitions to pay cash for everything, "to be as methodical at all times as circumstances will allow," "to retire at nine and rise at five," came "Oppose indolence," "Pay most attention to those studies to which I am most averse," "Regard as foolish the opinions of some that men of great minds are not hard students for one had as well command, as Moses, water to flow from the rock spontaneous as to expect to accumulate legal knowledge by sitting upon his nether part with feet stuck up against the mantelpiece puffing forth the smoke of the Indian weed."

It must be said in passing that while Meek did put up a good fight against this evil genius of laziness both in college and in after life he did not win an unqualified victory. Doubtless he would have been a literary man of greater note had he applied himself more diligently. The native ability was there but in much of his work are to be found lapses in vigor, irregularities of rhythm, heavy passages, which careful revision should have obliterated and which incidentally indicate the dividing line between talent and genius. He loved too well "to dawdle about and inhale the pure atmosphere." In his diary he lamented "the villainous habit I have gotten into of sleeping late." In later life he frequently gave admonitions like "Rely mainly upon industry if you desire to attain the talent of a Burke", but unfortunately he did not always practise what he preached. One of his contemporaries rightly said of him, "Distinguished as Judge Meek was, by the mere force of native merit, there would be no setting of limits to the grandeur of his fame had he possessed the powers of application given so often to inferior men." It is in accord with his nature that he should have invented the widely credited fiction, adopted by the state on its seal that Alabama in Indian language meant "Here we rest." Certainly he was not averse to adopting this motto for his own. He liked whiling away pleasant hours chatting about art and literature

with boon companions, dancing until dawn with the fair maids of Tuscaloosa or even wasting some of his golden moments in games of chip. He took delight in his own wit, carefully recording his bon mots in his diary along with the lyrics written to various young ladies in whom he was interested at different times. These literary trifles are interesting mainly as evidences of the courtliness of his age and the social customs then in vogue. He would compliment each feature of the fair charmer with a mixture of humor, gallantry and, it must be admitted, sentimentality. At the age of twenty he tried his hand at the sonnet. "To Fanny" and "To....." are full of apt expressions but they are rather too self conscious. They show a classical correctness indicating that the young versifier was imbibing much of Pope and Dryden at that time.

He received his A. B. degree from the University of Alabama in 1833 and his Master's degree in 1836. Law was his chosen profession, but when he graduated there were several avenues which appealed to him, so it was difficult for him to settle down in an office and build up a practise. He could not resist the lure of adventure held out in the warfare then waging against the Seminole Indians, so he volunteered and saw active service for a short time. Here he got his inspiration for his most pretentious work, the metrical romance, "Red Eagle," and he also obtained some first hand material for the Alabama history.

While still in service he was appointed attorney general of Alabama by Governor Clay to fill a vacancy caused by the death of the former incumbent of this office. Meek held the position until the following winter.

So far as he had done no more significant literary work than the afore mentioned pleasant little society verses written to youthful loves or for special occasions. Indeed there had been on time for sustained effort for he had been living a life of action among his fellows. His easy and urbane manner had drawn him into the social world, where he had developed a reputation as a conversationalist and as one who could dash off an excellent oration or a timely article without effort. He had become editor of *Flag of the Union*, a paper published

in Tuscaloosa in 1835 and later of the *The Southron*, a literary magazine which was continued until 1842. In this periodical were published some very good criticisms of the books of that day. His duties as probate judge of Tuscaloosa County prevented a continuance of the editorship of this magazine and his interests tended toward the political rather than the literary world. His facile pen as well as his eloquent speech did much toward awakening the minds of his compatriots to the necessity for progress. Always he was writing and speaking of the educational needs of Alabama, thus paving the way for constructive work in that field later.

There was no purely literary output at this period, but it was not barren, for he was enjoying the inspiration of a literary friendship with William Gilmore Simms. Judge Meek and Simms differed politically at times, but this caused no diminution of Meek's admiration for the older writer, and when he published what he considered his best work, *Red Eagle*, it was dedicated to Simms.

Meek was also trying to show how closely allied were literature and politics. He sounded his dominant note when he said, "Politics itself can never be an end, never more than a barbarous scramble for office unless it is purified and rounded into form by the spirit of literature" and "Not only do we invoke a moral dynasty but an intellectual one. God is all intellect as well as all love. Literature in all its purity no less than religion is a sign of his beneficence and one of his provisions for the regeneration of man."

So is shown his lofty conception of the power of letters.

In 1844 he took the electoral vote of Alabama for Polk and Dallas to Washington, and in 1845 he moved there to assume the position of Assistant Secretary of the Treasury and legal adviser to Walker, the Secretary of the Treasury. His best literary works during this period were an oration, *Intellectual Development in the United States*, and a group of poems, *The Croakers in Washington*, published first in 1845. From the title may be seen the sources of some of his inspiration, Drake and Halleck, who were the first "Croakers"

on record in the United States. Like their work Meek's poetry is somewhat stilted. It is too full of classical allusion which seems far fetched. One selection however, *The Capitol by Moonlight*, written in a vein of whimsey is very clever.

He left Washington to become Federal attorney for the southern portion of Alabama and took up his residence in Mobile. While there the *Mobile Register* offered him the position of associate editor, which he accepted.

Meek put politics second in importance to literature theoretically, but actually he could not resist the lure of having some part in making his state's laws. He had busied himself with revising the Alabama code and a short while after finishing this task he was representing Mobile County in the state legislature. In 1853 he did his most important work in that body when he introduced the first bill establishing a public school system in Alabama. No measure ever passed in the state by the legislature was more far reaching in its effects. Meek drew up a forceful array of facts regarding the great necessity for such a measure, and he had little difficulty in getting his bill through.

It was necessary now for him to go back and forth from Mobile to Montgomery, then to Tuscaloosa often; and most of this travel was by steamboat on the Alabama River. His diary records trips on which the time was passed, now chatting with the pilot, now aiding in the care of a boat load of yellow fever patients and most frequently enjoying the passing panorama of his native shores. The streams seemed to take for themselves human personalities, as for example he spoke of the Tombigbee River as "the stoic of the woods, the man without a tear," and he caught the woodland spirit when he wrote of

"The high old forests where the vines  
With flashing leaves and flowers  
In gay festoons and playful twines  
From fair perennial bowers."

Doubtless Meek's river travel furnished much material for his descriptive poetry.

Up to the time of his entrance into the legislature he had carried on flirtations with boarding school misses at Athens, Georgia, and had indeed come perilously near getting one damsel expelled from school because of a walk taken with him. He recorded the event in his diary, saying that he had realized that he was doing wrong in taking a stroll with an unchaperoned maiden from school but that it was a rule of his never to refuse to do anything a pretty lady asked him regardless of consequences. He had fallen desperately in love for a brief space during his stay in Washington with a beautiful unknown girl whom he saw on several public occasions and whom he eulogized in a poem of a hundred lines or more, but he never risked shattering his ideal by any closer acquaintance than admiration from afar, though in reality it would have been little trouble for him to have met the lovely stranger. However, the romantic in him feared the test of reality, and he cherished her as an unspoiled illusion. More real was his one serious love affair during the period immediately after his graduation from the University of Alabama with a Tuscaloosa maid whom he had styled "the little General" but this had terminated rather abruptly when the maiden's parents on account of her youth forbade their marriage; hence at twenty six he was lamenting his bachelorhood when so many of his former school mates were bringing up sturdy families. However, he must have found his single state pleasant for he lingered therein until 1856, when in his forty-second year he married Mrs. Emma Donaldson Slatter of Mobile. At this time he voiced his emotions in *Requited Love*. This happy marriage lasted for a few years, then Meek's diary begins to record trips taken as hastily as possible back from Montgomery to Mobile on account of his wife's health. At last there is a note about her death and with it a short poem written several months afterward. In about two years he married again, a Mrs. Cannon of Columbus, Mississippi. There is no definite record of just when this marriage took place but from his allusions to his life with his second wife, it was a very happy one.

The War Between the States aroused conflicting emotions within him. He loved the Union intensely, but dearer to him was his natural affection for the South, whose cause he did not hesitate to espouse. It seems that there should have been inspiration for further poems in the conflict, but the poet who could be inspired by the noble charge at Balaklava found reality too close upon him in this war of his own land. He contented himself with paying tribute to the sacrifice of Southern heroes in a very few lyrics. Most of his literary output of this time was destroyed when the University of Alabama burned, as his brother, B. F. Meek, professor of literature there, had been given charge of all unpublished manuscripts.

Though Meek was loyal to American institutions and letters, this does not mean that he did not appreciate good literature of other nations. He had an unusually large number of literary enthusiasms. His earliest work was colored by Byron's influence. Indeed he was an ardent admirer of this revolutionary poet and his liberty loving sentiments. Scott's border poetry and Moore's *Lallah Rookh* also played their parts in influencing his work. *Red Eagle* in form and spirit is somewhat like Moore's oriental romance. He liked Elizabeth Browning, and he wrote in 1845 a very pretty tribute to her, *To Elizabeth Barrett Barrett*, which shows his admiration of the invincible spirit that had so many difficulties in inhabiting the frail shell given it. It is an excellent appreciation of the triumph of spirit over matter. He enjoyed too, the English essayists, and his diary makes mention more than once of the pleasure he derived from Southey's *Life of Nelson*.

As a critic Meek was popular because he voiced the consensus of opinions in his age. However his critical work does not reveal discrimination enough to raise him above the mediocre. Most of it is fair but given too much to generalization. He was a great admirer of Eugene Sue's *Wandering Jew*, ranking it first among current novels, but he waxed quite vehement against two other novels of horror popular then, *The Quaker City* and *The Monks of Monk Hall* — by George Lippard. In a review published in a Philadelphia journal he berated these unfortunate romances severely, stat-



ing that he considered their influence pernicious and warning the ladies of his day against their debasing moral atmosphere.

He loved the drama and would make a day's journey to see a good play. His diary written about 1861 records a trip to Montgomery on the steamer *Coquette*, to see the Thesbian Family act. Again he mentioned a troupe of players "so poor that they should have been run out of town." He was distressed at seeing these "miserable strollers convert tragedy into farce and farce into tragedy." His ideals for the American stage were so high that it hurt him to see the second rate used as a standard.

Meek's first works of any merit were his orations. Through them he voiced the spirit of progress which was inherent within him.

The earliest that is noteworthy is "An address to the Alumni of the University of Alabama on its first anniversary, December 17, 1836." Here he urged upon his hearers a sense of responsibility for spreading culture and the importance of education in building a great commonwealth. He said, "Send the schoolmaster into every hamlet and village. Then Alabama will become great and prosperous." His work in the legislature for the establishment of schools showed that these were not merely idle words, but that he was willing to spend his energies in furthering the cause. His main thesis in this address, as in nearly all others, was pride of land and the desire to develop the boundless resources around him. It is found again in the speech entitled "Intellectual Development in the United States." He said here that the lack of this development was due to a lack of patriotism by which he meant "that better spirit which causes men to cherish every literary plant that springs up at home rather than those of foreign birth." He held that the American mind was too political and that it did not stress the arts sufficiently.

The title of another address, "The Romance of Reality," was singularly expressive of the man himself, because it was a happy faculty of his that he could project romance into the everyday commonplaces of life. His eloquence was the

result of a clarity of vision which enabled him to people the forests of Alabama with an unending procession of red men, cavaliers, gold seekers and traders; to see the underlying meaning of this cavalcade which resulted in the creation of a commonwealth. In a stirring oration before the Alabama Historical Society he made his hearers glimpse this romance of the past. He summarized the glorious deeds of Alabama heroes, showing how the Spanish, French and English civilizations had each in turn left its stamp upon the state, how out of this skein of successive cultures Alabama had evolved, and how much her citizens had a right to be proud of their heroic forebears. He said: "Alabama history, extended and remarkable, diversified and romantic is as abounding in strange particulars and incidents, as full of most wonderful shades and contrasts of human life in savage and civilized conditions, and as marked by bloody struggles of contending forces as any other part of our country; over this wild field, so picturesque and attractive, hangs a misty veil, a morning fog around its hills and valleys which the first dawn of the sun of historical research has not entirely lifted from its repose." Meek took as his task an endeavor to lift this veil of obscurity from much of the past. In this speech he sketched the struggles of the Spanish knights, the glorious march of DeSoto, the kingly battle waged by the brave Tuscaloosa, the growth of Mobile under the good Bienville and under Major Robert Farmer, the first British governor, the dread pestilence of yellow fever which devastated the territory and for a time stunted the growth of what later came to be Alabama. This address contains the germ of the idea which later blossomed into his Alabama history. It is his best oration and is marked by great vividness of description in the various pictures presented and by its musical prose.

His two most important prose works are *History of Alabama*, which was never completed, and *Romantic Passages in South Western History*. They are full of adventurous and marvelous episodes from the pioneer life of this section. Both of these works did much to stimulate interest in this historical field. For his subject matter, Meek possessed not only documentary evidence, he could go straight to the place of the incident in question. He had actually lived a part of

the history he wrote. He had fought the Indians under Jackson and could give to his romantic incidents authentic details which bespoke reality. He told of the noble traits of the Indians rather than of their barbarism and emphasized the independence and self reliance of the pioneer. These early settlers were placed in sympathetic settings. Woodland, swamp and slow flowing river give a sense of atmosphere to every episode. Alabama has suffered a loss in that this first satisfactory history was cut short before its end by Meek's death. It is descriptive rather than analytical, and sometime too elaborate attempts at style are not sustained, but in the main he did what he set out to do—portrayed a spacious panorama in a style for the most part clever and winning.

As a whole *Romantic Passages in South Western History* is not a strong work, but it contains purple patches which redeem the heaviness of their connecting links. It shows a mixture of reading and observation with the odds all on the side of observation. The book's most outstanding characteristic lies in Meek's ability to vivify the Indian heroes of bygone days. His conception of the noble Weatherford is epic in its sombre eloquence. He catches all the simplicity and dignity inherent in that savage hero. Meek had roamed through the woodlands among the villages of the Creeks and had learned from them many legends concerning their famous leader. Weatherford held a singular fascination for him, and the book attains the realm of the dramatic where the surrender of the chieftain after his defeat at the battle of Tohapeka is described. Weatherford's speech when he surrenders himself in behalf of his people's safety brings out the Indian traits of repression of feeling and stoicism, and it stirs the heart with its unselfish plea for mercy toward the members of his tribe, mercy sought even at the expense of his own life. Meek was at his best here but his wings frequently grew tired and he could not sustain the fervor of his passage. *Red Eagle* is interesting in portraying the fascination and charm of the Indian history of the state but like much else that Meek wrote it shows latent possibilities never developed, probably on account of a lack of energy in the poet.

Meek started his poetic career by writing verses for special occasions; then he continued his apprenticeship by paraphrasing the psalms. As is usual this work suffers by comparison with the originals of the King James version.

Finally he worked out a definite poetic theory which is formulated in the preface of *Songs of the South*. It is in harmony with the rest of his philosophy of love and pride of land. He said, "The poetry of a country should be a faithful expression of its physical and moral characteristics. The imagery, at least, should be drawn from the indigenous objects of the region and the sentiments be such as naturally arise under the influence of its climate, its institutions, habits of life and social conditions. Verse, so fashioned and colored, is as much the genuine product and growth of a land as its trees and flowers. It partakes of the raciness of the soil, the purity of the atmosphere, the brilliancy of its skies, its mountain pictures and its broad sweeps of levels and undulating territory. The scenery infuses itself into the song and the feelings and fancies are moderated by the circumstances amid which they had their birth." This poetic creed is faithfully adhered to. He opens his volume *Songs of the South* with verses entitled "Come to the South," in which the queen-like catalpa, the myrtle and pine along with scuppernongs, oranges and native wild birds offer their lure. So pleasing does Meek show these attractions to be that one desires to respond to his invitation to partake of the unsurpassed delights of his loved land.

His next poem, "To a Mocking Bird," by which alone Meek is widely remembered today, reveals him as a genuine nature poet. He had the true feeling for nature and a gift of description which gives some charming poetic pictures of Southern wild life. His was not the mystic Nature of Wordsworth, nor does he describe its gloomier and fiercer aspects, as those phases were practically lacking in his own clime. Nature was not to him a symbol but a delightful setting. His poems are pictorial and romantic, yet the pictures and romances with which he deals are those he knew by daily contact. "To a Mocking Bird" is equal in melodious fluency to Hayne's beautiful lyric on the same subject. Here Meek

shows himself capable of real poetry. He gives us lines which have the haunting melody of the song bird itself. One gets the sense of moonlight, the cool smell of magnolias and the music of the mocking bird most vividly. In this poem there is none of the irregularity of meter which mars many of his verses. It sounds spontaneous. His conception of the function of poetry as an interpretation of natural surroundings is maintained. The tunefulness of this lyric is brought out in its opening stanza

“From the vale what music ringing  
Fills the bosom of the night  
On the sense, entranced flinging  
Spells of witchery and delight  
O’er magnolia, lime and cedar  
From yon locust top it swells  
Like the chant of serenader  
Or the rhyme of silver bells.  
Listen, dearest, listen to it.  
Sweeter sounds were never heard  
’Tis the song of that wild poet,  
Mime and minstrel, Mocking Bird.”

“In reading these lines,” says an admirer of Meek, “the clear burst of melody and the open flow of harmonious sounds seem to awake all our recollection of the soft dark and the blazing stars of the Southern night. Here indeed the poet for once rivals all singers of serenades, yes, even his own mocking bird.”

Again in “Magnolia Grove” one gets a sense of melody and of an atmosphere redolent with the heavy perfume of the blossoms. He sees

“The tall trees robed in spring time green  
Like monarchs stand amid the scene  
While broad white flowers their brows begem  
Each like a jeweled diadem.  
Below the honeysuckle shines  
’Mid rich festoons of glittering vines  
And paroquets—gay babblers—move  
Through all thine aisles, Magnolia Grove.”

The rhyming couplet mars the poetry here a bit but it does not make less vivid the pictures of the blue bay, the dark-eyed Choctaw maid bedight in wampum, roaming on its shore, the lure of "sky and sea and bird and flower."

His belief in the life giving powers of nature as well as his creed of poetry is embodied in "Nature's Lesson."

"Oh yes! If we would listen to it  
The anthem 'round, below, above,  
Each heart would leap to life—a poet!  
Each soul be brimmed with bliss and love

"For I have learned these pregnant lessons  
The soul is fashioned by the spheres  
Imperishable in its essence  
It still the stamp of Nature wears.

"By beauty into beauty moulded  
Or marred by blackness and by storm  
From influences which enfold it,  
It takes its coloring and form.

"Who then would perfect strength inherit  
Must feed his soul at Beauty's fount  
The breast of Nature, and his spirit  
In triumph thence will starward mount."

It is interesting to note that Meek was the first to call attention to the impressiveness of grandeur of Stone Mountain, the great declivity just outside Atlanta, which was selected as the base upon which the greatest memorial of the War Between the States was to be carved. Meek thought of this sheer declivity as a stupendous thought yet unborn in Nature's mind, a nightmare dream, "some gaunt despair." In his poem he began by comparing the insignificance of man with this vast work of Nature. To him as to those of a later age it seemed appropriate that Stone Mountain be used as a memorial, but to him it appeared fitting as a monument to the Indians who first were swayed by its majesty and who deemed it a great altar erected by supernatural means to Manito, the Great Spirit. In this poem the red man's feelings are suggested: at night when he saw the weird

shadows of the unknown standing in lofty solitude, during the play of the lightning about its mighty precipice, which he conceived to be the Manito's battle, as a fortress of refuge in flight from hostile tribes, and under the hue of the rainbow. He touches upon Indian legends connected with the mountain and concludes with the idea that it should be a memorial to the red men.

"Long shall my mind that hour recall  
That glorious view, that wild weird height.  
The thoughts which kept my soul in thrall  
As with some spell of magic might.

"For there to memory's eye came all  
The Red Tribes vanished long from sight  
And hailed thee, vast Memorial Stone  
As Nature's tribute to her children gone."

This poem is significant because it shows his ability to foresee the potentialities of his surroundings and the importance of keeping alive the noble legends of the past. If Tennyson's conception of the poet's function as prophet and seer be a true one, then Meek was a real poet. There are always evident in his work instances where constructive imagination has over leaped the future.

Among his best poems which deal with natural environment in the South are those which are based upon Indian life and legends. This early people held a charm for him and he delighted in reviewing their habits and customs in literature. The Indian influence upon Alabama is brought out in some clever verses, showing that although the red men themselves have gone they have left us a heritage in their names. Every stream in the state which attains the dignity of being called a river and many of lesser importance still have their original Indian titles. As his verse expresses it:

"Yes, though they all have passed away,  
That noble race and brave,  
Though their light canoes have vanished  
From off the crested wave

ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY

Though 'mid the forests where they roved  
There rings no hunter's shout  
Yet their names are on our waters  
And we may not wash them out.

\* \* \* \* \*

"'Tis heard when Chattahooche pours  
His yellow tide along  
It sounds on Tallapoosa's shores  
And Coosa swells the song.  
Where lordly Alabama sweeps  
The symphony remains  
And young Cahawba proudly keeps  
The echo of its strains.  
Where Tuscaloosa's waters glide  
From stream and tide 'tis heard  
And dark Tombigbee's winding tide  
Repeats the olden word.

\* \* \* \* \*

"And South where from Conechu's springs  
Escambia's waters steal  
The ancient melody still rings  
From Tensaw and Mobile."

"Choctaw Melodies," which consists of two lyrics, the one portraying the grief of a mother over the untimely death of her little son, the other voicing with a melodious refrain the homesick yearnings of an Indian maiden, gives an insight into the somber side of the red man's life. It contains some good descriptive touches and a rather wide appeal.

Meek's most pretentious work, the metrical romance *Red Eagle*, is based upon the gallant deeds of an Indian hero. The author regarded this as his best work and in it he does frequently attain to the realms of poetry. As a true romantic here he deals with the dramatic incidents connected with the warrior Weatherford or Red Eagle as he was known to his tribe. This is a narrative poem, strictly historical in its leading episodes, the massacre of five hundred whites at Fort



Mims, sixty five miles above Mobile on the Tenesaw river. The story is interesting and would make good fiction. Meek puts it into a series of pictures in which first we see the horrible massacre, then the perilous escape of seven from the fort, among whom is Lilla, the White Dove, beloved by Red Eagle and the daughter of one of the officers. We see later the marriage of the two, then his defeat at the hands of the white man, his bold leap into the Alabama river whereby he makes his escape, his final surrender at the price of his people's safety. The virtue of the poem lies in the epic conception of Weatherford, in the metrical swing of the battle descriptions and in the scenery depicted. There are slow passages in which the reader's interest lags. The characters are drawn with a broad sweep of the brush. All of them are simple and objective, undisturbed by introspection or analysis of motives. Lilla is appealing in her youth and in her devotion to Weatherford, but with the exception of the two most important personages they are all lay figures. We see more vividly the yellow streams, the high bluffs overhanging them and the tangled forests as a fitting background for Weatherford, the outstanding personage in the poem. Meek gives his readers the sense of Red Eagle's superiority, of his gifts as a warrior and an orator, his outstanding physical grace and his distinction which marked his pre-eminence. In describing his hero and the primitive warfare of the Indians Meek is reminiscent of Scott, but he is no servile imitator. There is decided individuality in his treatment of nature and in the composition as a whole. The surrender of Red Eagle is as well done here in verse as it is in *Romantic Passages in Southwestern History* in prose. It is concise and dramatic. The beginning is as follows:

“The fierce decree had scarcely gone  
When suddenly within the tent  
A warrior form, unarmed and tall  
With bright plumes o’er his forehead bent  
A rich scarf gay with wampum blent  
Around his limbs symmetrical  
Before the startled commander stands  
Holding a broken bow within his hands”—

Again in the Muskogee war song the poem moves with dash and fervor:

“Muskogee, Muskogee, arouse to the flight  
And burst on the foe in full fury and might  
His step on the graves of your fathers is seen  
He leads his fierce horde through your orchard of  
green  
O'er your streams and your prairies his dark shadow  
lies  
And the smoke of his conquest dims the blue of your  
skies.  
Then rouse ye to battle, O why will ye sleep?  
And burst on the foe as the wolf on the sheep.

“Muskogee, Muskogee, the Master of Breath  
Will shield his red son from the terrors of death  
But, oh if a brave in battle should fall  
His glorious fate is noblest of all  
For then in the groves of the sun goldened west  
With the chiefs and the hunters his spirit shall rest.  
Then ye who would live or ye who would die  
In honor and bliss to the red battle fly.  
Ho Muskogee, Muskogee  
Ho Ho.”

From the war song the poem moves to a gentler measure in which are portrayed.

“Cone like cabins, 'mid the trees  
Whose bark roofs totter in the breeze  
The graceful dogwood waves his crown of flowers  
Diffusing snow-stars through the vistaed bowers”.

Again we move among the tasseled chinquapin perfuming the hill; we hear the whistling partridge in the sedge, the “amorous wild duck” and the “pine perched crow”. We wander in the forest through festoons of honeysuckle

“Beech and cedar over head  
Their tall trunks life away  
And interlacing branches keep  
A coolness all the day.  
The large vines, coiled like serpents round  
Their topmost limbs descend  
In long volutions to the ground  
And with the shrubbery blend.”

The poem is full of defects. Sometimes it has a flamboyance of style which may be ascribed to the author's admiration of the oriental atmosphere in *Lalla Rookh*. Meek is at his worst when he imitates Moore's poem. There is not always perfect smoothness of verse. The heroic couplet predominates but there are changes to an octosyllabic measure with alternating rhyme and this change at times evinces careless construction. However the local color, abounding on every page, and the fire of the martial speeches which are really excellent should have prevented its falling into its present obscurity. At the time of its publication the leading periodicals of the United States gave it a favorable reception. *Harper's Magazine* for December, 1855, says, "We know of few more faithful delineations of Southern scenery than are given in this poem. The plot is of varied interest and well sustained throughout." A South Carolina magazine hailed it as "the best Indian poem known to the English language," and though it was severely criticised in some papers, most of them admitted its merits. Certainly it is not the best Indian poem we have, but it is worthy of preservation. It is full of romantic suggestiveness and if from no other standpoint it should be remembered on account of its value historically. Taking into consideration the lack of a literary atmosphere in which Meek lived one must admit that comparatively speaking this work is remarkable.

Next in importance to his Indian poetry are the poems on liberty. Meek was a patriotic American and one of the fundamental tenets of his patriotic creed was a belief in freedom. This was not confined to politics. He advocated intellectual and religious freedom also. His ideals for the United States are voiced in "The Day of Freedom," a poem delivered on July 4, 1838, at Tuscaloosa, Alabama. This is a lengthy piece containing one splendid lyric, "Land of the South", often quoted and always stirring the blood of a Southerner. It comes as a fitting climax to the whole selection. It begins

"Land of the South! imperial land!  
How proud thy mountains rise  
How sweet thy scenes on every hand  
How fair thy evening skies

But not for this—oh not for these  
 I love thy fields to roam  
 Thou hast a dearer spell to me  
 Thou art my native home."

This poem shows a strong influence of Mrs. Hemans, who has written a lyric similar in meter and theme. It is considered quite representative, as two editors, Gill and Charles W. Kent, have selected it from Meek's works to be included in their anthologies of Southern poems.

"The Day of Freedom", however, was not written from a sectional point of view. On the contrary Meek seemed fearful of growing tendencies toward dissension in the United States and proceeded to give his hearers some excellent advice against becoming too partisan. After recalling the glories of the early period of America he inserted a well written paraphrase of John Adams' famous letter to his wife, written in Philadelphia, July 5, 1778. This letter had been elaborated in one of Webster's addresses and was quite adapted in theme to "The Day of Freedom". It hailed the future freedom, an outgrowth of Revolutionary bloodshed. Meek proceeded to show what national dreams of that early time had already been realized; then he paid tribute to the heroes who had risked their lives for these dreams, exhorting his hearers not to have let them die in vain. He at last just before the climax gave the admonitions which show his concern for the future. Of these admonitions the most significant are "Beware of party strife" and "Love alike all portions of our land for one common cause is ours." The Mason and Dixon line was not yet indicative of a division between North and South, but Meek in the year of 1838 was fearful of a rift and was doing all he could to preserve the Union. It is noteworthy that this Alabamian then wrote such lines as these

"What though each Star that on our banner shines  
 Moves in its orbit with a sovereign sway  
 With laws, with institutions of its own  
 Yet round one common center all converge

\* \* \* \* \*

"Strike but one orb  
 From its appointed place or rudely dim

Its purity and light and soon the whole  
Great frame-work of the sky would madly whirl  
In dire confusion and disaster vast.

"And oh, may heaven, from each attuning sphere  
Long breathe the music of congenial faith  
Of Union, fellowship and kindred love  
For, States fraternal, ye are all but One."

This is the core of the whole selection. It is almost an editorial expressed in verse, and as such it attracted more notice than the same sentiments set forth in sober prose on the editorial page of the *Mobile Register* could have done.

As he loved his United States so he admired those of her heroes who he thought stood for protecting her liberty. Jackson, Webster and Clay are the objects of odes written at their deaths. In each poem he deplored the loss of a great leader of democracy. The verses are at times stilted but they become spontaneous when the stirring deeds of each hero are recounted, as for example the description of Jackson's brilliant generalship against the Indians, Clay's impassioned oratory and the intellect of Webster, "the giant of learning, the Titan of mind."

Meek's attention was not wholly absorbed in his own national affairs. His sympathies extended to every down-trodden people struggling for independence, and especially he felt deeply for the Irish patriots. In a short selection called "Ireland, a Fragment," written in 1848, he attempted to enlist the interest of his countrymen in that unfortunate land, exhorting them that having so successfully attained their own desires for freedom, they forget not this other oppressed country now going through the same throes. He paid especial tribute to the brave Emmett in this poem, full of fervor and warm admiration for the Irish martyrs.

Meek was a true hero worshiper, and he was very ardent in his admiration of the unquestioning devotion to duty which led to the tragic death of the six hundred at Balaklava. In a discussion of it with a friend he made a wager that he could write a poem suitable to commemorate the event. "Balaklava," his most widely known work, was the result. It was published in a Northern magazine anonymously and

by many was attributed to the English poet Alexander Smith. Meek later included it in his volume *Songs of the South*. "Balaklava" displays much energy and movement. It was generally conceded to be the equal if not the superior of Tennyson's "Charge of the Light Brigade," written about the same gallant deed. For years it has been declaimed by school boys. It has a ringing vigor and a martial fire well suited for the recounting of the glories in such daring heroism.

Meek's nature poetry and his verses in praise of heroic achievement are his most noteworthy works. Aside from these he wrote some rhymes for children, among which "Little Red Riding Hood" is one of the most attractive. He also tried his hand at pleasant little trivialities like "Elegy on a Mocking Bird Killed by a Cat," similar in theme to Lanier's poem, and he met with rather happy results. In a serious vein he wrote several epitaphs which are simple and sincere. These with his verses written for special occasions and his love poems sum up his poetic achievements.

Of the verses inspired by particular events, "Carmen Seculare" is one most worth while. It was recited at a New Year's banquet in 1849 and it summarizes the outstanding events of '48, the revolution in Europe, the Irish disturbance and the peace which had come to the United States with her additional good fortune of the discovery of gold in California and the westward development of the railroad. He concludes the poem in the manner which becomes him well with an affable and well turned toast to his hearers.

He delighted in vers de societie and was quite a master of the art of writing it. His urbanity and his ability as a rhymster are displayed to an excellent advantage in the many trivial verses he made. Whether in a song before the Alabama Bar Association dinner or in a valentine to his lady love of the moment, his manner was perfect. Indeed his love poems, which are many, are so very correct in sentiment and expression that one doubts whether he was very deeply moved by the grand passion purporting to inspire them. He seems to have enjoyed composing them so much that it is open to speculation whether he did not sometimes seek for lady loves as objects of his verses rather than seek for verses to express emotions aroused by particular individuals. He

was always in quest of the maiden of his dreams and most flesh and blood girls fell short of his lofty ideals. Even so he made very pretty poems in tribute to various young ladies and they certainly were not scorned by his "lovely Creole, the bright belle of Mobile," "the Rose of Alabama" or any of the maidens who were their inspiration. Though written in a somewhat sentimental style their sentimentality is leavened by a very wholesome humor which runs through most of them as though the poet were standing aside and laughing a bit at his own effusions. Indeed viewed by the standards of his age probably his poetry was not considered at all sentimental. At any rate if the emotions which inspired it were not all rooted within the deepest recesses of the heart they were very pretty feelings expressed in charming phrases which showed Meek to be a true exponent of romance and chivalry. His delight in the romance of unreality is brought out in some lines entitled "Fair Lady in the Realm of Song" in which he writes of an ideal land

"Tis far away, this spirit land,  
Ah, far away in a misty clime,  
With circling waves and moving strand  
Tis the dreamy home of gentle rhyme.

And the winds are breathing ever near  
Rilling and whispering lullabies  
A soft and plaintive melody  
With its gentle silvery murmurings  
Tis a land where stars and breezes dwell  
And a joyous tale they always tell."

Meek can be best described as a romantic. In his attitude toward the lovely ladies of the South, his Indian haunted rivers and swamps, toward his own country in literature and in politics he was ever thrilled by the spirit of romance. However he by no means set himself to follow intangible will-o-the-wisps in the shadowy world of dreams. He lived his romance and caught the sense of high adventure in his own surroundings. Building a commonwealth appealed to him as a lofty task inspiring the best of his ability. He saw men and events in relation to his own ideals. By these ideals

he guided the people of his state to a higher intellectual level. All of his work, literary and political, was an expression of faith, and its sincerity should receive recognition.

As an artist he was faulty, lacking in intensity. Sometimes his elaborate phraseology borders on bad taste and sometimes his meter is hopelessly careless. His range is limited and by no means does his work show mastery of form. Aside from "To a Mocking Bird" and "Balaklava" most of his poetry is valuable in that it shows his enthusiastic interest in things poetic and in that it opens a field of interest hitherto untouched. Primarily, he is a pioneer who gave the world of letters his conception of the poetic phases of the South. He realized keenly the need for an expression in literature of the interesting phases of the past of his section. No one had recorded these events in acceptable form, as no one had made poetry from the abundant material for poetry all around him. Some of his history is not only a record of past events but literature as well, and some of his verse is real poetry. According to a strict critical standard his works would be considered lacking in qualities which make for any great degree of genius, but judged in relation to the time and the surroundings amid which he lived his comparative excellence is noteworthy. Judged by the effect which Meek as a man and as a writer had as an inspiration to those who came into contact with him, he should be ranked among the foremost literary men of Alabama—as the foremost literary man of his own time in his own section.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### Published Works:

*Songs and Poems of the South*, published 1857. Copy found in library of Woman's College of Alabama.

*Romantic Passages in Southwestern History*. Copy from library of Judson College.



*Red Eagle, a Metrical Romance.* Found in Department of Archives of Alabama.

*Oration on Intellectual Development in the United States.* Oration delivered before the Society of Alumni of the University of Alabama at its first anniversary, December 17, 1836.

Poems—"Fair Lady of the Realms of Sons."

"Little Red Riding Hood."

"To . . . January, 1844."

"To Fanny, 1834."

"Essay on Noses."

"The World of Joy—A Poem"

"Hope and Light"

*The Romance of Reality*—An oration in manuscript form.

Other biographical references

*Address by the Reverend P. P. Neeley at the Funeral of Alexander B. Meek* (Pamphlet at Department of Archives).

Brief biographical sketches in *Sketches of Alabama History* by Joel C. DuBose and *Dictionary of Alabama Biography* by T. M. Owen.

Criticism in *The Literature of the South* — M. J. Moses.

*Address before the Alabama Historical Society, July 9, 1855.*

These orations are in pamphlet form and are to be found in the Department of Archives and History at the State Capitol of Alabama in Montgomery.

*Poem Pronounced before the Ciceronian Club, 1838, Tuscaloosa, Alabama.* Pamphlet to be found in aforementioned Department of Archives and History.

Unpublished works found in manuscript at the Department of Archives and History of Alabama in Montgomery, Alabama.

*History of Alabama* (unfinished)

*Paraphrases on Psalms IV and V*

*Day Book 1840 and Diaries.*

## THE CARE AND CUSTODY OF ALABAMA HISTORICAL MATERIALS

by

*David L. Darden*

*Manuscripts and Maps Division*

Preservation being one among the primary laws of nature, it follows that collecting must precede in many instances. Consider what collecting really means! True collectors are they who use their collections as an open door to the study of manners and customs of a by-gone day. The acquisitions of various collectors in the United States during the last fifty years have become increasingly important and interesting, offering as they do a wide variety of objects to suit tastes and pocketbooks of all types of people.

Rarest treasures of course require the maximum of safe keeping and no end of preparation for their safety. The increasing expenses involved in providing adequate storage space and preservation facilities have made it necessary for public and private institutions to enter the field of collecting in order to safeguard the records of the past and present against destruction. Because of this need Alabama's greatest collector—Dr. Thomas M. Owen—years ago conceived and carried out the invaluable idea of establishing a state agency for the collection and preservation of public and private materials relating to local, state and national history. This agency, which has been known as the Alabama State Department of Archives and History since its creation, was organized March 2, 1901<sup>1</sup>, by authority of an Act of the state legislature, approved February 27, 1901.<sup>2</sup> The act creating this department prescribed the objects and purposes as "the care and custody of official archives, the collection of materials bearing upon the history of the State, and of the territory included therein, from the earliest times, the completion and publication of the State's official records and other his-

<sup>1</sup>Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, (Chicago, 1921), I, p. 57.

<sup>2</sup>Acts of the General Assembly of Alabama, (Montgomery, 1901), LV, p. 131.

torical materials, the diffusion of knowledge in reference to the history and resources of the State, the encouragement of historical work and research".<sup>3</sup> The activities of the department have been expanded by legislative Acts since 1901 to include library extension, legislative reference work, and a number of other duties.<sup>4</sup> Aside from creating the Department of Archives and History, Alabama has contributed in a great measure to the institutional phase of collecting and preserving in that it was the first state known to establish such an agency.<sup>5</sup>

Too many times historical materials have been lost because of fire, ignorance of value, insects, crowded storage conditions, inadequate containers, careless handling, improper facilities for preservation and a number of other menaces. Each of these hazards has contributed its part, but the losses resulting from fires and misunderstanding as to the relative historical value are the only causes which need further comment. Just as fire accounts for tremendous loss of life and property each year it also exacts a heavy toll of source materials which cannot be replaced. So often family papers, public records, files of old business enterprises and miscellaneous materials are stored away in an attic or some inaccessible place; and when fire occurs, they are burned or destroyed by water and chemicals used in fighting a blaze. To the person interested in research and perhaps members of the family of the next generation these materials would probably be worth more than any items which could have been removed from the building. It is generally accepted that, on the average, few families or offices escape more than two generations without a destructive fire. Finally, the destruction of papers and records for lack of information as to value has heavily indented the supply of source materials in almost every geographical area. Several cases are known in which large collections of distinguished men have been destroyed in recent years, thereby making the task of appraising their lives and the movements they were affiliated with a very dif-

---

<sup>3</sup>Ibid, p. 127.

<sup>4</sup>Owens, *op cit*, pp. 57f.

<sup>5</sup>Ibid, IV, p. 1310.

ficult, if not impossible, undertaking. A parallel example of the destruction of public records can be drawn from what happened in one of the older counties in Alabama. This county moved its seat of government but left a great quantity of the older records in the vacated building. Some years after the county disposed of the old building, the owners needed the space occupied by the records and they were taken out and dumped into a nearby gully.<sup>9</sup>

The types of primary source materials so essential to the writing of political, social and economic history include agricultural, business, church, family, organizational and public records and papers. As each group has contributed its share to the development and prosperity of the nation, it is well to consider them separately. In the first place, the agricultural papers which should be available to the future historians are ledgers and records showing the number of acres planted in corn, cotton, potatoes and miscellaneous crops; accounts listing expenditures for seed, fertilizer, rent, labor and similar items; tabulations on weather conditions, insect disturbances or anything to improve or impair normal production; crop yields; sale price of products; receipts and bills; and other matters pertaining to the operation of a farm. Agriculture is one of the pillars over which this nation's structure is built, and it is important to have the records of such an industry available. Secondly, business like agriculture has played a large part in the growth and prosperity of the United States, and it is therefore imperative that files representing a cross section of this phase of American life be saved for an economic approach to history. The materials in this category which should be protected from destruction are bills and receipts, market quotations, shipping papers, purchase and sales prices, legal documents and many things pertaining to transactions and operations of various enterprises. Contrary to the opinion of so many people the records of corporations, partnerships and small individual operators are almost equally important for a well rounded study of economic history, depending, of course, on the nature of the business

---

<sup>9</sup>Incident related by resident of the community.

and the period of time covered. Large corporations did not become so common until about the turn of the century and their files, though valuable, are limited in that they generally cover a short period of time and a specialized field of endeavor. The old ledgers found in a crossroads store are, in so many cases, the records of a small business, partnership or individually owned, which has bought and sold everything for the people in that locality for the last century. Crude as the bookkeeping may be, these old records reflect the sale prices of cotton, corn, meat, clothes, meal, flour, lard, caskets, medicine, tobacco, kerosene, fertilizer and miscellaneous products bought and sold by local residents. A representative collection of all business firms is necessary for a well balanced depository of economic source materials, but it is obviously impossible for an institution to house all of these materials which are available in the area it serves. Thirdly, church records contain a vast deal of valuable information which cannot be overlooked by students. The minutes, rolls of various organizations, resolutions, histories, publications and miscellaneous records of all denominations exemplify the attitude and feeling of many groups through the years. Without these to determine the religious influences over a long period of time, no person could hope to write a social history of any era. The student of political and economic history would also find it difficult to evaluate many factors and movements without considering the part churches have played in them. The fourth group which should be preserved for posterity, is family papers including diaries, letters, scrap-books, bills, receipts, deeds, legal transactions, bills of sale of slaves, blue prints, maps, survey notes and related records, and many items too numerous to mention. Institutions have frequent calls for information on families, but so often it cannot be supplied because of the lack of source materials. It is also noted that too many people think their family papers worthless, if no member has been a leader in national, state or local affairs. Although some collections have more significance and value, it is true that small collections of papers portraying the lives of ordinary people are indispensable for a finished picture of American culture. Official records reveal the thoughts and opinions of leaders, but perhaps the

best means of obtaining an insight into the lives of common people is from family papers. In the fourth place, it is important for the student to have access to minutes and records of fraternal, civic, professional, patriotic, vocational and literary organizations as one means of studying the ways and customs of the American people. Last but not least, the archives in custody of public officials constitute another type of material which should be protected from the ravages of many natural enemies. Interest in national, state and local government has been increasing during recent years, and this fact enhances the value and demands the protection of public records from the calamities which have befallen so many in the past. Realizing the difficulty confronting officials in providing for adequate storage and facilities so essential to the preservation of public records, the state legislature authorized, in the discretion of officials, the transfer of documents, original papers, records, official books, newspaper files and printed books not in current use, to the Department of Archives and History for permanent preservation.<sup>7</sup>

In addition to the unpublished records and papers, publications and museum articles compose a vital part of a collection recording the various epochs of history. The Department of Archives and History attempts to procure copies of all books, pamphlets, and near-print matter which have been written by Alabama authors, on subjects pertaining to the state, and materials printed in Alabama. Museum articles of almost every description are collected and displayed in one of the special rooms set aside for exhibiting numerous objects relating to the state's history.

The Alabama Department of Archives and History is now occupying the new World War Memorial Building, where archives, publications, museum pieces, papers, and all types of records can be cared for as befits their priceless historical value. The spacious and impressive state depository is equipped to provide adequate care and safety in perpetuating facts and events relating to the aboriginal, civil, ecclesiastical,

---

<sup>7</sup>Code of Alabama, (Atlanta, 1923), I, p. 890.

economic, literary, natural, political and social history of the state and the Deep South. Here these materials are classified in their respective divisions and made available for anyone desiring to use them. This department is deeply concerned in the care, collection and preservation of all items which, in any respect, deal with Alabama's rich heritage and background. As custodian of such materials, the Department of Archives and History welcomes the participation and cooperation of all interested persons in its work of collection and preservation.

## MARTIN MARSHALL'S BOOK\*

### Chapter I

#### Introduction

By Weymouth T. Jordan

(This is the first of a series of articles based on material contained in a family journal in the possession of A. J. Marshall, of Marion, Alabama. Its purpose is to clarify the edited material which will follow in the series. When completed the various articles will appear as a book with the title: *Martin Marshall's Book: Medicine and Some Other Domestic Practices in Ante-bellum Alabama*.) Dr. Jordan is professor of history at Judson College, Marion, Alabama.

In the many studies of the Old South which have come from American presses during the past twenty years, Southern plantation life, and especially plantation slavery, has received much attention. U. B. Philips' pioneer and authoritative work, *American Negro Slavery*, has been followed with a steady flow of special studies of the institution's intricate development and vicissitudes in specific states. Several of these studies have been of book length, but the majority has been published in the form of articles in learned historical journals. Still other accounts of the history of slavery in particular states are now in progress. The subject is so broad and so effected all phases of life in the South before the War Between the States that it has not yet been thoroughly investigated, and numerous studies must still be completed before the institution is understood. Slavery has indeed seemed so unlimited in its study, that until very recently many people had no idea, or did not stop to consider, that any other social classes than planters and slaves existed in the South before 1861. In this connection, several present-day Southern historians have been leading the way in pointing out that

---

\*A Social Science Research Council Southern grant-in-aid has made possible the research for this and the succeeding articles on the Martin Marshall material. The writer wishes to acknowledge the aid given by the Research Council.



there are other matters of equal importance concerning the ante-bellum South which also warrant some study. In speaking of the type of documents and materials commonly used in Southern historical research, it was stated in the presidential address before the Southern Historical Association at New Orleans, Louisiana, November 4, 1938, that "Of far more value may be some letter, or diary, or account book" which "has left a record which significantly throws some light on an otherwise unknown or incompletely understood phase of Southern life."<sup>1</sup> This remark succinctly states, at the same time, the reason to be for the many studies which have been made recently and are being made of Southern poor whites, town life, education, the theatre, commerce and other social and economic aspects of the region. It is for this same reason that the present edited version of a journal, kept by a person who had no special political or economic significance, is offered to the reader. It is hoped, however, that the information it contains on social life in Alabama for the period which it covers will justify its publication.

The material included here is merely that which was written down over a period of about sixty years by an inquisitive and wide-awake person who practiced the trades of weaver, mechanic and blacksmith, as well as operated a plantation. And, it was not unusual for planters of his day to couple other economic pursuits with their agricultural activities. The type of information which he collected is indicative of the intimate relations arising among rural Southerners, Alabamians included, who were his contemporaries. His material was for his own and his friends' use, and dealt primarily with the serious business of surviving and making life more pleasant in a region which was gradually evolving from a frontier status to that of the leading cotton state of the Old South. As such, the document acquires additional significance because it adds to the knowledge of the practicalities of existing. Thus, it should throw some light on actual living conditions in Alabama during the first half of the nineteenth century.

---

<sup>1</sup>Philip M. Hamer, "The Records of Southern History," *The Journal of Southern History*, VI (February, 1939), 3.

Martin Marshall, the compiler of the items included in the present book, was born on May 4, 1782, in Richland County, South Carolina, near the present city of Columbia. His grandfather, John Marshall, had emigrated to America from England, and by the year 1770 had established a home in Richland County. After coming to South Carolina he operated a grist mill, and before his death acquired nearly nine hundred acres of land. John Marshall's son, William, who was the father of Martin Marshall, continued to operate both the mill and the farm which he inherited. In addition, he followed the trade of weaver. No information is available on Martin Marshall's early life and activities, except that he worked and lived with his father until the elder Marshall's death in 1800. His father had not been a man of wealth, and at his death had owned about 925 acres of farm land, six slaves, and a few cows, sheep, hogs, horses and the usual goods and implements necessary for the operation of a farm such as the size of his. Also listed among his possessions were spinning and weaving machines. His estate, not including his land, was appraised at \$2,267<sup>2</sup>. It is thus obvious that during his youth Martin Marshall did not have the advantages afforded by wealthy parents. He did learn to read and write, however, and it is probable that he attended school for a short time. But, of more importance economically to him in later life was the training as a mechanic and weaver which he received from his father. It is also very likely that he learned the blacksmith trade while he was working on his father's farm.

Within a few months after William Marshall's death his estate was sold, and the proceeds presumably were divided among his ten children, of which Martin was the eldest. Shortly after receiving his legacy, Martin married Mary Blanchard, a neighbor. He then moved to Columbia, where he opened a blacksmith shop and also began following the trade of weaver. He earned a living in this manner until

<sup>2</sup>Information on the Marshall family has been furnished by various descendants of John Marshall, who at the present live throughout Alabama. Most of the information, however, has come from the Rev. James W. Marshall, of Chattahoochee, Florida.

the year 1808, at which time his wife inherited some property from one of her brothers. The property was soon converted into seventeen slaves, and since he got control of such a number of hands, it is probable that Marshall again turned to farming. One of the traditions about him, however, is that while in South Carolina he was unsuccessful as a farmer. Be that as it may, it is known that he gradually accumulated large debts during the period from 1808 until 1815, and that it was only through the business judgment of his wife that he was saved from bankruptcy. Perhaps his lack of success as a farmer at this particular time was because of no fault of his. At the period thousands of small farmers and planters were leaving South Carolina and other Atlantic seaboard states because their lands were wearing out. In 1815 Marshall became one of the this large number in the general exodus southward and southwestward from his region. During August of that year he sold what remained of his South Carolina holdings, and used the proceeds from the sale to move to the Old Southwest.

Marshall's choice of a location for a new start was the Territory of Alabama, which was shortly to be given the status of statehood. He took up his new residence in the town of Fort Claiborne, which had been established in 1813, and which was rapidly becoming one of the most important commercial towns in the Territory. He remained in and around Fort Claiborne for the rest of his life, or until his death on September 5, 1865.<sup>3</sup> After his arrival in the region which was later to become Monroe County, Marshall resumed his trades of blacksmith and weaver. He was quite successful in his activities, partially because at the time Fort Claiborne was one of the prosperous towns in the Territory. This rested on the fact that it was located at the most favorable point on the Alabama River route between Mobile and Montgomery, both of which were becoming important centers of the cotton trade even at this early date. During the decade after Marshall moved to Fort Claiborne, the population of the place varied between 2,500 and 5,000. Especially from

<sup>3</sup>Marshall's grave is located at Perdue Hill, Alabama.

1819 to 1826, while Cahaba, a river town in Dallas County, was the capital of the state, the commercial importance of Fort Claiborne was assured because of its proximity to the seat of government.<sup>4</sup> In such a booming community, the life of a mechanic such as Marshall was a secure one. By the year 1824, he had purchased several town lots and begun buying up farm land along the Alabama River.<sup>5</sup> Slightly more than a thousand acres which he owned are still in possession of members of his family.

After establishing himself in Alabama, Marshall's blacksmith and weaving business must have been helped by the attraction created by some of the "new-fangled" ideas which he brought from South Carolina. Although it can not be established historically, according to his descendents he was the first person in his region to dig a well, and was also the first to have a covered floor in his house. Stories are still told of the wonder and amazement with which people went to his home to see these innovations. But, of far greater importance than these two improvements which he is said to have introduced was his wide variety of interests. As a sort of "jack-of-all-trades," his activities and interests covered many matters. He began, if he had not already done so, writing down notes about neighborhood affairs and opinions of the customers who came into his shops. Unfortunately for the historian and others interested in adding something to their knowledge of conditions around Fort Claiborne in the early period, these notes have been lost. There is extant, however, a journal which Marshall had begun keeping in April, 1802, and which he continued until his death. It is the material in this journal which has been edited to produce the present book. The editor's version acquires its title partially from the original, and partially because most of the material included in it was gathered after Marshall moved

<sup>4</sup>In 1826, Cahaba was almost washed away by the river, and the capital was moved to Tuscaloosa. Afterwards, Fort Claiborne gradually lost its importance. Today it is not even designated on the map of the state.

<sup>5</sup>Monroe County, Alabama (Office of Probate Court, County Courthouse, Monroeville), Deed Book A, p. 127, 131, 133, 136, 138; Deed Book B, p. 42; Deed Book D, p. 293, 458.

to Alabama. The original document was entitled *Martin Marshall's Book*.

Because of his activities as an Alabama planter and business man, Marshall was able to make the necessary contacts which enabled him to collect the varied items when he entered in his *Book*. The wide range of material indicates that it came from many sources. Especially as a blacksmith in Fort Claiborne he must have had ample opportunities of talking to his customers and of obtaining information from them. Then, too, he must have picked up knowledge of customs in his region by observation and while indulging in neighborly gossip. Moreover, he must have learned much from the river travelers who came through Fort Claiborne. During most of the period of his residence in Alabama, he had access to numerous newspapers, farm journals and magazines. He got some of his material from such publications. Furthermore, the procedure usually followed by Americans living on the frontier as it advanced southwestward and westward was to experiment with household practices, and, if they seemed successful or answered the purpose, to pass the information on to friends and neighbors. After examining Marshall's journal, it would seem that he served as a self-appointed information bureau for the people living in his section.

Many of the items included in the *Book* consist of clippings made from printed materials. In addition to newspapers and magazines, Marshall must have also cut out articles from almanacs and medical journals. In most cases when an item was clipped or copied from a printed article, he did not indicate the title or date of the printed source of his information. As a result, the source of practically all of his clippings is unknown. Examination of those clippings which do designate their source, however, leads to an important conclusion, which should be kept in mind in reading the *Book*. Those clippings were made from newspapers or reprints of newspapers printed in nearly all the states in the country east of the Mississippi River. It thus becomes evident that many of the practices as described in the *Book* were followed not only in Alabama, but also throughout most

of the South and the eastern part of the United States. In many cases, the clippings indicate definitely that the information contained was submitted to editors by persons who wished to pass on what they considered to be useful knowledge to the readers of newspaper and magazines. Only a cursory examination of ante-bellum newspapers and magazines is necessary to show that articles published under the heading of "Valuable Recipes" and "Useful Information" served a definite purpose in spreading knowledge of domestic practices. This was particularly true in the case of the South, the least populated section of the country. Marshall took full advantage of the opportunity offered to use these articles.

It seems that Marshall's collection of useful items of interest to the home was originally begun as a medical journal. It is known that the making of such a collection was a common practice among many families of the Old South. To the people living in a region such as Alabama during the period, home cures for diseases were of paramount importance. At the time trained physicians were scarce, and even the trained ones were not too well qualified for their work. Since there were few accredited doctors practicing in Marshall's region, and especially during the first years after he moved there, the people around Fort Claiborne were compelled to rely on their own resourcefulness and inventiveness in treating diseases. Some of the cures which they concocted indicates that they had the necessary initiative to exist in almost any place. Most of the treatments probably resulted from a trial and error process, and they indicate that every cure conceivable was attempted. Few herbs escaped use, and any plant which was suspected of possessing medicinal qualities was given a trial. Marshall also quite frequently used anvil dust from his blacksmith shop in preparing his personal medicines. Some cures were copied from such sources as newspapers, medical journals and magazines. Many of them must have been brought to Alabama from Africa by Negro slaves because some are so diabolic that they could have been thought of only by a savage mind. The surprising thought after learning of some of the cures has been not that they possibly succeeded, but that

the patients survived the treatment prescribed. In the light of present-day medicine, some of the accepted cures and preventives of Marshall's day are horrible things to behold. In Marshall's own case, however, they seemingly served their purpose. He used them and lived to be eighty-five years of age.

According to Marshall's *Book*, many of the diseases which are today common to the Deep South were also prevalent in the region during the period before the War Between the States. On the basis of various cures for certain diseases entered in the journal, the most numerous cases of illness resulted from the following diseases: dysentery, diarrhea, rheumatism, venereal diseases, cancer, coughs, ringworm, tetter, dropsy and ulcers. It was to cure these particular diseases and many others that Marshall and his neighbors experimented. Their manufacture of medicine was a complicated, year-round procedure. Barks of trees, roots and plants were especially employed while in season to produce concoctions, ointments, salves and tonics. Marshall's descriptions leave the impression that many prescriptions were extremely elaborate and detailed, not only in manufacture but also in administration. Even so, numerous of the ingredients used in making medicines to be given for the more simple and common ailments are still used as the basis of certain patent medicines. This seems to be particularly true in the case of cough medicines.

It was quite natural for Marshall to collect material on other matters than medicine despite the fact that his major interest, as illustrated by the contents of his personal journal, was in methods of curing diseases. This resulted in a collection of information useful in the operation of several branches of the household. It is probable that he had a separate journal for each particular subject, but if such was the case at some time during the latter part of his life he bound all his journals together to form *Martin Marshall's Book*. Some of the items included have been put together by the editor to form a chapter in the present book, which chapter has been designated as "Household Hints." These entries were gathered in the same manner as those on medicine,

They include material which was just as important, particularly to people living in Alabama and other sections of the Old Southwest. Marshall's descriptions of recipes for foods, wines, beers and liquors, and methods for curing hams and canning preserves may be taken as typical of the methods followed in the region from about 1800 until 1860. Here again it should be remembered that much of Marshall's material was gathered from several sections of the country, and for this reason it might be concluded that some of the methods of cooking which he practiced were commonly used at least in other parts of the southeastern section of the United States.

On examining Marshall's recipes, it is possible to obtain some idea of the interest which early Southerners showed in matters of the table. His numerous newspaper and magazine clippings demonstrate that people began early to send in descriptions of their favorite dishes and drinks to editors for purposes of publication. His interest in both spicy foods and powerful drinks is indicated by his journal. The various methods of making wines, whiskeys and beers which he collected does not necessarily mean, however, that he was addicted to drink. His was a day when it was customary for men to serve drinks at most social gatherings. His *Book* illustrates at the same time that spirits were used most frequently in the manufacture of preparations for medicinal purposes.

The diagrams which the editor has included in Chapter IV present technical directions which Marshall worked out for weaving cloth. Altogether the chapter contains forty-nine diagrams. It is believed that the directions may be accepted as a cross section of the types of cloth which were produced by hand in Alabama during the period when Marshall lived there. It may be assumed that some of the patterns were taken to Alabama from South Carolina because Marshall learned the weaving trade before he reached manhood. The designs which he collected were gathered somewhat in the same fashion as the other items in his *Book*. Some must have resulted from his own experimentation. Others were copied from articles owned by friends and neighbors.



One came from J. and R. Bronson, *The Domestic Manufacturer's assistant, and family directory in the arts of weaving and dyeing*.<sup>6</sup>

That part of Marshall's collection including information on methods of farming and veterinary practices has been combined to form the final chapter in the editor's version of the *Book*. Marshall's interest in these matters is of special significance. After moving to Alabama he became a planter, and he lived in a section of the state in which the important activity became the production of cotton before the War Between the States. His son, John Lee Marshall, was also a planter, and before his death acquired control of about 3,300 acres of land on both sides of the Alabama River, near the present locality of Perdue Hill. In addition, he owned 174 slaves. Martin Marshall himself never carried on such extensive farming operations, but he was active enough to collect material which was useful in the operation of a plantation. Also, during the latter part of his life he lived on the plantation of his son, John Lee.<sup>7</sup>

The items which Marshall gathered on farming and veterinary matters indicate pointedly that he had access to the best farm journals in the country. Here again his material came from wide sources. Whenever an ante-bellum Southern farmer or planter believed that he had stumbled into a new or better method of producing a crop, he did not hesitate to submit a description of his method for publication to a newspaper or farm journal. In this manner any reader who so desired could follow the same system. An examination of early Southern publications will show that great interest was shown in means of improving farming conditions. Much has been written and said of the unscientific methods of farming as practiced by Southerners before 1860. Most of this is correct, but at the same time there was much experimentation going on, and many efforts were made by individuals to improve conditions. Marshall's *Book* shows that he was

---

<sup>6</sup>This book was published in Utica, New York, in 1817.

<sup>7</sup>The information concerning John Lee and the fact that his father lived with him for a time has been furnished by the Reverend James W. Marshall of Chattahoochee, Florida.

one of those individuals. He and others like him, who read widely, and had the energy to make clippings and copy articles on farming, acquired knowledge of most new information on scientific farming. It should be kept in mind, however, that some methods as practiced during his time seem quite unscientific today. On the other hand, part of them are still followed.

Marshall's material on the care of sick animals is of value because it indicates treatments which he and other planters themselves worked out. As in the case of his own illness and of his family, when his stock became sick Marshall attended to them. This was so because there was a scarcity of veterinarians, although according to tradition there was an ample number of "horse-doctors." It is of interest that in many instances both persons and animals were treated in the same fashion, except for quantity of medicine. Again this was not peculiar to Alabama and the South, for Marshall obtained his farming information from the same wide sources as in the case of all the other material in his journal. During the period covered by the *Book*, most of the people of the United States were agriculturists. One conclusion reached from a study of the contents is that antebellum Southern farmers and planters, in their domestic practices, were in many cases as progressive as any in the United States. If the practices as described in Marshall's *Book* are typical of the collections made in Alabama, the people of that state had every opportunity to benefit from an increased knowledge of domestic improvements.

THE GENESIS  
of the  
UNIVERSITY OF ALABAMA<sup>1</sup>

By THOMAS M. OWEN, JR.

**The Charter and the Organization**

(THOMAS M. OWEN, JR.—Graduate of the University of Alabama, Chief of the Military Records Division in the National Archives, Washington, D. C., received all of his archival training in the Alabama State Department of Archives and History where he was a member of the staff for the better part of twenty years. He was 1st Lieutenant in the 1st Alabama Cavalry Regiment, National Guard, and saw active service on the Mexican border; went through a period of training after the United States entered the World War both in Cavalry and Field Artillery Regiments. He is National Historian of the American Legion.)

Although her halls were formally opened to students on April 18, 1831, the beginnings of the history of the University date back twelve years to an Act of the General Assembly of Alabama, approved December 17, 1819.<sup>2</sup> This was just three days after the State had been admitted into the Federal Union. The Act provided for the incorporation of "A seminary of learning." This was the first step in the State to establish an institution of learning of a "high order."

Attention was called to the liberal donations made by Congress to Alabama for educational purposes, in the inaugural address of Governor W. W. Bibb<sup>3</sup> Almost immediately steps were taken by the General Assembly to appropriate moneys, and an Act<sup>4</sup> authorizing the Governor to appoint "Land Commissioners" to manage the lands set apart by Congress.

At the third session of the Legislature, 1821<sup>5</sup>, another Act was passed providing that "His Excellency the Governor, ex-officio, together with twelve trustees, two from each judicial circuit, to be elected by joint ballot of both houses of the General Assembly, to continue in office for the term of three years," should constitute a body politic and corporate in deed and in law, by the name of the Trustees of the University of Alabama, and that the governor should be ex-officio president of the board.

At this session of the legislature<sup>6</sup> the duties of the board were enlarged to the extent that they were "to examine and report to the Legislature, such place or places, having a due regard to health and the fertility of the surrounding country, as shall appear to them most suitable for the location of the University and the Legislature shall by joint ballot of both houses make choice for the site of the University.<sup>7</sup> By this act of incorporation

"All the lands received by the state as a donation from Congress for a seminary of learning *were vested in the trustees*, who were authorized to dispose of the lands in such manner as should be best calculated to promote the object of the grant."

The lands donated were to be sold at a minimum price of seventeen dollars per acre, the agents collecting one-fourth in cash and taking notes for the rest which was to be paid in four annual installments.

The first meeting of the board of trustees was held in the city of Tuscaloosa, on Thursday the fourth of April, 1822.<sup>8</sup> The required oath of office was administered by Hume R. Field, after which the board proceeded to business.

Committees were appointed, ordinances passed, a seal selected, and other business transacted before the committee reported, which had been appointed to determine the bond of the treasurer, and of the agents, with recommendations as to the lands to be sold and the method of disposing of them.

As determined by the committee, consisting of Messrs. Carter, Phillips, Davis and Field, the bond of the treasurer was to be two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and that of the agents to be one hundred thousand dollars.

Times and places set for the sale of those lands set apart by the Secretary of the Treasury, at the instance of Congress, were as follows:

At the town of Cahawba on the first Monday of February, 1823; at Tuscaloosa on the second Monday of February, 1823; and at the Big Spring, in Franklin County, on the first Monday in March, 1823. The sale at the Big Spring was to include all the lands reserved for the University in Franklin County; the sale at Tuscaloosa, to include the lands reserved in the counties of Jefferson, Tuscaloosa, Greene and Perry; and the balance of the selected lands, at Cahawba. It was left to the discretion of the President to order a sale for all other lands which might from time to time be added to the possessions of the University, and at such times and places as he might best deem fit.

The treasurer was bound by oath to perform the duties of his office in person and not by deputy, unless on *special* occasions of emergency, and even then he was not to be exonerated from any responsibility.

A quarterly report was required, to be submitted by the treasurer. This report was to include an account of all the moneys, papers, and other deposits in his hands, and the books were to be ready for inspection at such time and by any persons whom the president of the board might appoint.

As set forth by the committee the duties of the agents were these: to examine all lands vested in the trustees lying within the district for which they had been appointed agents, and to report whether or not in their opinion the land was worth seventeen dollars an acre; they were to report also the situation and quality of the lands, and the improvements that had been made on them. Their reports were to be made to the president one month before the meeting of the board.

To compensate the agents, a resolution was spread upon the minutes to appropriate seventy-five dollars (\$75.00) for the Big Spring district, one hundred and twenty dollars (\$120.00) for the Tuscaloosa district, and two hundred and fifty dollars (\$250.00) for the Cahawba district, each agent to receive five dollars (\$5.00) for each day that he was actively engaged in the interest of the University, each account being made upon oath.

The result of a viva voce election for the agents was John Hunter for the Cahawba district, Thomas Owen for the Tuscaloosa district, and Quin Morton for the district of the Big Spring. Jack F. Ross was elected treasurer by a vote of eight to three over his opponent, Thomas W. Farrar.

### **The Lands and the Site**

With the selection of Ross as treasurer, the final organization of the administration of the University was completed. The next matters of business to be considered were the selection of a site or sites to recommend to the Legislature for the permanent location of the University; therefore Governor Pickens, in order that the will of the General Assembly might be carried into effect, read before the board of trustees the following notice:

“Board of Trustees,  
Tuscaloosa, April 5, 1823.

“Gentlemen:

“In pursuance of the tenth section of an Act entitled ‘An Act supplementary to an Act to establish a State University,’ you are notified to examine, and report to the Legislature at their next session, such place or places, having due regard to health, and the quality of the surrounding country as shall appear to be the most suitable for the location of the University.”

All the lands which had been sold and those which remained unsold were mentioned in the first annual report of the trustees, 1823, with the exception of those lands which had been reserved as eligible sites for the University. The amounts received, the amounts of bonds received — both principal and interest, and the total amount of the installments remaining unpaid, accompanied this first annual report.

Because the legislature had failed to select a site for the location of the university, nothing could be done with the money in the hands of the trustees except to convert it into

United States bank notes or specie. The bond of the treasurer had been, with some difficulty, secured and approved. The money appropriated for the erection of buildings lay idle in the hands of the trustees because the legislature had failed to act.

After repeated advertisements and attempts to sell the university lands for the minimum price, it appears that the Legislature took under advisement the proposition of reducing the price of sale. This plan met with violent opposition on the part of the trustees, who upheld their contentions with the following arguments:

“The board are unanimously of opinion that any reduction at this time would be inexpedient. The reasons inducing this opinion arise out of facts communicated by those most intimately acquainted with the lands in different sections of the state, and with all circumstances connected with the subject. One fractional section and five quarter-sections have recently been entered at the existing price, and it is believed that other tracts will be taken after the present expectation of a reduction is done away with. It is admitted that portions of the lands may not soon be salable at seventeen dollars per acre, yet the board consider that the delay in the sale of these portions will be of less importance than the sacrifice which would attend a general reduction. Under a favorable change of circumstances it is confidently expected that much university land would command the present minimum. The price of lands cannot now be considered as matured, much relinquished and other public land has recently been in market and more will very soon be offered; a reduction at such a peculiarly unfavorable season is viewed, *with great deference*, as unadvisable.”

However much of justice there may have been in their claims, at the next meeting of the board a resolution was offered, suggesting to the legislature that the lands be classified according to value, location, fertility and the surrounding health conditions.

From the sales of the university lands, rents and leases, etc., there came into the state treasury for 1823, \$52,602.75½. Of this amount \$3,323.05 included in the above statement of first installment for land entered in 1824, and \$1,032.99 in the statement of second installments for lands sold in 1823, are deposited in the treasurer's hands but not yet passed on the books; also \$214.00 collected in 1822 for rents at Tuscaloosa; and in Huntsville bills, not yet passed on the books of the treasury, are included in the above statement.

There was, during the same year, a total expenditure of \$4,631.98¾, which when subtracted from the "income" leaves a balance of \$47,970.76¾.

At every meeting of the board of trustees some new question came up in relation to the lands. The meeting of 1825 was no exception, for the question of suspending the entries on university lands was brought up for consideration. The question was submitted to a committee consisting of Messrs. Hall, Billingslea, Shackelford, Phillips, and Woodridge, and, after careful consideration, the following was their report:

"The committee to whom was referred the resolution directing them to enquire into the expediency of suspending for the present the entry of lands belonging to the University. *Report*: That they have had the subject to which the resolution called their attention, under consideration, and are of opinion that the lands in the vicinity of the seat of Government and of the place where the University may be located, will be greatly enhanced in value, and that the entry of all such lands should be suspended — That the Trustees should not permit further entries until this subject is presented to the General Assembly for their consideration, and that this report and the following ordinance be laid before them.—

"Be it ordained by the trustees of the University of Alabama, that the power vested in them by an Act of



the General Assembly passed on the 30th day of December 1823, to permit entries of the lands belonging to the University, be suspended until the pleasure of the General Assembly be known thereon."

The legislature, pursuant to action of the board in 1825, on January 13, 1826<sup>10</sup> provided for the classification of the university lands by three capable and discreet persons, one from each judicial circuit, to be chosen by joint ballot of the General Assembly. Lands of the first class were to be held at a minimum price of seventeen dollars an acre; those of the second class, at twelve dollars; and those of the third class, at eight dollars.

The lands to be thus classified were to—

"be advertised by the president of the board of trustees, to be sold at public auction in such quantities and at such places and at such times within the present year (1826) as he may think most conducive to the interest of the institution, and all lands not disposed of at such public sale shall hereafter be subject to entry at the minimum rates established by such classification."

With the growth of the state there was a gradual growth of its industries and institutions. This can be seen in no clearer light than the establishment of a bank in 1823, known as the "Bank of the State of Alabama."<sup>11</sup> From this time on, the office of treasurer of the university was abolished and "it was made the duty of the treasurer of the state to receive and safely keep all the moneys that might be paid to him by the board of trustees of the university."<sup>12</sup> This arrangement was maintained until 1848, when all the accounts between the state and the university were adjusted and closed.<sup>13</sup>

These words are found in the second section of the Act of incorporation of the state bank, "the moneys arising, or which may have arisen from the sale or rent of the lands given to this state by the Congress of the United States for the support of a seminary of learning, shall form a part of the capital of said bank."<sup>14</sup> The governor of the state and the

president and directors of the board were required, "for and in behalf of the state and with a pledge of the public faith and credit, to issue to the trustees of the University of Alabama state stock or certificates of debt bearing an interest of six per cent per annum," for such amounts of the university funds as might be paid over to the bank from time to time, provided that the amount of the university fund so invested should not exceed one hundred thousand dollars.

Dr. W. S. Wyman remarks that—

"This transaction seems to me to have been of the nature of a forced loan. The university was not made a stock holder in the bank, to share in the profits, if profits there should be (and the bank did reap large profits for some ten years or more), but the state borrowed the money from the university and invested it in her bank, issuing therefor to the trustees state stock bearing an interest of six per cent. per annum."

In their third annual report the trustees of the university requested to be allowed to invest more than one hundred thousand dollars provided that a greater amount should be received during the next year, and also requested that they be allowed to invest the interest on the stock that was already in their hands "so that it might not be unproductive in the treasury," subject, however, to be withdrawn at "any time the progress of the institution may require it, a provision to be made to that effect in the certificates of stock issued for interest."

Hence the provision of the charter of the State Bank which limited the investment of university money to one hundred thousand dollars was repealed,<sup>15</sup> and the president of the board was required "to invest in the stock of the State, upon the same terms as the stock has theretofore been invested,"<sup>16</sup> all the money in the state treasury resulting from sales, rents or interest of the university lands.

Up to this time we have viewed in a concise manner the earliest beginnings of the university. The organization of the

administration of the trustees and of the university have been dealt with in as fair a way as the materials at hand permitted. The growth of the interest of the trustees in the university lands and the method of their disposal have been set forth at length, and the manner in which the state took upon herself the right to use the university moneys without making her one of the stockholders, to *receive dividends*, has been shown. We are now prepared to receive the first impressions of the struggles of the trustees in their attempts to induce the legislature to select those lands whose very nature should ordain them as an ideal site for the location of the State University.

Section 12 of the Act of incorporation approved December 17, 1819,<sup>7</sup> provides for the selection of a site for the proposed "seminary of learning" by five commissioners to be selected by joint ballot of the General Assembly.

By joint ballot of both houses, as had been agreed beforehand, on December 29, 1827,<sup>8</sup> upon the recommendation of the board of trustees, the town of Tuscaloosa "situated at the head of navigation on the Black Warrior," was chosen as the seat of the university. A later joint resolution granted permission to the trustees to erect the building within fifteen miles of the site selected.<sup>9</sup>

On March 22, 1828, it was decided that the university should be definitely located. When the board convened and the session was opened to nominations for the site, it was found that three places were submitted, Marr's Field, the Childress' place and Faber's Place, each one answering the requirements as to location, fertility of soil and health conditions. After balloting, Marr's Field received seven votes, Childress' place and Faber's Place receiving two each, whereupon Marr's Field was declared the site selected.

Marr's Field, formerly called Marr's Spring, was part of a level plateau, situated about a mile and a quarter from the town of Tuscaloosa proper, and on the Huntsville Road. It may be interesting to add that it was part of the land originally granted by Congress to the institution.

### **The Buildings**

With the selection of the site for the university, it devolved upon Captain William Nichols, State Architect, to submit estimates to the president of the board of trustees. This estimate was presented on March 24, 1828, for two blocks of dormitories, one block of professors' houses, a chemical laboratory and lecture rooms.

After the plans were submitted for the university buildings, a committee consisting of Messrs. Field, Shackelford, Phillips and Morton was appointed to contract for the erection of the university buildings. The subsequent report of this committee setting forth at length the contracts made will be found in the appendix to this paper.

Adjoining the land selected as a site for the university buildings was a section containing fifty acres. In order to prevent "immoral persons from settling on the same," and to be able to use the "superior quality of the clay for making the bricks for the buildings," and to use the immense quantity of brush wood which was on this land for burning the bricks, a resolution was adopted providing for the purchase of this tract of fifty acres, for the sum of twenty-five dollars an acre, from its owner, James Paul. The price paid was twelve hundred and fifty dollars.

With this addition to the land already owned, a tract of about 86 acres was held for the university grounds. The high road from Tuscaloosa to Huntsville ran through them, making two nearly equal divisions.

The plan for the buildings as submitted by the state architect is not preserved. There are, however, several records which describe how they were located. There were four blocks of houses marked A, B, C, D, on the plan, six blocks of dormitories marked E, F, G, H, I, J, K, a principal building for public lectures, commencement hall, library, etc., marked L, also a building for the chemical laboratory and lectures, marked M, and two "hotels" which were marked N and O. The estimate appended reckoned the cost of the buildings at

\$56,000.00, ten thousand of which would be required the first year, between twenty and thirty thousand the second year, and the remainder during the third year. At an early session of the legislature, "the sum of fifty thousand dollars was appropriated from the first payments of the lands sold for the erection of necessary buildings." By a resolution of the trustees, fifteen thousand dollars was appropriated to be used by the building committee.

When completed, the plan of the university resembled a square. As has been stated, the Huntsville Road divided the "Lands" into two almost equal divisions. "The southern division was inclosed and was occupied partly by a vineyard and partly by fruit trees." It was intended that this land should be used for an experiment farm. The buildings of the university were situated on the northern division; and they, too, were inclosed.

On the northern side, near the centre, was situated the laboratory, or principal building for instruction. This edifice was two stories in height, with a large portico in front and six Ionic columns. It was forty-five feet in breadth and ran back seventy-five feet. The interior consisted of six apartments. Three rooms were on the ground floor, the chief of which was the theatre, to be used for lectures on chemistry, etc. The upper floor, which was reached by two "handsome" flights of staircases, one on each side of the lobby, consisted of three large apartments, each containing a fireplace.

Immediately west of the laboratory were two buildings, so constructed as to accommodate two families. These houses were intended for the members of the faculty. A one-story hall to be used as a recitation room was situated between these buildings. The professors' houses were each three stories in height, and each had six apartments and a kitchen, besides outbuildings for their use.

Facing each other, one on the east and one on the west side were two buildings of equal dimensions, known as "colleges." These buildings were the dormitories of the institution. They were three stories in height, ninety-eight feet long

from north to south, and thirty-six feet wide. They both contained thirty-six rooms, calculated to accommodate forty-eight pupils. Twelve compartments were provided, with three rooms each—a sitting-room and two bedrooms, four students being thereby accommodated. Beneath were cellars for the storage of fuel.

“The Hotel” of the institution was a handsome two-story building presided over by a steward. On the ground floor was the dining hall, a room fifty-five feet long and twenty-two feet in breadth, paved with brick. In the rear of this were two storage rooms for the cooking utensils and supplies. The kitchen was situated near the “Hotel” and was well constituted for its purpose.

One of the finest buildings of its type in the South, and the principal one of the university buildings, was the rotunda. This building was three stories in height, was circular as its name imports, and was surrounded by twenty-four columns. It was divided into three compartments, one above and one below. The ground floor was to be used as a commencement hall, the second story was the gallery of the auditorium, and the library was to be located in the one above. With great taste and style, the rotunda was placed in the center of the area.

The above description has been attempted in order that the respective locations of the buildings of the university, before it was destroyed by fire in 1865, may be known. The buildings described formed, however, only a part of the original plan as set forth by the state architect, Captain William Nichols, by which the board meant to guide themselves in the future improvements which were to be made.

Besides the buildings already described, the plan of the trustees included “two additional buildings for professors, on the east side of the laboratory,” and one “Hotel” on the same side, to be uniform both in style and distance, with small buildings to the west. “To the south, also, of the present dormitories it is contemplated at a future period to erect four or more additional ones on the east and west sides, of uniform

appearance with those already put up; and next the high road on the southern line, which is at present open, may be erected buildings to correspond with those on the north line; which erections are necessary in the event of a Medical Department being founded at the university. Thus a uniform plan will be constantly attended to, and every new building as it is got up, will fit its place according to the original idea of the architect."

### **The President and the Faculty**

While the university buildings were under construction, the board of trustees was busy securing a faculty and determining the courses of study.

The committee of the trustees appointed to determine the number of professors and what courses should be taught, reported—

"That in their opinion it will be proper to commence the course of instruction in this institution with four professors, one of whom shall be appointed to preside over the faculty—that it will be proper in the selection of such professors to have particular regard to their qualifications for teaching the following branches of literature and science, viz:

"1. Ancient languages, including the higher grade of Latin and Greek Languages; ancient and modern History, Geography, Ancient and Modern, with the use of the Globes, to be assisted by a tutor.

"2. Mathematics and Natural Philosophy, including the higher branches of Numerical Arithmetic, Algebra, Trigonometry, Plane and Spherical Geometry, Mensuration, Navigation, Conic Sections, Fluxions or Differentials, Mechanics, Statics, Hydrostatics, Hydraulics, Pneumatics, Acoustics, Optics, and Astronomy—to be assisted by a Mathematical tutor.

"3. Natural History, including Botany, Zoology, Mineralogy, Chemistry, and Geology with the application of chemistry to the arts and agriculture.

"4. Moral Philosophy, including mental science generally, Belles-lettres, Logic, Rhetoric, and Political Economy."

The salaries of the professors first appointed were to be \$1500.00 each, but certain fees were authorized which would bring the salaries up to \$2000.00. The salaries of tutors and assistants were to be \$1000.00 per annum. The professors first elected were John Fielding Wallis, Professor of Natural History, etc., designated as the Third Chair, and Reverend William Hooper, Professor of Ancient Languages, designated as the First Chair. Mr. P. P. Ashe was elected steward.

A resolution was offered January 7, 1830, by Mr. Field, that ..... thousand dollars, afterwards determined at ten thousand, should be appropriated for the purchase of a library and philosophical apparatus,

"for the use of the University, and that the president of the university be requested to proceed to the northern states, or to Europe, for the purpose of purchasing the same as early as possible, and further, that the president of this board be requested to solicit our senators and representatives in congress to use their best exertions for the passage of a law authorizing the said library and philosophical apparatus, if purchased in Europe, to be imported free of duties."

At a later meeting of the Board, Dr. Phillips Lindsley was appointed Professor of Moral Philosophy, which was designated as the Fourth Chair, and Dr. Guidon Saltonstall, Professor of Mathematics, the Second Chair, while Dr. William A. King was elected adjunct Professor of Chemistry.

A proposition was submitted to the trustees by Prof. Wallis, who was traveling abroad, to examine the laboratories



of London and Paris, and his communication was referred to the library committee.

The following is their report thereon, illustrating the technical attitude of the board:

“The proposition from said Wallis to visit and examine the chemical laboratories of London and Paris and also to purchase a chemical apparatus for the university have had the same under consideration and instructed me to report that in their opinion Mr. Wallis should have leave of absence for the purpose of making said visit and examination—but that inasmuch as the several duties of purchasing a library and philosophical and chemical apparatus could all be performed by one person and would more properly devolve upon one person—and would more properly devolve upon the president of the faculty—it is inexpedient to authorize Mr. Wallis to purchase the chemical apparatus.

“D. COLEMAN, Chr.”

However, it appears that the board later found it expedient to commission Mr. Wallis to secure the apparatus and library for the university, and it therefore passed this resolution:

“Resolved by the president and trustees of the University of Alabama, that ten thousand dollars of the funds appropriated at the last meeting of this board for the purchase of a chemical and philosophical apparatus, together with a library, be subject to the order and control of Professor John F. Wallis of this University, for the purpose of making purchase of a philosophical and chemical apparatus, and if he shall deem it expedient to do so, he is authorized to visit Europe and remain there until July next for the purposes aforesaid.”

The trustees also busied themselves in working out a plan for the admission of students, as the committee report below will indicate. The scheme devised appears compli-

cated, and it is not known whether it was ever put into operation. The report follows:

"The committee on university regulations who were instructed by a resolution of this board to report a plan for the admission from the different counties in this state in proportion to the white population in each county of as many students as the funds of this institution will educate free of charge or expenses for board or tuition have had the same under consideration and ask leave to report:—

"That in the opinion of your committee a plan of institution on the principles contemplated by the resolution submitted to them embracing the youth of all classes in the state is highly important, that if it can be devised and put into operation—no exertion should be spared by the public authorities in its introduction and perfection—your committee are of opinion that by the appointment of school commissioners in each county or district in the state, whose duty it should be at stated period to examine and class the youth in their respective districts, and place as candidates for admission into this institution, all who have learned to read, write, and understand the fundamental rules of arithmetic well—this important object will have been properly commenced and that whenever such examinations and classifications are made, the names of all boys above fourteen years of age so classed shall be entered in a book by the school commissioner, and be—for the purpose from which shall be drawn by lot the names of as many boys as the respective districts may be entitled to find according to the white population thereof, who shall be received into the University, and educated at the public charge, free of any expense whatever.

"Your committee have not had time to bestow such reflection upon this subject as its importance deserved, but are of opinion that the plan here proposed or one based upon similar principles, would stimulate the parents in all classes of society, to give their children such

education as would prepare them for admission into the university—that it would induce the people in every section of the State to feel a lively interest in its prosperity—make the institution a blessing to the whole state, by diffusing its benefits to every part—and finally would make it what its name emphatically imports—the University of Alabama.”

Upon the refusal of Dr. Phillip Lindsley, a distinguished Presbyterian divine, and president of the University of Nashville, Tennessee, to accept the presidency and the professorship of Moral Philosophy, the Reverend Alva Woods, president of Transylvania University, Kentucky, was elected in his stead, receiving the entire vote of the board.

The Reverend William Hooper had been selected to fill the chair of Ancient Languages. On his failure to accept, Mr. Henry Tutwiler was elected to the vacancy.

Believing that a museum would be of great use to the students as well as to the state at large, the board secured the services of a Mr. McMillan, a naturalist, “to collect and prepare specimens of natural history.” It was also made his duty to carry on a “system of exchange with foreign institutions.”

### **The Opening**

The board of trustees has been organized, the site selected, the buildings contracted for, and the faculty organized and anxious to enter upon their work. It now remains to give the story of the opening and of the inauguration of Dr. Woods as president.

At 11 a. m. on Tuesday, April 12, 1831, Dr. Alva Woods was installed as president of the university. The services were held in the Episcopal church in Tuscaloosa, in the presence of a large audience composed of the trustees and professors, members of the State Legislature, members of Congress, the city authorities, members of the bar, and others. The members of the board of trustees present on this occasion were, His Excellency the Governor, Samuel B. Moore, *ex-officio*

President; John B. Hogan, S. W. Mardis, George Phillips, R. B. Walthall, George Starr, Ptolemy T. Harris, David Hubbard, William Richardson, Jesse W. Garth, William Acklin, William Hemphill, John Gindrat, Quin Morton and John C. Kirkpatrick.

The following account of the inauguration is taken from *The Spirit of the Age*, published in Tuscaloosa, under the date of April 16, 1831:

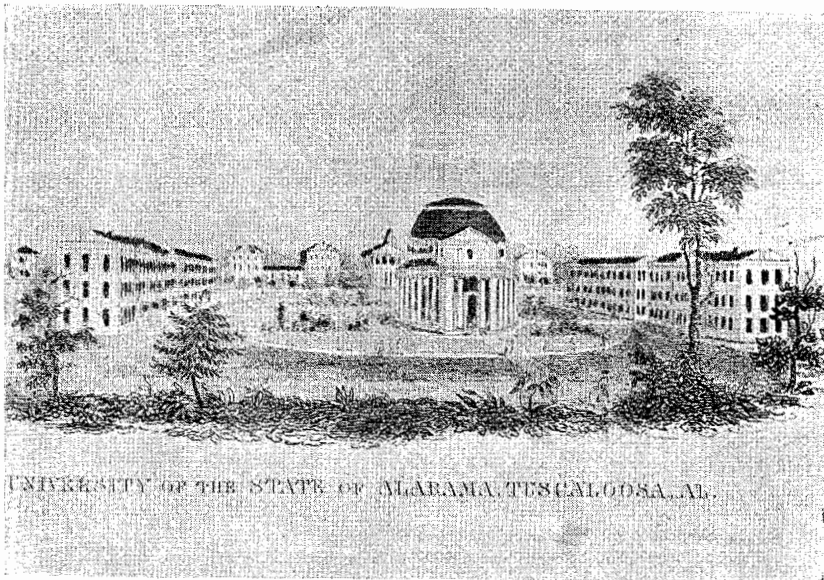
"It was an interesting day to the people of Tuscaloosa and other citizens of the state who were present. After singing and music from the organ and by the choir, and an appropriate prayer by the Rev. A. A. Muller, rector of the church, the president-elect of the University was addressed by Hon. Samuel B. Moore, Governor of the State and president of the board of trustees. The address was neat, brief, sensible and to the purpose. He concluded by delivering President Woods the keys to the University, thereby investing him with the office and all its rights and privileges.

"President Woods then delivered his inaugural address. The leading subject of the discourse was the importance of learning and knowledge to the safety, liberty, prosperity, and moral and religious improvement of man."

"In the progress of the discourse the speaker addressed the board of trustees in particular, and among other things reminded them of the importance of husbanding the resources of the institution, and regarding them as sacred to the cause of learning and the diffusion of knowledge."

On the first day there were only thirty-five boys present, and as the college was in need of a roll, every one who applied was admitted regardless of his acquirements. There were, however, about ninety-five enrolled when the session closed.

Six of those who were admitted were ranked as juniors; A. B. Meek, Marion Banks, George D. Shortridge, William W. King, John G. Davenport and R. B. McMullen, and to these were afterward added Frank Bouchelle. About twelve were found proficient enough to be classed as sophomores, while the rest were classed as promiscuous preps. A short time later, upon the arrival of John A. Nooe, a senior class was organized.



The examinations for admittance were conducted by Professors Henry Tutwiler and Gordon Saltonstall. The ceremonies were very simple, on account of the facts that the president was detained, winding up some business at Transylvania University, and that the other professors had not yet taken their chairs. It consisted in merely handing in the name and age, and sitting a little while on the examination benches.

Several months later, Reverend Henry W. Hilliard was elected to the chair of Elocution and English Literature, which had just been established.

Monday, August 9, 1832, saw John A. Nooe go forth as the first graduate of the university.

In 1834 all the college buildings were completed at a cost of more than \$100,000.

### Foot-Notes

<sup>1</sup> A significance, deep and important, attaches to all beginnings. This is particularly true with institutions. The University of Alabama has a history as old as the history of the State as a commonwealth. The story of its genesis cannot be without interest. That interest ought to be felt alike both by her sons and by all the people of the State.

The materials for that story are not extensive. Fortunately, a musty old leather-bound manuscript folio is preserved in the Alabama State Department of Archives and History, Montgomery, in which is to be found a full record of the proceedings of the board of trustees from its first session in 1822 to 1832, throughout the entire period covered by this study. It is entitled *Journal of the Proceedings of the board of trustees of the University of Alabama*, and is excellently preserved.

In 1889, Willis G. Clark of Mobile, long one of the most honored trustees of the University, published a *History of Education in Alabama*, as one of the *Circulars of Information* of the U. S. Bureau of Education. This very valuable study is more largely devoted to the history of the university than to any other phase of the educational development of Alabama. But the author evidently did not have access to the manuscript volume above referred to. However, full use has been made of Mr. Clark's path-breaking contribution to our educational history.

Where no authorities are cited in the notes, the information is always to be understood as taken from the manuscript *Journal* of the board of trustees.

Grateful acknowledgement is made to my father, the late Dr. Thomas M. Owen, Director of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History, 1901-1920, who not only suggested the preparation of this paper, but who aided me greatly by helpful and constructive criticism and suggestions.

<sup>2</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1819, pp. 60-64.

<sup>3</sup> *Senate Journal*, 1819-1820, pp. 55-56.

<sup>4</sup> See, also, *Clark*, p. 32.

<sup>5</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1821, Dec. 18, 1821, pp. 3-8.

<sup>6</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1821, pp. 3-8.

<sup>7</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1821, p. 5.

<sup>8</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1821, p. 6.

<sup>9</sup> Clark—*History of Education in Alabama*, pp. 32-34.

<sup>10</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1825-26, p. 3.

<sup>11</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1823, p. 3-11.

<sup>12</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1823, pp. 47-48.

<sup>13</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1848, pp. 137-138.

<sup>14</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1823, p. 3.

<sup>15</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1826, Jan. 13, 1827, p. 115.

<sup>16</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1828, Jan. 15, 1828, p. 158.

<sup>17</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1819, pp. 160-164.

<sup>18</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1827, p. 10.

<sup>19</sup> *Acts of Alabama*, 1828, p. 166.

## CHARLES TEED POLLARD INDUSTRIALIST

By MILDRED BEALE

(This installment concludes Miss Beale's biography of Colonel Charles T. Pollard.)

### Chapter III

#### Other Business Endeavors and Public Services

Charles Teed Pollard was a man of unusual business foresight. While he made railroads his leading business, he did not overlook other opportunities. When he first came to Montgomery, he engaged in merchandising with Alex Bell and in the storage business with F. M. Gilmer.<sup>1</sup> Possessing a keen business sense, he invested in various enterprises.

In 1846, the people of Montgomery engaged extensively in hotel building, the Madison House, the Dexter House and the Exchange Hotel being constructed at the same time.<sup>2</sup> Pollard was associated with the company that erected the Exchange Hotel.<sup>3</sup> This hotel stands today as the leading one in Montgomery, and few have had a higher reputation or better management. Pollard was interested in other projects in Montgomery, and practically owned one of the theatres.<sup>4</sup>

Encouraged by Professor Michael Tuomy's geological surveys and other factors, Alabamians began to invest in the mineral industries during the last two or three years prior to the Civil War. Pollard, always alive to business possibilities, availed himself of some of the opportunities which metal manufacturing offered. He and other Montgomerians organized the Montgomery Copper Mining Company at Talladega.<sup>5</sup> This

---

<sup>1</sup> Facts furnished by Mrs. Samuel Marks: *Alabama Journal*, October 7, 1840.

<sup>2</sup> Blue, M. P., *City Directory and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, pages 31, 32.

<sup>3</sup> Blue, M. P., *City Directory and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, pages 31, 32.

<sup>4</sup> Facts furnished by Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

<sup>5</sup> Screws, W. W., "Story of Montgomery Railroads," *Montgomery Advertiser*,

company furnished the Confederate government with a large amount of sulphur during the war. Pollard was instrumental in establishing the Chewacia Lime Works at Youngsboro, Alabama.<sup>6</sup> The quality of the lime manufactured by this company was of such superior grade that it drove other companies from the Alabama market.<sup>7</sup> In connection with manufacturing, Pollard occupied the position of secretary and treasurer with the Tallassee Company.<sup>8</sup>

Though Pollard was interested in making a success in the business world, he engaged in some enterprises for the betterment of Montgomery as well as for the pecuniary gain which he derived from them. He accumulated wealth from various enterprises and always stood ready to use it for the advancement of his own home town. He erected the first gas plant in Montgomery, and due to this the city was lighted by gas on February 8, 1854.<sup>9</sup> Only the stores were illuminated at this time, for due to a disastrous loss of a shipment of coal and other necessary materials, the company could not put the street lights in operation. In addition to establishing Montgomery's first gas company, Pollard used his means and initiative for building the city's first ice factory.<sup>10</sup>

Pollard's numerous and existing business involvements never commanded his undivided attention. When Montgomery needed something that he could give, he always actively interested himself with public affairs of the city. In January, 1846, the General Assembly (legislature) took up the question of removing the state capital, a recent amendment to the constitution having invested it with the power to remove it.<sup>11</sup> Every ambitious town in the state, no matter how small

December 16, 1906.

<sup>6</sup> Screws, W. W., "Story of Montgomery Railroads," *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>7</sup> Screws, W. W., "Story of Montgomery Railroads," *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.

<sup>8</sup> Facts furnished by Dr. C. T. Pollard of Montgomery, Alabama, grandson of Colonel Pollard.

<sup>9</sup> *Alabama Weekly Journal*, February 11, 1854.

<sup>10</sup> *Selma Times-Journal*, November 2, 1927.

<sup>11</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 8.



and insignificant, coveted the honor. Eight towns bid for it, but the contest finally narrowed down to three, Montgomery, Tuscaloosa and Wetumpka.<sup>12</sup> Keen competition developed among these three thriving little towns. Montgomery offered the inducement of erecting the State house out of its resources. This, added to her superior claims, due to her location, helped to decide the issue, and on the sixteenth ballot Montgomery was chosen as the future home of the state capital.<sup>13</sup> On the night of January 30, 1846, the glad news reached Montgomery via the Selma stage. There was excitement and rejoicing the like of which had not occurred before in the little city. After thirty years the prophecy of Andrew Dexter, the founder of Montgomery, that it would some day be the capital of the state, had come true.<sup>14</sup>

The mayor of the city, Perez Coleman, called a mass meeting of the citizens to be held at the court house to consider the matter of financing the removal of the capital.<sup>15</sup> The chairman of the meeting, A. J. Pickett, appointed Charles Pollard chairman of the committee to devise a plan for raising the \$75,000 necessary for the building of the new capitol.<sup>16</sup> At Pollard's suggestion the city issued \$75,000 worth of bonds.<sup>17</sup> The enthusiastic capitalists and citizens of Montgomery came forward and bought up the entire issue.<sup>18</sup> Pollard was also appointed chairman of the building committee.<sup>19</sup> The plan for the building was drawn by Stephen D. Button, and the contract for the construction of the building was let to B. F. Robinson and R. N. R. Bardwell.<sup>20</sup> In October of 1847, the mayor of Montgomery, Nimrod E. Benson, informed the Secretary of State that the new capitol was completed.<sup>21</sup> He came to Montgomery on November 1, to take possession of the new building in the name of the state. When he arrived

---

<sup>12</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 9.

<sup>13</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 10.

<sup>14</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 10.

<sup>15</sup> Pickett Scrapbook.

<sup>16</sup> Pickett Scrapbook.

<sup>17</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 10.

<sup>18</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 10.

<sup>19</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 11.

<sup>20</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 10.

<sup>21</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 11.

in the city the new state house was turned over to him by Mayor Benson and Charles Pollard.<sup>22</sup> The necessary formalities were completed and Montgomery was declared the seat of government for the State of Alabama. Pollard, as chairman of the building committee, due to his fine sense of values and business integrity, succeeded in constructing the building with the funds allotted.<sup>23</sup>

Although Pollard was a tremendously busy man, he found time to take an active part in the affairs of his church. He aided the church in founding a school for girls and a university. For many years there had been more or less agitation within the ranks of the Episcopal church in Alabama to found a school for girls. Bishop Nicholas Hamner Cobbs worked untiringly to establish such a school, but not until three months before his death was his ideal realized.<sup>24</sup> Several efforts were made toward founding such a school, but each in turn was frustrated. In the Dioscesan Convention of 1867, the Bishop, in his address, urged the assembly to give the matter of a Dioscesan school for girls their most earnest and sincere consideration, and further urged that some immediate action be taken. This was referred to a committee of five on which Pollard served. After a favorable report from this committee, steps were taken for establishing the school.<sup>25</sup>

It was decided that the previous attempts had failed because the school had been located in small towns where day students were scarce. After some discussion, it was agreed to erect the institution in Montgomery. Consequently, ten acres of land lying west of the city were purchased for the purpose at \$6,000. Most of the money was raised in Montgomery by popular subscription. This little city further offered to raise \$20,000 for erecting suitable buildings, provided that the rest of the Diocese would raise an equal amount. The school was opened in October, 1860, under the name of the Female Seminary, with Reverend T. Avery Shepherd,

---

<sup>22</sup> Simpson, James B., *Alabama State Capital*, page 11.

<sup>23</sup> *Montgomery Advertiser*, January 11, 1883.

<sup>24</sup> Whitaker, Walter C., *The Church in Alabama*, page 105.

<sup>25</sup> Whitaker, Walter C., *The Church in Alabama*, page 109.

Principal. The board of trustees consisted of Dr. T. B. Taylor, Charles Teed Pollard, Samuel G. Jones, and Reverend J. M. Mitchell.<sup>26</sup>

Pollard played a conspicuous part in the founding of an Episcopal university in the South. When the Episcopal church in 1857 called a meeting at Lookout Mountain for the purpose of conferring upon the subject of establishing a university under its auspices, Pollard was a delegate.<sup>27</sup> The conference assembled July 4, 1857, and after due consideration of the matter, issued a declaration to the church at large asking for assistance in building the proposed university. Pollard was one of the signers of this declaration.<sup>28</sup> He contributed a part of his wealth toward establishing the University of the South at Sewanee, Tennessee, and he was a member of the first board of trustees and served in that capacity for a number of years.<sup>29</sup> One of the meetings of the board was held at Pollard's home in Montgomery in 1867.<sup>30</sup>

Montgomery is indebted to Charles Teed Pollard for a great amount of her prosperity.<sup>31</sup> Pollard obtained prominence in Montgomery both for his commercial achievements and for his many public services. In fact, he was connected actively with every worthwhile public project in the city. The *Advertiser and State Gazette* of January 5, 1852, announced a splendid compliment that had been paid him as a leading citizen of Montgomery and of Alabama. It observed:

"His Excellency, H. W. Collier, has appointed the following gentlemen each to have the title of Colonel, to-wit:

Charles T. Pollard, Montgomery.

---

<sup>26</sup> Whitaker, Walter C., *The Church in Alabama*, pages 110, 111.

<sup>27</sup> Facts obtained from B. F. Finney, Vice-Chancellor of the University of the South, taken from the *Records of the University of the South*.

<sup>28</sup> Facts obtained from B. F. Finney, Vice-Chancellor of the University of the South, taken from the *Records of the University of the South*.

<sup>29</sup> *Selma Times-Journal*, November 2, 1927.

<sup>30</sup> Facts obtained from B. F. Finney, Vice-Chancellor of the University of the South.

<sup>31</sup> Garrett, William, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Alabama*, page 382.

James W. Hudgins, Jackson.  
Richard H. Powell, Macon.  
William W. Houghton, Marengo.”

It will not be questioned that Colonel Pollard was one of Montgomery's most progressive, intelligent and useful citizens.

## Chapter IV

### The Man

Colonel Charles Teed Pollard enjoyed the rare privilege of being fully esteemed by his fellowtownsmen. The people of Montgomery realized and appreciated the greatness of the man. Possessing by nature a lovable character, he attracted both old and young to him. Even though he was austere in his bearing, no child was afraid of him. Besides the children of his own household, the neighbors' children played about his home and delighted in a kind word or friendly pat from the old gentleman.

Colonel Pollard's home on the corner of Jefferson and North Lawrence Streets, occupying almost a city square, was the center of social activity in Montgomery. Every visitor of any degree of prominence who came to the capital city was entertained in the Pollard home.<sup>32</sup> The very semblance of the mansion bespoke all that was fine in ante-bellum life. Its large white columns and broad veranda bring to the mind a picture of bygone days, the ante-bellum days when Southern society and culture commanded attention throughout the world. Everyone was welcome in the Pollard home. Colonel Pollard's relatives and friends came and spent not days or weeks, but months and years.<sup>33</sup> His home was especially the rendezvous for young people, as they always found something there to interest them. In the Pollard home the traditional Southern hospitality found its finest expression.

<sup>32</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. S. B. Marks, Jr.

<sup>33</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

Colonel Pollard also owned a large country home at Robinson Springs, where the family spent their summers.<sup>34</sup> He so loved this beautiful old home that he spent there as much time as possible, driving in every morning to his work and returning at evening to enjoy the cool and quiet of the place with his family.

Colonel Pollard had six children: Betsy (Mrs. Paul Lee), Joseph, John, Clara (Mrs. W. R. C. Cocke), Charles Teed, and Robert.<sup>35</sup> At the age of thirty-six, when her youngest son, Robert, was born, Mrs. Pollard lost her sight.<sup>36</sup> Therefore, Mrs. Paul Lee, at this time a widow, presided over her father's household. Colonel Pollard's care and tenderness for his wife was beautiful. He devoted himself to administering to her slightest wish. They lived the happiest of married lives and celebrated their golden wedding anniversary in 1885. The vestry of St. John's Church had portraits made of the old couple and presented to them in honor of the occasion.<sup>37</sup>

When the War Between the States came, Colonel Pollard threw himself wholeheartedly into the struggle for his state. He was too old to bear arms, but he gave three of his sons to the Confederate army. One of them, Joseph, the oldest, lost his life in the battle of Murphreesboro.<sup>38</sup> Moreover, he gave liberally of his time and means to the Confederacy. He served in the capacity of the Commissary Manager for the State of Alabama and invested heavily in Confederate bonds, going so far as to mortgage his property to raise money to assist the Confederate Government.<sup>39</sup> Colonel Pollard had been a hard working and successful business man and had accumulated a vast amount of wealth. He did not hesitate to sacrifice it all for the cause for which his sons were fighting. At the close of the conflict, his fortune, like many an-

---

<sup>34</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. S. B. Marks, Jr.

<sup>35</sup> Pollard Scrapbook.

<sup>36</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

<sup>37</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

<sup>38</sup> Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography* Vol. V, page 1373.

<sup>39</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

other in the South, was gone. Much had been lost in public enterprises and Confederate bonds, but a large amount of his capital had been dispensed freely to give relief to the families of soldiers who were sick and wounded.<sup>40</sup> Much of his property was destroyed by the fortunes of war, and he lost, of course, his investment in slaves. At the outbreak of the War, Colonel Pollard was a large slave owner, though he had freed some of his slaves.<sup>41</sup> He never bemoaned his loss, but turned his eyes to the future and set himself resolutely to accumulating a second fortune.

During the hard years that followed the war, Colonel Pollard became involved in financial difficulties that made it necessary for him to sell his magnificent home on Jefferson Street. He moved to Youngsboro, Alabama, thinking he could live there more economically, but finding this impossible, after a few years he returned to Montgomery.<sup>42</sup>

Colonel Pollard was a devoted Christian. He was a member of the Episcopal church and served it in various capacities throughout the long years of his connection with it. He was one of the Episcopaleans who, on January 9, 1834, organized themselves into the congregation of St. John's Episcopal church and undertook the large task of erecting a church edifice.<sup>43</sup> Until the church was built, the Baptists were kind enough to let the congregation hold services in their church. The members of the Episcopal church had called Reverend William Johnson to the rectorship of the young church. Pollard served on the committee of three to solicit donations for the rector's salary.<sup>44</sup> He was also on the committee of four constituted to raise funds for the erection of the church.<sup>45</sup> Soon after the church was erected, he was elected one of the vestrymen of St. John's.<sup>46</sup> He served until 1844 in this capacity and on that date was elected senior warden of St. John's

<sup>40</sup> *Daily Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.

<sup>41</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

<sup>42</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. S. B. Marks, Jr.

<sup>43</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 37.

<sup>44</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 38.

<sup>45</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 38.

<sup>46</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 39.

Episcopal church.<sup>47</sup> The building committee worked unceasingly and in 1838 the church was dedicated and consecrated by Bishop Jackson Kemple.<sup>48</sup> This was the first brick church erected in the city of Montgomery.<sup>49</sup> At a meeting of the vestrymen on April 25, 1852, a resolution was passed which provided that due to the inadequate size of the church, a new one should be built just as soon as the necessary means could be procured.<sup>50</sup> The time had come again to appoint another building committee for the Episcopal Church in Montgomery and again Colonel Pollard was placed on it.<sup>51</sup> He was also placed on the committee of two "to prepare or obtain a plan for the new church, with the probable estimate of the cost."<sup>52</sup> Due to the efficient work of the committee and the cooperation of the members of the church, it was brought to completion in a little over three years, and was consecrated by Bishop Nicholas Hamner Cobbs on December 2, 1855.<sup>53</sup> St. John's church is one of the most beautiful churches in the South, both in its interior arrangement and decoration. This edifice will stand as a lasting monument to Charles Teed Pollard, one of her noblest servants, who contributed a vast amount of work toward the actual erection of the church building and served it in the finest way throughout his long

"Their works do follow them  
 In Memoriam  
 Charles Teed Pollard  
 For forty-one years senior warden  
 St. John's Church  
 Entered into rest January 10, 1888  
 In the eighty-third year of his age.  
 We give Thee hearty thanks for the  
 good example of this Thy servant  
 who having finished his course  
 in faith now rests from his labors."

<sup>47</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 41.

<sup>48</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 40.

<sup>49</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 40.

<sup>50</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 41.

<sup>51</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 42.

<sup>52</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 42.

<sup>53</sup> Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, page 42.

and useful life. A tablet has been placed to the memory of Colonel Pollard in St. John's, which bears the following inscription:

The *Records of the Diocese of Alabama* show that Charles Pollard represented St. John's Church at many of the conventions, at all times taking an active and prominent place in the meetings, serving on committees, and working for the best of the church. Walter C. Whitaker lists him with five others as the strongest pillars of the Diocese to which:

"The Church in Alabama owes its present spiritual, Theological, and financial ability to ride out the storms and distresses that assail it from time to time."<sup>54</sup>

Few men have possessed a keener sense of business than did Charles Pollard. His probity in his commercial relations enabled him to command the respect of all with whom he came in contact. He was easily recognized as a "commercial genius", possessing the faculty of weighing each element in a situation and then by his fineness of perception selecting the proper method of conducting an enterprise through to completion.<sup>55</sup> Large commercial enterprises were in their initial stages in the eighteen thirties and it required a vast amount of skill and sagacity to manage them. Men often grow under compelling circumstances and when one is naturally endowed with capability, as Colonel Pollard was, one's development is phenomenal.<sup>56</sup> He reached the very pinnacle of success. He made for himself a legitimate fortune and gave freely of it to every worthy cause. One of his granddaughters said to him one day that she thought many people showed ingratitude toward him. His reply was, "My child, I never did anything for gratitude. I gave because it was a pleasure to give and my duty to give. No one owes me anything."<sup>57</sup>

Prior to 1830 the outstanding men became statesmen as that channel furnished them a means for expressing their

<sup>54</sup> *The Church in Alabama*, page 302.

<sup>55</sup> Riley, B. F., *Makers and Romance of Alabama History*, page 159.

<sup>56</sup> Riley, B. F., *Makers and Romance of Alabama History*, page 157.

<sup>57</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.



ideas and feelings. In answer to the growing demand of industry, many turned to the commercial field rather than to the political arena. Colonel Pollard was one of those who turned his talents to the management of business concerns and steadfastly refused to enter the game of politics.<sup>58</sup> Had he desired to hold office, the highest was within his reach, and he would have creditably filled any office which the people could have bestowed upon him.<sup>59</sup> He refused to allow his name to be used in any public way. Though he scorned office seeking, he was constantly alive to the best interests of his community and state and represented them in many assemblies and conventions.<sup>60</sup> Indeed, Colonel Pollard was a "model citizen", always eager to assist any project or undertaking which promoted public welfare, and in all capacities he served in the most admirable way. Wherever he went and whatever he did, it was plainly seen that he was a "man among men".<sup>61</sup>

His honesty in his business dealings attracted to him a wide circle of men of means. Thus, when necessary, he could command capital in both the United States and Europe.<sup>62</sup> Once his word was given, it was never broken and it was literally his bond. When banks and many other enterprises were being shipwrecked by financial storms, Colonel Pollard was able to surmount the difficulties and safely pilot his undertakings through.<sup>63</sup> The late Dr. B. F. Riley has said of him:

"To know this giant king of finance was to confide in him, his judgment was as clear as amber, his power of adjustment in management of vast concerns phenomenal, his skill in execution rare, his bearing that of one conscious of power, his courtesy toward his peers and subordinates always respectful, and his integrity unquestioned."<sup>64</sup>

<sup>58</sup> Riley, B. F., *Makers and Romance of Alabama History*, pages 157, 158.

<sup>59</sup> *Daily Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.

<sup>60</sup> *Daily Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.

<sup>61</sup> *Daily Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.

<sup>62</sup> Garrett, William, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Alabama*, page 382.

<sup>63</sup> Garrett, William, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Alabama*, page 382.

<sup>64</sup> *Makers and Romance of Alabama History*, page 159.

Colonel Pollard could turn from one weighty concern to another with ease and facility. No matter how many stupendous undertakings crowded upon him, he always possessed a serenity and a poise which would have been an impossibility to one who did not have boundless courage, a good philosophy, and a noble character. His uniform courtesy to his peers and subordinates endeared him to the hearts of all.<sup>65</sup> No matter how perplexed he may have been, Colonel Pollard moved along in his quiet, gentle way. It is with pleasure that his subordinates remember his thoughtful acts of courtesy and his politeness. "And thus he bore without abuse the grand old name of Gentleman."<sup>66</sup>

Colonel Pollard refused to allow his family to have railroad passes except on rare occasions. Though he practically owned one of the theatres in Montgomery, he would not accept a pass or let his family have one.<sup>67</sup> He is said to have been generous with his children, but he did not want them to get the habit of self-indulgence, and he probably felt that it would be unfair to his fellow-stockholders if he allowed them to use passes freely.

Colonel Pollard was a handsome man. His face was frank and open and every feature invited confidence and trust.<sup>68</sup> This confidence once given was never betrayed. His countenance was the index of his soul. He was a God-loving man who lived without fear and without reproach, at all times measuring up in every way to his religious convictions. He lived a blameless, pure, humble Christian life. The example of his life has been a triumph; he was devoted to his family and friends, he enjoyed social life, he reached the pinnacle of commercial success, and he was in the truest sense a Christian gentleman.

Colonel Pollard wrote in his eighty-second year:

"I look upon my long life, and though I have been called upon to bear hard trials, the death of my children,

<sup>65</sup> Riley, B. F., *Makers and Romance of Alabama History*, page 159.

<sup>66</sup> Tennyson, Alfred Lord, *In Memoriam*.

<sup>67</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

the loss of my property; I am grateful and thankful to my Heavenly Father for His kindness and mercy to me. I have enjoyed my life, have been very happy, and in my old age have been able to do much to take care of those who are dear to me and are dependent on me."<sup>68</sup>

Colonel Pollard was a man of fine physique and enjoyed excellent health until the last year of his long life. Then he gradually grew weaker till the end came. He was beloved of the rich and mighty and the poor and humble. His colored office boy called every morning to ask about him, during his last illness. When the answer came, "Just a little weaker, Jack," he would lean his head against the wall and shake with sobs.<sup>70</sup> On January 10, 1888, Charles Teed Pollard's long and useful life was ended. The *Daily Advertiser* the next morning bore the notice that Montgomery had lost her "noblest citizen".<sup>71</sup> It went on to observe:

"Montgomery and the State have lost a noble citizen, the church to which he was attached a devoted member, and society at large one who graced any assembly to which he was drawn."<sup>72</sup>

Rarely in American history has a business man been so intensely human as was Colonel Pollard; rarely, indeed, has one exhibited so strong a public spirit and so fine a social conscience. Though he carried day by day business responsibilities that might have made him a cold, social recluse, his exuberant imagination, his human warmth and his large mental horizon saved him from dogged plodding in the narrow channels of bargain driving. These things gave him an intelligent interest in living conditions round about him; they divorced him from the instinct of greed and lifted him above the shabby life of the miser.

---

<sup>68</sup> *Daily Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.

<sup>69</sup> Pollard, C. T., MS., *My Life*.

<sup>70</sup> Facts obtained from Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson.

<sup>71</sup> January 11, 1888.

<sup>72</sup> *Daily Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.

His beautiful family life, the gracious hospitality of his home, his kindly bearing toward persons in all walks of life, the fact that he freed many of his slaves and bought others to prevent family ties from being broken and had some of his slaves confirmed in his church,—these and many other things stamp him as a man of unusual warmth and sentiment.<sup>73</sup>

His public spiritedness is evidenced by his services to the church life of Montgomery and to education, by his active part in the building of a state fair,<sup>74</sup> and in helping Montgomery to procure and provide for the state capitol, and by other unselfish deeds.

Cultured, refined, human, rigidly industrious, sagacious, and astoundingly apt in business, Colonel Pollard was a great asset to Alabama. Some of the fruits of his splendid achievements are being enjoyed by Alabamians today. Colonel Pollard's life is a source of inspiration to all Alabamians who would know both how to make an honorable living and how to live. Alabama will have nothing to fear as it becomes a great industrial state, if its business leaders shall follow the example of Charles Teed Pollard. The sources of soul power and material wealth will be developed and harmonized in the making of a truly great state.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### BOOKS, BULLETINS AND PAMPHLETS.

*Acts of Alabama*, 1830-1833, number 84.

Armes, Ethel, *The Story of Coal and Iron in Alabama*, 1910.

Berney, Saffold, *Hand Book in Alabama*, Birmingham, Roberts & Son, 1878.

Berney, Saffold, *Hand Book of Alabama*, Birmingham, Roberts & Son, 1892.

Blue, M. P., *City Directory and History of Montgomery, Alabama*, Montgomery, Bingham, 1878.

Blue, M. P., *Churches of the City of Montgomery*, Montgomery, Bingham, 1873.

Clarke, T. H., *Memorial Record of Alabama*, v. I. Madison, Wisconsin, Brant & Fuller, 1893.

<sup>73</sup> Facts furnished by Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson; facts furnished by Judge Walter Jones, Montgomery, Alabama.

<sup>74</sup> In 1859, the State Fair Association presented Colonel Pollard with an exquisite silver pitcher, in recognition of his services as first treasurer of the organization. Dr. C. T. Pollard of Montgomery is now in possession of the pitcher.

- Confederate Military History*, v. 7, 1899.
- Cory, Mrs. Chappell, *Origin and Organization of the Ladies Memorial Association in Montgomery, Alabama*.
- Diocese of Alabama 39th Annual Convention, 1870.
- Garrett, William, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Alabama*, Atlanta, Georgia, Plantation, 1872.
- Gilmer, Geo. M., *Georgians*, New York, Appleton.
- Hodgson, Joseph, *Alabama Manual and Statistical Register for 1869*.
- Journal of 28th Annual Convention*, 1859.
- Meade, William, Bishop, *Old Churches and Families of Virginia*, v. I, II, Lippincott, Philadelphia, 1857.
- Moore, A. B., *History of Alabama and Her People*, Chicago and New York, American Historical Society, 1927.
- Owen, Marie Bankhead, *Our State—Alabama*, Birmingham, Birmingham Printing Company, 1927.
- Owen, T. M., *History of Alabama and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, v. II, V. IV, Chicago, Clarke, 1921.
- Pollard, C. T., *MS., My Life*, 1887.
- Pollard Scrapbook.
- Pickett Scrapbook.
- War of the Rebellion, Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies*, Series I, v. LII, Part 2, Washington, Government Printing Office, 1897.
- Riley, B. F., *Makers and Romance of Alabama History*.
- Sims, Annie Noble, *Francis Morgan, an Early Virginia Burgess and Some of His Descendants*, Braid & Hutton, March, 1920.
- Simpson, James, *Alabama State Capitol*, Montgomery, Roemer, 1898.
- Smith, M. H., *Statement made before Alabama Railroad Commission*, Montgomery, 1905.
- Whitaker, W. C., *The Church in Alabama 1863-1891*, Birmingham, Roberts & Son, 1898.

#### PERIODICALS.

- Advertiser*, September 17, 1836.
- Advertiser and State Gazette*, May 7, 1851; January 6, 1852.
- Alabama Journal*, June 10, 1840; October 7, 1840; November 14, 1840; November 18, 1840.
- Clarke County Democrat*, August 18, 1887.
- Dailey Advertiser*, January 11, 1888.
- Phillips, U. B., "Early Railroads in Alabama," *Gulf States Historical Magazine*, March, 1903.
- Screws, W. W., Jr., "The Story of Montgomery Railroads," *Montgomery Advertiser*, December 16, 1906.
- Selma Times-Journal*, November 2, 1927.
- Weekly Alabama Journal*, February 11, 1854.

#### INTERVIEWS AND LETTERS.

- Dr. Charles T. Pollard, Montgomery, Alabama.
- Mrs. Charles T. Pollard, Montgomery, Alabama.
- Mrs. Clara Lee Woodson, Birmingham, Alabama.
- Mrs. Samuel B. Marks, Jr., Montgomery, Alabama.
- Mr. Frank G. Browder, Atlanta, Georgia.
- Mr. B. F. Finney, Sewanee, Tennessee.
- Judge Walter B. Jones, Montgomery, Alabama.

## APPENDIX

## AN ACT

(No. 84.

To incorporate the Montgomery Railroad Company.

Section 1. **Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the State of Alabama in General Assembly convened,** That John Scott, sen. Abner McGehee George E. Matthews, William B. S. Gilmer, Jesse P. Taylor, John W. Freeman, Thomas M. Coles, Andrew Dexter, Thomas James, John Goldthwaite, Charles T. Pollard, William Sayre, Edmund Hanrich, George, Wragg, Benajah S. Bibb, Justice Wyman, Thomas Mays, George Whitman, Francis Bugbee, N. E. Benson, Joseph Hutchison, W. P. Converse, John Martin, P. D. Sayre, C. Hooks, Green Wood, J. H. Thorington, S. W. Goode be and they are hereby appointed commissioners, any thirteen of whom shall be competent to act, and do all business necessary to be done, by virtue of this act of incorporation, and under the direction of a majority of whom, subscriptions may be received to the capital stock of the Montgomery railroad company, and they shall cause books to be opened in the town of Montgomery and city of Mobile, and such other places as they may think proper, for the purpose of receiving subscriptions, from time to time, to the capital stock of said company, until the sum of six hundred thousand dollars shall be subscribed, and shall give such public notice, not less than thirty days of the time and place of opening said books, as they may think proper.

Section 2. **And be it further enacted,** That the capital stock of said railroad company shall not exceed three millions of dollars, in shares of one hundred dollars each, and that as soon as six hundred thousand dollars shall be subscribed, the subscribers of said stock, their successors and assignees, shall be, and they are hereby declared to be incorporated into a company, by the name of the Montgomery Rail Road Company; and by that name shall be capable in law of purchasing, holding, leasing, selling and conveying real, personal and mixed property, so far as shall be necessary, for the purposes hereinafter mentioned; and by said incorporate name, may sue and be sued, plead and be impleaded, answer and be answered unto, defend and be defended, in any court of law or equity in this state, or elsewhere; to have and use a common seal, to alter and change the same at pleasure, to pass such bye laws, rules and ordinances, for the good government of said corporation, as to them may seem proper, and generally do and exercise all matters and things necessary to carry into full and complete effect all the objects of this act; **provided always,** that it shall not be lawful for the said corporation to use any part of its capital stock or funds for banking purposes, nor to emit, for circulation, any notes or bills, or make contracts for the payment of money, except under the seal of said corporation, and then alone for debts contracted by said corporation.

Section 3. **And be it further enacted,** That the sums subscribed to said capital stock shall be paid in such installments and at such times as may be deemed best by the president and directors of said company; **Provided,** that no more than one-third of the subscription be demanded until at least sixty days public notice shall have been given of such demand by said president and directors, and if any subscribers shall fail or neglect to pay any installment of such subscription thus demanded for the space of sixty days next, after said subscription shall become due and payable, said president and directors shall be authorized to sell said stock at auction, giving sixty days public notice of such sale, and said stock shall be deemed and considered in law as personal property.

**Section 4. And be it further enacted,** That as soon as six thousand shares of said capital stock shall have been subscribed, the commissioners, hereby appointed, shall call a general meeting of the subscribers, at such time and place as they may appoint, and shall give at least thirty days notice thereof, and at such meeting, the said commissioners shall lay the subscription books before the subscribers, then and there present, and thereupon the said subscribers, or a majority of them in value, shall elect thirteen directors by ballot, to manage the affairs of said company; and the directors thus chosen shall elect from among themselves a president of said company, and they allow him such compensation for his services as they may think proper; and in said election, and on all other occasions wherein a vote of stock holders of said company shall be necessary to be taken, each stockholder shall be allowed to vote one vote for every share owned by him or her; **Provided,** that no one stockholder shall be entitled to more than one hundred votes; any stockholder may depute any other person to vote and act for him, or her, as his or her proxy, and the commissioners aforesaid, or any three or more of them, shall be judges of the said first election of the directors.

**Section 5. And be it further enacted,** That the president and directors of said company shall be chosen annually on the first Monday in March at Montgomery, by the stockholders of said company; and if any vacancies shall occur by death, resignation or refusal to act, of any president or director before the year for which they were elected shall have expired, a person or persons to fill such vacant place for the remainder of the year shall be chosen by said president and directors, or a majority of them, and that the president and directors shall hold and exercise their office until their successors are chosen and qualified, and that all elections which are by this act or by the laws of said company to be made on a certain day, or at a particular time, if not made on such day, or at such time, may be made within thirty days thereafter.

**Section 6. And be it further enacted,** That every president and director of said company, before he acts as such, shall swear or affirm, as the case may be, that he will, well and truly, discharge the duties of said office, to the best of his skill and judgment.

**Section 7. And be it further enacted,** That at the regular annual meeting of the stockholders of said company, it shall be the duty of said president and directors in office for the preceding year to exhibit a clear and distinct statement of the affairs of the company, for the information of the stockholders; to make and declare such dividends, as they may deem proper of the net profit arising from the resources of said company after deducting the necessary current expenses, and they shall divide the same among the proprietors of the stock of said company in proportion to their respective shares.

**Section 8. And be it further enacted,** That the said president and directors shall have the power to call meetings of the stockholders at any time, stating in the call the business intended to be done, and no other shall be transacted at such called meeting; a majority of the stockholders in value, either in person or by proxy, shall be necessary to transact business, and at such called meeting, a majority of the stockholders in value shall have power to remove any president or any of the directors and appoint others in their stead.

**Section 9. And be it further enacted,** That the said president and directors, or a majority of them, may appoint all such officers, engineers, agents or servants whatsoever, as they may deem necessary for the trans-

action of the business of said company, and may remove any of them at their pleasure; and a majority of them shall have power to determine by contract the compensation for all engineers, officers, and servants, in the employ of said company; and to determine, by the bye laws the manner and evidence of all transfers of stock in said company; and that a majority of them shall have power to pass all bye laws, which they may deem necessary and proper for exercising all the powers vested in this company hereby incorporated, and for carrying into effect the objects of this act; **Provided**, only, that such bye laws shall not be contrary to the laws of this state, or the United States.

Section 10. **And be it further enacted**, That the president and directors of said company, or a majority of them, are empowered to borrow money to carry into effect the objects of this act; to issue certificates or other evidence of such loans, and to pledge the property of the company for the payment of the same, and its interest.

Section 11. **And be it further enacted**, That the president and directors shall be and they are hereby invested with all the rights and powers necessary to the construction and repair of a railroad from the town of Montgomery on the Alabama River, to a place called West Point on the Chattahoochie River, or such other part of such river as they may think proper, and after completing said railroad to the Chattahoochie River, the said president and directors with the consent of two-thirds of the stockholders in value, at a meeting to be called for that purpose, may make or cause to be made a railroad to extend from any part of the railroad so completed, to any part of the Tennessee River, and may also with two-thirds of the stockholders in value, make or cause to be made, any number of lateral railroads or tracks in connection with either of said named railroad, in any direction whatsoever within the limits of the counties through which said railroad may pass; and the said president and directors shall be allowed the exclusive right for fifty years from the completion of said roads to the Chattahoochie and Tennessee Rivers, of using railroad or locomotive engines between the waters of the Alabama and Chattahoochie Rivers, and between either of the said rivers, and the Tennessee River; **Provided**, that this charter shall be void as to the said railroad to the Tennessee River, unless the same shall be commenced within five years, and completed within fifteen years, and as to the said road to the Chattahoochie River unless the same be commenced within three years and completed within ten years; **Provided also**, that at the expiration of said fifty years, the state of Alabama shall be authorized to take the whole of the said work as the property of the state upon the payment of the actual value of the stock of said company.

Section 12. **And be it further enacted**, That the said president and directors shall be authorized to contract for and receive conveyances for any land, stone or gravel, henceforth which may be required in the construction of said railroad, and when the owner and the company cannot agree, or when the owner is an infant, or *non compos mentis*, then it shall be lawful for said president and directors to apply to any justice of the peace for a warrant directed to the sheriff of any county commanding him to summon a jury of seven disinterested freeholders a majority of whom shall be authorized to assess the damages under the same rules and regulations now established by law, in cases of other roads, said jury, forthwith, shall assess the value of said land, stone, gravel and timber, &c: subject to the right of an appeal to the circuit court by either party, who shall think themselves aggrieved, when the trial shall be *de novo* by a jury as in other cases, and the sheriff shall return the same to the office of the clerk of the county court of the proper county, and at the next term of the commissioners court, the same shall be affirmed, if no objection, and if the court shall set the same aside,



said court shall order a new writ and an assessment made in pursuance thereof shall be final, and the land, stone, gravel, timber, &c., so contracted for or condemned, shall enure to the said company, upon the payment of the said money to the persons contracted with, or into the court as the case may be, and at the expense of said company; **Provided, however,** that the said work shall in no wise be delayed on account of the proceedings had as aforesaid, but the said company on tendering the amount, to which the land, stone, gravel or timber shall have been valued, to the owner or depositing the same in the office of the clerk of said court, may proceed with the same work if there shall be no appeal; **And provided further,** that no right shall exist in said company to pull down or remove any dwelling house without the consent of the owner thereof.

**Section 13. And be it further enacted,** That the said president and directors, after having had the track upon which said railroad is to run surveyed and selected, may proceed to let the same to contract; **Provided,** that they give sixty days public notice of the time and place of letting the same to contract, and the said road or roads, with all the works, improvements, and machinery for transportation used on said roads, are hereby vested in said company and their successors.

**Section 14. And be it further enacted,** That in case any person shall wilfully injure or obstruct in any degree the said road or roads, he shall forfeit and pay to the president and directors of said company three times the amount of all damages which they may sustain in consequence thereof, to be sued for and recovered in the same manner as provided by law for individuals in like cases, and on complaint made to any magistrate within whose jurisdiction such offense shall be committed it shall be the duty of such magistrate to bind over the person or persons so offending, with sufficient security for his or their good behavior, for a term of not less than one year, and such offenders shall also be subject to indictment, and shall be sentenced at the discretion of the court to be imprisoned not less than six months, nor more than eighteen months.

**Section 15. And be it further enacted,** That in the construction of said railroad the president and directors shall not obstruct or use any public roads, now or hereafter to be established, but shall provide suitable and convenient ways, by which they shall cross the rail roads.

**Section 16. And be it further enacted,** That after the completion of said road or any part thereof, the said president and directors may lay and collect tolls from all persons, property, merchandise or other commodities transported thereon; **Provided,** that the said company shall not charge for transportation on said road more than at the rate of fifty cents per hundred weight for every hundred miles, and at the same rate for a greater or less distance, nor more than six cents for every passenger per mile.

Approved, January 15, 1834.

(Acts of Alabama, 1830-1833.)

## **SURVIVING CONFEDERATE PENSIONERS**

Alabama furnished 122,000 men to the Confederate Army during the four years of the War Between the States, of which number there are surviving today in Alabama only forty-five, all of whom are drawing pensions. The following statement concerning pensions provided by the State for her Confederate Veterans, was prepared by Mr. S. C. Blackshear, Secretary of the Alabama Pension Commission. There are on the State pension roll above 1,200 widows. At the time the Confederate Soldiers' Home was closed by the State and the buildings and grounds transferred to the State Welfare Department there were no veterans left in the home and only four widows. It was much more practical to close the home and to have the four widows reside either with relatives or board with friends as the upkeep of the buildings, grounds and administrative forces was considerable. The surplus from the one-mill soldiers' tax for Confederate pensions has by an Act of the legislature been transferred to the State Welfare Department to be matched by government funds in the interest of old-age benefits.

The military records of all wars in which Alabama has participated are administered by the Alabama State Department of Archives and History. These records, supplemented by records in the National Archives in Washington and other sources, are used to authenticate service for pensions, Confederate headstones and other purposes. The military section of the Department is in charge of Peter A. Brannon, who has prepared a statement concerning certain phases of relief afforded Confederate veterans by this State, beginning in 1867.

### **Mr. Blackshear's Statement**

As early as 1867 the State of Alabama through its General Assembly saw fit to recognize claims of men who had seen military service in the Confederate States Army and had been bodily mutilated. So, recognition of claims established came about by an Act which authorized the Governor of Alabama to contract with some manufacturer of artificial limbs to furnish all such limbs as may be required by all men residing within the State who had suffered bodily mutilation to the extent of a foot or leg.

There were a great many men who had been so badly maimed that artificial limbs would have been of no benefit. To these men the State paid the sum of one hundred (\$100.00) dollars each.

To carry out the provisions of this Act the General Assembly appropriated the sum of \$3,000.00, one-half thereof in the bonds of the State.

Benefits similar to the ones set out in the above Act were extended to maimed men by the following Acts:

Act Approved 3/8/1876 .....\$5,000.00

Act Approved 2/8/1877 .....\$5,000.00

until 1879 when the State authorized payments to those men who had lost an arm or a leg. Heretofore, artificial limbs had been furnished for those who had lost a foot or leg. In order that the full provisions of this Act might be carried out an appropriation of \$10,000.00 was authorized.

During the same year, 1879, an Act was passed to authorize payments of \$150.00 to those men who had lost their sight while serving in the Confederate Army. The sum of \$1800.00 was appropriated to carry into effect the provisions of this Act.

By an Act of 1881 soldiers who had lost a leg or arm or had been materially disabled were entitled to receive the sum of \$75.00. The sum of \$15,000.00 was appropriated by the General Assembly to carry out the provisions of this Act.

Until 1891 all appropriations for the benefit of maimed soldiers had been made out of the General Fund of the State. In February of 1891 an Act was passed authorizing a tax levy of one-half mill on the dollar and such revenue was used for payments to soldiers. This tax brought into the State Treasury the first year more money for the soldiers than the previous appropriations for the past five years amounted to. This did not necessarily indicate that the veterans received more benefits; it only meant that payments to more veterans than here-

tofore could be made. Each year the pension rolls of the state increased and from year to year the payments varied in amounts.

Under an Act approved February 10, 1899, a tax of one mill on the dollar was levied. More money than ever before was brought into the treasury by this act for the benefit of the soldiers. The peak year of taxes for the soldiers fund amounted to \$335,937.70.

By 1904 the pension rolls had increased so that the one-mill tax levy was not sufficient to satisfy payments to veterans. Appropriations from the General Fund were made, in addition to the one-mill levy, thus vastly increasing the Soldiers' Fund. From the year 1904 to about the year 1928 continuous appropriations from the General Fund were made to augment the one-mill levy. By this time the pensioners had increased to 9210, which included widows of soldiers or sailors. A substantial decrease each year from 1926 to the present time is noted in the pension rolls; the number dropping from 9210 to 1326.

Prior to 1923 a limitation as to possession or ownership of property caused numbers of veterans and widows to be dropped from the rolls and affected the chances of others being placed on the rolls. In 1923 an Act was passed repealing the "limitation as to possession or ownership of property" clause. This same Act swept away all barriers such as salary and income of a veteran or widow and made it possible for all veterans to receive pensions whose military record could be proved.

It was not until 1935 that the one-mill tax levy was sufficient to meet all demands for pensions and expenses of operating the Pension Commission. Section 20 of an Act of 1935 authorizing transfers out of Soldiers Fund to Welfare Department states, "There is hereby appropriated out of the funds in the State Treasury arising from the aforesaid one-mill tax set apart for the payment of Confederate Pensions all the surplus and residue thereof after the payment in full of the said Confederate Pensions and other charges against

said fund set out in Article 1 of Chapter 55 of the Code of Alabama of 1923, as amended, for the purposes and to be used and applied as herein directed, \*\*\*\*\* for old age assistance". There was no surplus or residue in the pension fund until 1937 and that year \$295,000.00 was transferred in accordance with the above section. In 1938 the sum of \$371,500.00 was transferred to the Welfare Department.

Again, in 1939 an act was approved to transfer to the Welfare Department "all the surplus or residue thereof after the payment in full of the pensions to Confederate soldiers and sailors and their widows and other charges against said fund set out in the provisions of the laws authorizing the payment of such pensions to Confederate soldiers and sailors or their widows\*\*\*\*\*". During the year 1939 the amount of \$329,990.00 was transferred to the Welfare Department.

An Act of 1939 authorized the largest individual payments of pensions to Confederate veterans or widows that had ever been paid. Starting October 1, 1939, the Alabama Pension Commission increased veterans' pension warrants to \$65.00 each month andm widows' to \$30.00 each month. This same act provided for payments to be made monthly instead of quarterly. Prior to October 1, 1939, the pensioners were divided into four classes as provided by law. Veterans were in Class "A"; Class I included widows of the age of 80 years and over or totally blind; Class II included widows between the ages of seventy and eighty and Class III included widows under the age of seventy years. Since the passage of the 1939 Act there are only two classes, veterans and widows.

The present law requires five years actual bona fide residence and citizenship in the State immediately preceding the filing of application to entitle any person to be enrolled as a pensioner. The widow must have married the soldier husband, as whose widow she would draw a pension, prior to January 1, 1904. This does not apply where the widow of a soldier marries another soldier and such husband dies.

**List of Confederate Veterans on the Pension Roll of Alabama  
As of August 15, 1940**

<b>County</b>	<b>Name</b>	<b>Address</b>
Bibb	Jno. G. McDaniel	Brent, Rt. 2
Calhoun	Jas. F. Cooper	Eastaboga, Rt. 2
	A. W. Dorn	620 Park Ave., Anniston
	T. J. Waites	802 Quintard, Anniston
Clarke	T. J. Turner	Thomasville
Clay	Thomas Peoples	Deita, Rt. 1
Cleburne	R. W. Holmes	Heflin, Rt. 1
Coffee	W. H. Wilson	Tennille, Rt. 2
Conecuh	John T. Brown	McKenzie, Rt. 1
Crenshaw	J. M. Etheridge	Searight
Dallas	J. W. Moore	Selma
DeKalb	G. W. Chumley	Collinsville
	W. U. Jacoway	Fort Payne
Elmore	I. R. Nix	Deatsville
Escambia	J. F. Drury	Flomaton
Fayette	H. M. Bell	Fayette
Franklin	A. H. Taylor	Belmont, Miss., Rt. 1
Geneva	L. M. Bailey	Hartford
	M. M. Burch	Hartford
Houston	Solomon Bradshaw	Dothan, Rt. 2
Jefferson	R. T. Boatright	2826-7th Ave. S. Birmingham
	Jno. E. Hewlett	4120-4th Ave. S. Birmingham
	Matthew M. Williams	Ensley
Lauderdale	J. H. Nelson	Rt. 2, Warrior
	Andrew J. Brown	Rt. 1, Anderson
Lawrence	Pleasant M. LeMay	Town Creek
	J. W. Dixon	Moulton
Madison	Wm. T. Bennett	Gurley
	Wm. J. Castleberry	Madison
	J. A. Stegar	Ryland
Marion	W. H. Edwards	Rt. 1, Bear Creek
Marshall	Jno. L. Cox	Rt. 2, Horton
Mobile	William Parker	St. Elmo
Monroe	W. H. Hasty	Excel
Montgomery	Paul Sanguinetti	% Capitol, Montgomery
Morgan	Jno. D. McClanahan	Hartselle

County	Name	Address
Pickens	H. P. May	Gordo
Pike	J. A. Davison	Rt. 1, Troy
Shelby	Robt. L. Killough	Siluria
Sumter	Geo. N. Rainer	Cuba
Talladega	Benj. Prior Maddox	Munford, Rt. 2
	P. R. Crump	Lincoln, Rt. 1
Tuscaloosa	J. R. Kennedy	Tuscaloosa
Walker	F. M. Mackey	Cordova
Washington	S. R. Hartley	Copeland

### Mr. Brannon's Statement

The first relief, in the nature of a pension, authorized for former soldiers who had served the State and the Confederacy was an Act of the Alabama Legislature approved February 19, 1867. That Act is as follows:

### AN ACT

For the relief of maimed Officers and Soldiers who belonged to the military organizations of this State or of the Confederate States.

"Whereas, There are now resident in this State a large number of men who, while in the military service of this State or of the Confederate States, suffered bodily mutilation, and it is fit and proper there should be some recognition by Alabama of the claim thus established, therefore:—

"Section 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the State of Alabama, in General Assembly convened, That His Excellency, the Governor, be, and he is hereby authorized and requested to contract, in such manner as he may deem best, and as soon after the passage of this act as may be found practicable, with some manufacturer of improved artificial limbs, to furnish all such limbs as, under the provisions of this act, may be required for the use of all persons now resident within this State, with intention here to reside, who, during the late war, served in any capacity in the

military service of the State or of the Confederate States and in the line of duty of said service, suffered bodily mutilation to the extent of a foot or leg; Provided, That such party contracting shall engage to deliver the limbs contracted for at some central point in this State, and then and there to have such limbs properly fitted to all persons under the provisions of this act thereto entitled, in such manner as shall best promote their ease, security and comfort; And provided further, That in no case shall such contract be awarded to any person who shall not agree to furnish such limbs at a price not to exceed seventy (\$70.00) dollars for an artificial leg when the amputation has been above and fifty (\$50.00) dollars when it has been below the knee joint.

"Section 2. \* \* \* \* \*

"Section 3. \* \* \* \* \*

"Section 4. \* \* \* \* \*

"Section 5. (Provides that in event mutilation is of such nature that no artificial limb can be used, he is to be paid \$100.00 in lieu, thereof.)

"Section 6. \* \* \* \* \*

"Section 7. (Appropriate \$30,000.00, one half to be paid in money and one half in bonds of this State.)

"Approved February 19, 1867."

Acts of Alabama, 1866-67, page 695 et seq.

Filed in the Military Records Division of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History in the archives of the Pension Bureau are the papers incident to the claims of men who applied from the several counties during the years 1867, 1868, and subsequent years through 1879. A recapitulation for the years 1867 and 1879 shows 218 artificial limbs furnished during the first year and 133 during the last (1879). As noted in the Act, the contractor was not permitted to exceed seventy dollars for an artificial leg when the amputation was above the knee and fifty dollars when it was below the knee joint. The Governor entered into the contract with Strasser and Callahan of Montgomery to furnish such artificial limbs as might be required.



Form Number One, the application for artificial limbs, bears the man's name, his residence and his military service record, showing the date of his receiving the wound in line of duty as well as the place. On proof of service, and the sworn statement that he was a bona fide resident of the county, the Probate Judge sent a copy of his application to the State Auditor, who directed a requisition on the contractor to furnish the artificial limb, and to take a receipt therefor. These proofs of service, together with certified statements, requisitions, etc., are filed in these original pension papers. A very interesting incident of one of the early applications for a pension, financial relief, is the case of one C. J. Armstrong of Butler County, whose papers show that he was wearing an artificial limb when he applied for a pension in 1881. Under date of April 28, 1881, Mr. Armstrong certifies that he received a leg in 1868, and about 1872 he received another one of "Strasser's legs". He says it was some improvement over the first leg. He thought that Strasser drew seventy-five dollars for each of his legs. The first one never benefited him until he took it to pieces and fastened a peg to the "boat part" of it. The last one, he certifies that he has "on hand yet". He injects the remark that "so you see I am taking good care of it." Mr. Armstrong, sometime about 1875, drew a peg leg, one of the Hawkins make, and wore it every day "until I wore it completely out". He says that Hawkins received thirty-five dollars for his legs. As a basis of his claim of April, 1881, he brings out the fact that the leg which he was then wearing was of his own make. Mr. Armstrong was a veteran of Company C, Thirty-Third Alabama Infantry Regiment, C. S. A. He was wounded in action on the 27 day of May, 1864, at New Hope Church, Georgia.

The contracting firm of Strasser and Callahan changed its name in 1874 to J. Strasser. In that same year contracts were made with William M. Hawkins of Elba of Coffee County and J. E. Roberts of Montgomery. There is a statement that Hawkins got one of the first contract legs, and through his experience with this, took out a patent on his own manufacture which gave more satisfaction.

**A. STRASSER,**  
**MANUFACTURER**  
 OF  
**ARTIFICIAL**  
**LIMBS!**

I am now prepared to manufacture Artificial Limbs of all kinds at  
**REASONABLE PRICES.**

The work that I turn out for simple construction and peculiar and skill-  
 ful adaptation of the JOINTS as well as  
**SUPERIOR DURABILITY AND LIGHTNESS,**  
 (weighing only from 3 to 4 1/2 and a half pounds, according to size,) cannot be  
**SURPASSED**

by any yet brought to the notice of the public.  
 All who desire artificial limbs, are invited to call at my establishment on  
**COOSA STREET,**  
 Near the First Baptist Church, Montgomery, Alabama, and examine for your-  
 selves.  
 I am satisfied that I can give satisfaction to all;  
**A. STRASSER.**

January 1st 1866,

In 1878 the pension plan was changed and instead of furnishing an arm or a leg to a cripple, a flat sum could be paid. This Act also provided for relief for the blind.

Section Seven of the original Act provided \$30,000.00 as the original operating sum. In 1871, after four years under the original Act there was an unexpended balance of \$15,560.00. There were legislative relief Acts in 1872, 1874, and 1876. An Act approved in February, 1877, appropriated \$5,000.00 for the furnishing of arms only. If the arm had been amputated in such a manner that an artificial one could not be worn, then the maimed soldier was to be paid \$75.00 in lieu. The records show that twenty Alabamians took advantage of this Act, five of them resided in Tuscaloosa County.

---

## ALABAMA HISTORY IN BRIDGES

### No. 3

---

#### PETTUS BRIDGE

BY MARIE BANKHEAD OWEN

It has been the custom for a number of years in this State to perpetuate the memory of certain outstanding citizens by naming bridges in their honor. Former issues of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly* have carried articles about bridges erected and dedicated during the publication of the periodical ten years ago. Since that time a number of named bridges have been dedicated. The last to attract statewide attention was the dedication of the Edmund Winston Pettus Bridge at Selma. This tribute to one of Alabama's most distinguished citizens was celebrated with extensive and varied programs covering May 24-26, 1940, inclusive. The ceremonies were attended by people from all over the State who venerated the name of Pettus and were interested in this memorial to him.

The new bridge took the place of the old Selma bridge which was built in the 1880's when the citizens of Selma felt that the traffic across the Alabama River at that point justified a toll bridge to take the place of the old ferry boat that had served the public since pioneer days. At that time there were no public funds for bridges and the citizens made the necessary contribution through the Selma Bridge Corporation. During the eighties river traffic was very heavy, passenger and freight boats passing up and down the stream continuously. It was necessary to build a turning span in the bridge which occasionally held up traffic for several minutes or even an hour. Since the abandonment of the river service the public has not suffered the inconvenience of delay in crossing the bridge. In 1899 Dallas County bought the bridge for \$65,000 and made it free of tolls for the use of the public. The old bridge was a memento of the "horse and buggy days" and like so many reminders of those former times is now but a memory. Tourists passing from one part of the country to another on named and numbered highways are now using the Edmund Winston Pettus bridge.

*Selma*

Selma, located upon the north bank of the Alabama River first found its place in Alabama's recorded history as early as 1732 when the locality is marked on D'Anville's map as "Ecor Bienville". This designation was probably given by the map maker owing to the fact that Bienville had a slight engagement in that vicinity with the Alibamo Indians. As early as 1809 the place was designated as "high soap stone bluff" owing to its eminence above the river. In 1815 a Tennessean, named Thomas Moore, settled with his family on the bluff where he cultivated a few acres of corn, but supported himself and family by fishing and hunting. In 1819 the Selma Land Company was organized and from that date forward the town has grown steadily. The name "Selma" was given to the town by Hon. William Rufus King, United States Senator, Minister to France and Vice-President of the United States. Mr. King owned a plantation near Selma, which is still in possession of one of his great-nieces. In 1836 two companies of volunteers were organized and went from Selma to serve against the Indians, one against the Seminoles of Florida, the other against the disaffected Creeks of Alabama.

Selma was always an ardent Southern city and furnished five full companies to the Confederate cause during the first twelve months of the war. The town was the most important military depot in the lower States of the Confederacy. Here were established a powder mill, nitre works, an arsenal, a foundry for making shot and shell, a naval iron foundry which made the largest and best cannon in America, iron works in which everything was made from a horse shoe nail to cannon carriages, a factory in which everything in the way of steam machinery was manufactured, a manufactory for making harness, trace chains, canteens and wagon gear, a foundry for making steam boilers and engines, in short, by 1863 there was every kind of manufactory in Selma for making all the war materials needful in the gigantic conflict between the United States and the Confederacy.

The four noted gun boats, "Tennessee", "Selma", "Morgan" and "Gaines", forming Buchanan's fleet at Fort Morgan were made in Selma.

*The New Bridge*

The Pettus Bridge was constructed by the T. A. Loving Company, of Goldsboro, N. C., at a cost of \$665,000. The bridge is on U. S. Highway No. 80, and was constructed by the State Highway Department, of which Chris J. Sherlock is Director.

*Edmund Winston Pettus*

Edmund Winston Pettus, lawyer, jurist, Brigadier-General, Confederate States Army, and United States Senator, was born July 6, 1821, in Limestone County, Ala., and died July 27, 1907, in Hot Springs, N. C., where he had gone in the interest of his health. He is buried in Live Oak Cemetery, in Selma. Senator Pettus was the son of a Virginia planter who removed to Alabama in the early period. The Senator was the grandson of Captain Anthony Winston, a Revolutionary soldier of Virginia and the great-great-grandson of Isaac Winston, an English emigrant who came to Virginia during the Colonial period. General Pettus was educated in the old field schools of Limestone County and at Clinton College, in Tennessee. In 1840, he began the study of law in Tusculum, under William Cooper, who was the leader of the bar in North Alabama. His legal career was interrupted by his service as a Lieutenant in the Mexican War. Upon his return from the war he was elected Judge of the Seventh Circuit but removed to Dallas County where he resumed the practice of law as a member of the firm, Pettus, Pegues and Dawson. Being of an adventurous turn young Pettus joined a party of neighbors who went on horseback from Alabama to California during the gold rush. At the outbreak of the War Between the States he entered the Confederate Army, rising from the rank of Lieutenant to Major in the 20th Alabama Infantry Regiment, Confederate States Army and was finally made Brigadier General. General Pettus had a brilliant military career during that period of history, having fought at Vicksburg and through many other battles during the long struggle to Bentonville, N. C., where he was seriously wounded in action. When peace was declared General Pettus returned to Selma and resumed the practice of law. In 1896 he was nominated by the Democratic Party and

elected by the Legislature of Alabama which was the mode of electing the United States Senators at that time. The Primary system having been inaugurated later he was nominated as his own successor without opposition in 1907 and was unanimously re-elected by the Legislature for a six year term but died, March 4, 1915, before the expiration of his second term. He was succeeded by former Governor Joseph F. Johnston.

Young Pettus married in 1844, Mary, daughter of Judge Samuel Chapman. Among his descendants was Francis L. Pettus, who himself had a distinguished career in Alabama in the legal profession and in politics.

## DIARY OF CAPTAIN EDWARD CRENSHAW OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES ARMY

(Other portions of Captain Crenshaw's diary have been carried in preceding numbers of the *Quarterly*. The remainder of the diary will be included in future issues.)

### Tuesday, Oct. 4, 1864.

Weather cloudy and disagreeable. All quiet today. No news of importance. Received a letter from Ma and one from Brother Walter. They gave me the unwelcome information that Wat. Coleman of my old company in the 17th Ala. had been captured in one of the battles around Atlanta, and that Maj. Burnett of the 17th was badly wounded. They also informed me that Uncles Ed. & Fred had gone off in the Reserves. Their letters were dated 24th Sept. and Ma said that Pa. would leave Home next day, and that Gov. Watts had become very unpopular on account of his course. I answered Ma's letter immediately.

### Wednesday, Oct. 5.

A beautiful day and all quiet along the lines. The news from all parts of the Confederacy is cheering. The Yankees advanced from Kentucky into South Western Virginia a few days ago and were badly defeated at Saltville. Gen. Early has stopped retreating in the Valley, and Gen. Sheridan has commenced retiring. Gen. Price is within a few miles of St. Louis with a strong force.

Received a letter from Col. Jones today saying he expected to be promoted soon and offering me a position on his staff, which of course I will accept.

### Thursday, Oct. 6th.

All quiet along the James and in front of Petersburg today. Went on duty today. My jaw is still running but is not painful now. No news of importance today that we can gather.

### Friday, Oct. 7th.

Gen. Lee attacked the enemy's extreme right today, capturing their breastworks, ten pieces of artillery, and some

prisoners. Brig. Gen'l Gregg of Texas was killed at the head of his brigade. It is turning cold.

**Saturday, Oct. 8th.**

Visited Richmond today, on business for mess. Made several purchases for mess &c. The fight of yesterday turns out to have been quite a brilliant little affair. Lieut. Gen. R. H. Anderson commanded in the field. Field's Division of Anderson's Corps bore the brunt of the Battle. Quite cold today. Drew pay to Sept. 30th. Returned to Post at Drewry's Bluff, before sundown.

**Sunday, Oct. 9th.**

A beautiful day, but very cold. Capt. Holmes returned from a tour of inspection today. All quiet along our lines today. On duty as officer of the day. Mr. Jno. Pearson of Arkansas was assigned to duty yesterday as a Second Lieutenant in the C. S. Marine Corps. He seems to be a very clever young gentleman, and barely 20 years of age. He is very intelligent and will no doubt prove quite an acquisition to our Corps.

**Monday, Oct. 10th.**

All quiet today. Clear and cold.

**Tuesday, Oct. 11th.**

All quiet along our lines today. Clear and cool.

**Wednesday, Oct. 12th.**

Clear and cold. Cloudy in the evening. All quiet along our lines today. A young Englishman (a Lieut. of Engineers in English Army) who was stationed at Halifax, Nova Scotia, when the Tallahassee was there, and just from that place, visited us today. His name is Lieut. Keath. Started to Richmond this morning, but the boat left me.

**Thursday, 13th.**

All quiet today. Nothing new. Clear and cold. Went to Richmond today on business. \* \* \* Sent \$8 (in gold) by Express to Engineer J. F. Green, C. S. Steamer, "Tallahassee." which amount I owed him.



**Friday, 14th.**

Clear and cold. All quiet today. On duty as Officer of the day. Wrote to Mother today. Wrote to Serg't Smith, C. S. Steamer "Tallahassee." \* \* \*

**Saturday, 15th.**

Clear and cold. All quiet here. Went to Richmond today. Sent five dollars in gold to Corporal J. S. Jones, C. S. Marines, C. S. Steamer "Tallahassee" by W. A. Whitehead, Ship's Steward. I borrowed the sum mentioned above from Corp. Jones while I was on the Tallahassee.

Met Lieut. Crittenden, son of Geo. B. Crittenden, and a cousin of Maj. Harry I. Thornton, 58th Ala. I became acquainted with him in the Army of Tenn. and also went to college with him at the Virginia University. "He was on his way to Europe", he said, when I met him today. "Said there was no opening for him in our service, and he was going to leave the Confederacy."

**Sunday, 16th.**

Clear and cold, all quiet in our immediate vicinity. Wrote to Corporal J. S. Jones, C. S. Marines, last night informing him that I had sent him five dollars in gold which he had loaned me while I was on the Tallahassee. Idled away the day in a shameful manner. \* \* \* \*

**Monday, 17th.**

Clear and cold. All quiet in our neighborhood. On duty as "officer of the day". Lieut. Berry, C. S. Marines, came up from Charleston on duty. He is with us today. I am favorably impressed with him. Brig. Gen. Kirkland of Hokes Division and formerly a Lieutenant in the U. S. Marines dined with us today. He is the most quiet and say nothing man I ever saw. \* \* \* \*

**Tuesday, 18th.**

Cloudy in forenoon and cold. Study today: English Grammar, Arithmetic, Regulations, Artillery and Infantry Tactics, Todd's Manual, History &c. All quiet along our lines, \* \* \* \*

Clear and cold. All quiet in our vicinity. Inspection at batteries today. No letters from home this month. The wife of 1st Lieut. R. H. Henderson, C. S. Marines graced our dull camp with her presence this evening. She made quite a favourable impression. She came down from Richmond late in the evening in company with her husband who has left us to take command of the two Marine Guards at the Navy Yards at Richmond. It is Indian Summer now, and the weather is very soft and lovely.

**Thursday, 20th.**

Went to Richmond on business for mess. Drew traveling expenses and commutation for transportation from Wilmington to Drewry's Bluff—\$92.00. Saw Cousin Edward Elmore (Confederate States' Treasurer) a few minutes on the street. Met an old classmate of mine at the University of Alabama in '59, '60, Lindsay now a captain in Law's Brigade, Field's Division. Enemy opened a heavy and rapid fire of Artillery on our lines about sunset.

**Friday, 21st.**

All quiet today. On duty as officer of the day. Read a very instructive chapter on the Philology of the English Language. The following authors are named as good models for style and good English: Barrow, Milton, Shakespeare, Coleridge, Cowper, Dean Swift, Gibbon, Burke, DeQuincey, Julius Hare, Walter Savage Landor, Addison, Southey.

Dean Swift, Cowper, Walter Savage Landor, are represented as being particularly excellent in style and graceful idiomatic English.

The day is perfectly lovely. The air is soft and bracing. The Indian Summer is decidedly the loveliest part of the year in Virginia.

**Saturday, 22d.**

Cold and cloudy. Some rain late in the evening. Gen. Sheridan has whipped Gen. Early in the Shenandoah Valley again (Wednesday, 19th) taking 23 pieces of Artillery from him so it is reported. The line of batteries erected by the enemy from Battery Harrison to Signal Hill and running parallel to the River, opened on our Iron-Clad Fleet this

morning and drove them back to Chaffin's Bluff, having damaged them considerably and wounding 7 men. The enemy's batteries were not more than  $3/4$  of a mile from the River, and it is thought that they were firing from 30 pounder Parrotts.

**Sunday, 23rd.**

Clear and beautiful. Moderately warm. Went to church today. There is a very elegant little church close to Fort Drewry, and about a dozen ladies from the neighborhood attend divine services there.

**Monday, 24th.**

Clear and cool. All quiet today. No further particulars of Gen. Early's Defeat. Over 1400 prisoners that he captured in the beginning of the battle have reached Richmond. Received a letter from Father today. All well and no news at home. Study all the time that I can spare from my duties, that I may have to perform.

**Tuesday, 25th.**

Clear and cool. All quiet today. Received a letter from Private J. S. Jones, C. S. Marines, C. S. Steamer, "Tallahassee" acknowledged the receipt of some gold that I had sent him and that I had overpaid him the amount I owed him. Wrote to Father yesterday.

**Wednesday, 26th.**

Clear and warm. Cloudy in the evening. All quiet. Went to Richmond today. Saw the funeral cortege of Brig. Gen. Archer pass. He died of disease. Yankee bullets failed to pierce his brave heart; but when his time was run on this earth death claimed him by gentler means.

**Thursday, 27th.**

Cloudy and rainy. All quiet with about 4 P. M. when a tolerably brisk fire of artillery was begun on the North Side and continued until after sundown. Have not learned the cause or result. Received duplicate receipts of ordnance and ordnance stores from Lieut. H. M. Doak, Comm'd'g Marine Guard attached to C. S. Steamer "Tallahassee". He said that the "Tallahassee" would drop down to the mouth of the Cape Fear River on the 25th instant.

**Friday, 28th.**

Clear and beautiful today. All quiet along our lines. Severe fighting on both sides of the river yesterday. Enemy made repeated assaults on our works and were repulsed with heavy loss. We captured some prisoners. Gen. Dearing of the Cavalry reported killed. Two important communications in today's papers between Generals Lee and Grant. Gen. Lee writes a long letter in reference to Butler's putting our prisoners at work in Dutch Gap Canal below here, in pretended retaliation for our putting negro soldiers captured from the Yankees at work on our intrenchments. Gen. Lee said that this was a mistake or a misapprehension of orders &c and proved conclusively that our government had a perfect right to return to their owners all slaves captured in arms or in any other way from the Yankees, and that only such had ever been employed by us in work on our fortifications (and then not under fire as ours were at Dutch Gap) and that he ordered them to be returned to the rear as soon as he learned the fact of their being at work on our fortifications. And asking Gen. Grant if he sanctioned Gen. Butler's proceedings.

Gen. Grant replied that it was not his business to argue about slavery &c; but that he would say that all men who had been received as soldiers in the United States Service must be treated as prisoners of war without distinction of colour or previous condition, when captured, and if they were treated in any other way that he should be compelled to retaliate; though he should regret the painful necessity and hoped it would not arise.

**Saturday, 29th.**

Clear and beautiful. Nothing new. On duty as officer of the day. Dreamed last night that Generals Beauregard and Hood gained a glorious victory in North Georgia, and that I was presented on the field. \* \* \* \*

**Sunday, 30th.**

Clear and beautiful. All quiet today. Nothing new. \* \* \* \*

General Dearing reported killed on the 27th inst. was not killed.

**Monday, Oct. 31st, 1864.**

Clear and cold. All quiet today. Nothing new of importance. Received a letter from Mother yesterday evening. All well at home, and nothing new. Received a note from Cousin Bolling Hall, per John, who went to Petersburg today.

**Tuesday, November 1st, 1864.**

Clear and cold. All quiet. Nothing new. Went to Richmond today. Everyone there is in fine spirits. Drew pay to Oct. 31st, 1864. \* \* \* \* Paid Mess Cook George \$61.50 hire due him up to October 31st, '64.

**Wednesday, 2nd.**

Cloudy and rainy all day. On duty as officer of the day. Heavy shelling in the direction of Dutch Gap and Petersburg. No news in the papers. Price reported by the Yankee papers to have been defeated and driven out of Missouri. Gen. Early in command of the Army of the Valley issued an order a few days ago severely reprimanding his Infantry and Cavalry, and blaming them for our disasters in the Valley. And also an order exempting the Corps of Artillery attached to his army from the Strictures contained in his other order, and complimenting very highly their gallantry and discipline. Col. Carter commands the Corps of artillery attached to Early's Army, which corps consists of Nelson's, Braxton's King's and Cutshaw's Battalions of Artillery.

**Thursday, Nov. 3rd, 1864.**

Cloudy and rainy and cold. Nothing new of importance. All quiet along our lines. \* \* \* \* Received a letter from Sg't M. Smith of my old Marine Guard on the Tallahassee.

**Friday, 4th.**

Clear and cold. All quiet along our lines. Nothing of importance in the newspapers. We are having beautiful weather again.

**Saturday, 5th.**

Clear and cold. No news of importance. All quiet along our lines in this vicinity. Wrote to Mother. Wrote to Cousin Bolling Hall at Petersburg. \* \* \* \*

**Sunday, 6th.**

Clear and cold. Went to church. Officer of Day. Nothing new today. All quiet. \* \* \* \*

**Monday, 7th.**

Clear and cold. Confederate States Congress assembled today—quorum present at 12, M. President's Message was read to Congress. A very important state paper. Recommend the purchase by the Government of 40,000 slaves to be used for military purposes—and as soldiers should it become necessary. And to promise them their freedom and to intercede with the different States to get permission for them to reside within their limits after the War, as a reward for the faithful discharge of their duties. And also recommending that the authorities be allowed to detail such editors as are necessary to carry on the requisite number of newspapers and to conscript the rest. \* \* \* \* \*

**Tuesday, Nov. 8th.**

Election day at the North for President of the United States. Abraham Lincoln is a candidate for reelection—and Andy Johnson of Tennessee is a candidate for Vice-President on his ticket. Geo. B. McClellan and Geo. E. Pendleton of Ohio, are the Democratic candidates for President and Vice-President. Lincoln is having everything his own way and will certainly be elected. In fact the present election is only a farce.

**Wednesday, 9th.**

Nothing new today. All quiet along the lines. Nearly all of the officers of the C. S. Marine Corps sent up a petition to the President petitioning to have the Marine Corps transferred to the Army and increased to a Brigade of three regiments and one regiment to be designated as Marine Inf'ty, and from it the Sec. of War is to furnish the guards required by the Sec. of Navy on his requisition &c. \* \* \* \* \*

**Thursday, 10th.**

Nothing new. On duty as officer of day. Clear and cold.

**Friday, 11th.**

Clear and cold. Northern papers of a late date report the Confederate Steam Sloop of War "Florida" by the U. S.

Steamer Wachusett in the Bay of San Salvador Brazil, with 12 officers and 58 men on board—the commander and the rest of the crew were on shore. No loss of life. It is very evident that being in neutral waters the Florida made no resistance.

**Saturday, 12th.**

Clear and cold—nothing new—all quiet along the lines. Went to Richmond today. The Navy Authorities bought in Wilmington or in some Foreign port an assorted cargo and brought it to Richmond. The President's family and Secretary of the Navy's family and the families of others in high authority. I do not know who else besides those I have named were allowed to go to the Navy Store House and select such articles as they needed or rather desired in the way of all manner of assorted goods and when they had been satisfied and that too at very low prices, a few other officers of the Navy and Marines were allowed to purchase a few things. I was so fortunate as to be among the favoured ones and bought a good many valuable and useful little articles for my Mother. It is said in justification of buying this cargo that there were a great many articles and supplies required by the Navy, and that they could be bought at a much lower rate by taking the whole cargo and that they intended to sell the rest of the cargo at auction and in this manner get the articles required for almost nothing.

**Sunday, 13th.**

Clear and cold. All quiet along our lines. Nothing new. Went to church today. \* \* \* \* \* The Tallahassee has come into Wilmington again.

**Monday, 14th.**

Clear and cold; All quiet today. On duty as officer of the day. Bought one gallon of fine French brandy at Navy Store House which I intend to send home to my Mother for medical purposes. It is generally conceded today that Lincoln has been reelected President of the U. S. and it is reported that he has called for 1,000,000 men to crush out the rebellion. Good news from Forrest in Tennessee. He has destroyed several gunboats and a great many transports on the Tennessee River at Johnsonville and destroyed a vast

amount of supplies. The daring scout Lieut. Gregg of Nashville, Tenn. took breakfast with us today.

**Tuesday, 15th.**

Clear and pleasant. All quiet. No news of importance today. All quiet along our lines on the North Side and around Petersburg. Read a story in New York Ledger said to be founded on fact—written by Mrs. Southworth—and the hero of which was the great William Wirt. It tells how nobly he struggled from a nameless boyhood into a great and good man. He is a noble example for a young Southerner to imitate.

**Wednesday, 16th.**

Today has been appointed by the President in a solemn proclamation a day of Thanksgiving and worship for the bountiful harvest and many blessings that God has bestowed upon us. Clear and beautiful. An occasional cannon shot can be heard in the distance.

**Thursday, 17th.**

Clear and cool. No news of importance today. Visited Richmond today on business. Saw none of my army friends. Every one seemed to be in good spirits. I think our people are becoming accustomed to war. Old Virginia is a noble state and worthy of the imitation of her Southern sisters. The prospect of four years more of bloody war in her borders does not seem to depress her spirits at all. She is as proudly defiant as ever. Met Capt. Foote of Gen. B. R. Johnson's Staff, and son of Hon. H. S. Foote of Tenn. today. Favourably impressed.

**Friday, 18th.**

Warm and cloudy. Some rain in the evening. Great cheering along the Yankee lines yesterday evening. Supposed to be occasioned by the reception of the 50,000 turkeys sent by New York for a great Thanksgiving's dinner. On duty as officer of the day. Wrote letters on business to Engineers Levy and Green of the "Tallahassee" and to Asst. Payter Jones at Wilmington. Wrote to Mother.



**Saturday, 19th.**

Much hard studying to be done today. Cloudy and cool. No news of importance. It is rumored that Sherman has left Atlanta and is marching southward. Gen. Beauregard is reported to have crossed the Tennessee with Gen. Hood's army. Generals Thomas and Schofield are opposed to him with two or three corps of Sherman's army. My wounded jaw does not pain me now and I am anxious to return to the army again. I had a conversation with Col. Wood of the President's Staff on 17th inst. with regard to staff appointment under the new Staff Bill. He said that it was impossible to get a staff appointment now, even on the application of a general. That there were now more staff officers than were needed. I regret now that I did not withdraw my resignation as captain in the army when I had an opportunity to do so. I intend to find out if it is now too late to do so.

**Sunday, 20th.**

Cloudy and cold. Rain in morning. Hard heavy musketry on Gen. Picket's line last night about 12 P. M. Remained in my quarters all day. Read the Bible and Dodridge's "Rise and Progress &c."

**Monday, 21st.**

Cloudy and cool. Rained all day. The firing on Gen. Picket's line last Saturday night occasioned by an attempt of the enemy to retake their picket-line, which Gen. Picket took from them with over 100 prisoners a few nights since. They were repulsed. Read arithmetic and "Student's Manual". I think much and mourn over my lost opportunities to make myself intelligent and useful, perhaps great.

**Tuesday, 22nd.**

Reading today: 1 Bible, 2 Grammar, 3 Arithmetic, 4 Student's Manual, 5 Army Regulations, 6 Infantry tactics, 7 "Thadeus of Warsaw," 8 Write to Father in Montgomery, 9 Write to Capt. Gill Holland, 10 Write to brother Walter, 11 "Outpost Duty".

I did not accomplish my task today. Cold and cloudy. All quiet along the lines and no news. Congress passed a resolution unanimously reaffirming their unalterable de-

termination to continue this war until our independence and complete separation from the North is achieved. Gen. Sherman is reported to be moving on Augusta with at least 30,000 men. No news from Beauregard. On duty as officer of the day.

**Wednesday, the 23rd.**

Read the Bible, 2 Read Grammar, 3 Read Arithmetic, 4 Students Manual, 5 Infantry tactics, 6 Army Regulations, 7 Thadeus of Warsaw.

Clear and cold. No news. Received a letter from my old friend Capt. Gill Holland, 58th Ala. Regt. Called on Capt. Mason, Engineer in charge at this post, by direction of Capt. Simms, commanding Marine Battalion, and informed him that Capt. Simms desired to build a bomb-proof for his command, and wished to know what place would meet his approbation, and whether he approved of the place selected by Capt. Simms. Capt. Mason is to meet Capt. Simms at 10 A. M. tomorrow and give him the desired information.

**Thursday, Nov. 24th, 1864.**

Go to Richmond today and see if I can withdraw my resignation in the army. And if I can make arrangements to do so as early as possible. Called on Judge Jno. A. Campbell, of Ala., Ass't Secretary of War in his office, and stated my case to him and my desire to return to the army. He promised to see if anything could be done for me, and very kindly invited me to call on him and his family at home that evening, which I did, and was introduced to his wife and three unmarried daughters. I was very kindly treated and enjoyed my visit very much. I liked the young ladies exceedingly well. I met Miss Caskin of Richmond and a Mr. St. Martin the same evening. Staid with McKune, a lieutenant in the Marine Corps and a friend of mine, all night. He commands the Marine guard at the Navy Yard in Richmond.

**Friday, 25.**

Returned to Drury's Bluff at 7 A. M. Felt badly all day and did nothing. No news of importance, except the report that a part of Sherman's forces have been worsted in Georgia. No letters from home in some time. Sherman has probably interrupted the communications.

Clear and pleasant. No news today. On duty as officer of the day. Mr. Mallory, Secretary of the Navy, accompanied by the Naval Committee of Congress and other members of Congress and officers of the Navy and Army, visited and inspected the fortifications at Drewry's Bluff today. Lieutenant and myself commanded the guard of honor that received them. I was introduced to Mr. Secretary Mallory. He is a short fat old man; but quite intelligent looking: he has a very good head. I was also introduced to Judge Walker, Senator from Alabama, and Mr. David Clopton, Representative from Alabama. I was pleased with them and their manner towards me. Promised to visit them in Richmond. Mr. Secretary Mallory had a very nice entertainment prepared at Col. Terrett's Headquarters. All the Marine officers present were invited to partake of the various good things prepared by Mr. Mallory. During the entertainment Mr. Boyce of South Carolina, Chairman of the Naval Committee, proposed the following toast:

"Two great new ideas: Ironclads and Torpedoes, and Mr. Secretary Mallory, their great patron, or introducer (?)" Mr. Mallory replied and turned the compliment very neatly, by saying that he could not effect anything without the aid of his friend Mr. Boyce, the chairman of the Naval Committee. I was introduced to Lieutenant Parker the Superintendent of the Confederate States Naval School. He is an accomplished gentleman and I was very much pleased with him. The party left in the evening and went down to the fleet below here.

**Sunday, 27th.**

Clear and pleasant. Nothing new. Did not go to church today. Read several chapters in the Bible.

**Monday, Nov. 28th, 1864.**

Clear and pleasant. Nothing new. All quiet along Gen. Lee's lines. Studied military tactics all day today.

**Tuesday, the 29th.**

Clear and warm. Nothing new. Lieutenant F. H. Cameron, A. A. Commissary of Subsistence of the Marine battalion

at Drewry's Bluff received a leave of absence for 30 days today. He goes to Richmond today and will leave Richmond tomorrow. I am to perform his duties during his absence, so that I now have to perform the duties of Assistant Commissary of Subsistence and Asst. Quartermaster in addition to those of Adjutant.

**Thursday, Dec. 1st.**

Clear and cool. Went to Richmond today. Drew month's pay for November. Dined with Lieut. Stevenson of Marines at the Navy Yard at Rockets. Met Col. W. H. Fowler today, and had some conversation with him. I also met for a few moments Ass't Engineer Lyell who was attached to the Tallahassee at the time I was attached to her. No news today.

**Friday, 2nd.**

Clear and cool. No news today, and no thoughts beyond the line of the daily routine of duties. I begin to feel anxious about the success of my application to withdraw my resignation in the Army. Have heard nothing from it.

**Saturday, Dec. 3rd, 1864.**

Clear and pleasant. Nothing new today. Along Gen. Lee's lines everything was quiet. Heavy skirmishing in front of Gen. Pickett's lines at Bermuda Hundred. Brigadier Gen. Gracie of Ala. reported killed at Petersburg by a chance shell yesterday while inspecting his brigade.

**Sunday, 4th.**

Clear and beautiful as a summer's day. No news. On duty as officer of the day. Did not go to church today. The report of the death of Gen. Gracie was unfortunately true. Received a letter from Father two or three days ago. Must answer it next week. Dreamed about my friend Chas. Baskerville a few nights since.

**Monday, 5th.**

Clear and beautiful. Nothing new. Remained closely in my quarters all day.

**Tuesday, 6th.**

Weather warm and pleasant. Went to Richmond today. Visted Judge Campbell's family of the evening and went

with them to a grand wedding in St. Paul's church. Capt. Shannon of South Carolina was married to Miss Giles from St. Louis, Missouri. The church was crowded and I saw all of the beauties of Richmond. The bride was quite beautiful, and the bridegroom was rather handsome. Spent a very pleasant evening at Judge Campbell's. Met Gen. Jordan formerly of Gen. Beauregard's Staff.

### **Wednesday, 7th.**

Cloudy and rainy all day. Thick fog in the forenoon. On duty as officer of the guard at the boat landing. It is reported that the enemy has crossed the river between here and Howlett's Battery (4 or 5 miles below here) in front of the entrance from this way to the Dutch Gap canal. It is said that they crossed by means of pontoon bridge, and that there is a considerable number on this side of the river and that they captured our little mortar battery in the neck of land just this side of Howlett's, and which has been annoying the working parties in the Canal so much. Our iron-clads below Chappin's got under weigh and went down the river this evening. No news nor reports from any other quarter.

### **Thursday, 8th.**

Clear and cool. On duty as officer of the day. Can learn nothing definite with regard to the movements of the enemy below here. There are many rumours afloat however. Passed the day in "laboriously doing nothing". We are beginning to have cold days again.

### **Friday, 9th.**

Cold and misty. A small party of the enemy crossed the river below here from the North side to a point opposite the mouth (looking this way) of the Dutch Gap Canal. It is said that we have not driven them away because they are protected by a marsh and a thick belt of woods which the engineers neglected to have cut down. Received a letter from Mother saying that Grandmother was very unwell.

### **Saturday, 10th.**

Snowed last night. The ground is covered with snow this morning two or three inches deep. The weather moderated towards evening. There were no papers received in camp to-

day. Remained in my quarters all day engaged in reading military works.

**Sunday, 11th.**

Cold and cloudy. Ground still covered with snow. Remained in my quarters all day. Read my Bible and Doddridge's "Rise and Progress" and Army Regulations. Several wild rumours are floating around us; but there is no definite news, except a tolerably well authenticated report that the large body of Yankees who started from Gen. Grant's army on a raid down the Weldon railroad few days ago had been met and defeated.

**Monday, 12th.**

Clear and cold. Some snow on the ground still. On duty as officer of the day. Gen. Lee's official report confirms the report of the defeat of the Yankee Raiders at Bellfield by Gen. Hampton.

**Tuesday, 13th.**

Clear and cold. No news today. All quiet along our lines in this neighborhood. Started to Richmond on boat today; got aground, and did not reach the city until nearly 2 o'clock P. M., and had to leave on the Petersburg train at 3, P. M. Had no time to attend to any business.

**Wednesday, 14th.**

Clear and cold. Received a note from Major Van Derveer, A.Q.M. of Ala. late yesterday evening, saying that he had just come through from Montgomery and had some letters and coin which my father had sent by him to me. Went to Richmond today. Called on Maj. VanDerveer. My father sent by him 20 dollars in gold, and a newspaper containing a very severe article written by Cousin Augusta Evans, on the Alabama Legislature and the people of Ala., about reconstruction resolutions and not pressing to the front to the aid of Beauregard and Hood. My father wrote cheerfully and agreeably. Grandmother, who had been quite sick was much better when he left home a few days before he wrote. Called on Judge Campbell at the War Department. He told me that my resignation could be withdrawn if an application was made for it by my company officers and the Colonel of the regiment.

**Thursday, 15th.**

Cloudy and cool. Wrote out an application to withdraw my resignation as captain, company "B" 58th, Alabama Volunteers, stating my reasons &c, as follows:— (Which I intent to send to Judge Campbell tomorrow to get the necessary endorsement from the Sec. of War, before forwarding it to my old regiment.)

Camp C. S. Marine Battalion, Drewry's Bluff, Va.  
24th, Nov., 1864.

Hon. James A. Seddon,  
Secretary of War, Richmond, Va.: sir,

After my return to Wilmington from a cruise on the C. S. Steamer, "Tallahassee", I received an order from the War Department, revoking my resignation as captain company "B" 58th, Ala. Volunteers. I immediately hastened to Richmond to get permission from the Secretary of the Navy to obey the order. I was taken very ill on the way; but as soon as I reached Richmond, I made an application to the Colonel, commanding the Marine Corps, asking him if I would be allowed to return to the army without resigning my commission in the Marine Corps. He told me that I would not be allowed to do so. It then being too late to see the Secretary of the Navy, and wishing to return to the army without resigning my commission in the Marine Corps, I went to my former station at Drewry's Bluff, to get my clothing &c, intending to return the Monday following, it then being Saturday evening and return my commission as Second Lieutenant of Marines with my resignation to the Navy Department, if the Sec'y of the Navy would not allow me to avail myself of the opportunity, which had been so kindly tendered to me, if returning to my old comrades in arms without so doing. But as soon as I reached Drewry's Bluff, I was so sick that I had to go to bed, and my old wound broke out again and gave me much pain. Several days after this while I was still in bed and suffering a great deal of pain, I received a note from the Colonel commanding the Marine Corps, saying that it was necessary for me to decline, at once, sending in my resignation, and not knowing whether my wound would ever heal sufficiently for me to rejoin my command in the field,

I requested one of my brother officers to write a letter for me to the Secr'y of the Navy declining to resign my commission &c, which letter I signed and forwarded. I regretted it after it was done, and when my wound commenced to heal, I determined to make an application to withdraw my resignation. Having made the foregoing statements, which I considered due to myself, I do most respectfully ask to withdraw my resignation as captain company "B" 58th Ala. Infantry, believing that my company & regiment desire my return. I have received letters from them since they crossed the Tenn. expressing as much, or I should not now make this application. I was an officer in the C. S. Volunteer Service from Aug. '61 up to the time that I left the army to go into the Marine Corps, and all of my comm'dg officers will testify that I did my duty faithfully &c—



## LATER HISTORY OF MADISON COUNTY

*By Thomas Jones Taylor*

(Judge Taylor's "Early History of Madison County" was concluded in the Spring, 1940, issue of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*. This installment is the beginning of his "Later History of Madison County".)

### CHAPTER I

#### Madison in 1820

In the "Early History" of the county I gave a brief account of its origin, progress and development, to the formation of the State Constitution and the meeting of the first State Legislature, in Huntsville in the year 1819. My sources of information in regard to the first settlement of the county were meager, but as far as they went were, I believe, reliable. Many of the facts were traditions handed down by our fathers, but they are so recent in regard to time that there is but little difficulty in tracing them back through credible witnesses and testing their authenticity. Besides the light thrown about them by records of the county, there is but little written testimony extant in regard to the subject I have treated. This is a matter of regret, and to one who is interested in the past history of the Tennessee Valley, it appears surprising that so inviting a field for the historian has been so completely neglected. No chronicler of the period has given us an inside picture of the intercourse between the whites and the Cherokees and Chickasaws, when they were near neighbors; generally on friendly terms and trading with each other, as is customary on the boundary line of the separate nationalities. We have had volumes written on the wars of the whites and Indians, but in the heroic struggle of the Creeks for their hunting grounds where their fathers were buried, when they fought against a superior race until they were nearly exterminated, no written record tells the wonderful tale of their devotion and patriotism. Their history lives only in tradition, and written history leaves so much untold that its details appear only as meager and barren outlines. Also, when in the development of our county's history we approach the period of the expansion and distribution of the population.

throughout the Tennessee Valley, there is a stronger temptation to pursue the interesting theme, and regret that the history of the valley had not been written by some of the gifted men who were prominent actors in those stirring scenes. With so inviting a field before us, we enter upon the annals of a single county with diffidence and with a doubt as to our ability of imparting interest to a recital of events in its narrow limits. We are restrained to discuss matters that generally possess only a local or personal interest, and as the field of labor narrows and the material grows abundant the selection of the subject matter for these chapters becomes perplexing and difficult.

I now propose to take up the history of the county in the beginning of the year 1820 and bring it down to and include the survey and settlement of new Madison in the year 1830, and probably to a still later period, if I find on investigation I can make my narration of sufficient interest for publication. In the year 1820 the western boundary of the county had been changed to its present location and has never been disturbed. The Trianna region had just been surveyed and sold, and the fertile lands of that fine country were being rapidly cleared for cultivation. A large population was pouring into that region and its development was keeping pace with the progress of the rest of the valley. New Madison had been ceded by the Indians and was in Jackson County, but not yet surveyed and sold. The only change in boundary was that made in organizing Jackson County, by which the territory from the point where the Cherokee line crossed Flint River near W. C. Carpenter's, lying west of Flint, to its mouth was made part of Madison County and this has never been part of any other county. But this triangle now so thickly settled was at that time without inhabitants, and there were no settlements along the Tennessee until we reached the beginning of what was known as the Chickasaw Old Fields, extending from Dr. A. L. Logan's to Whitesburg. Thence up Flint River and all east of the old Cherokee boundary was one vast wilderness, with the settlement extending close along said boundary on the west side from the Tennessee line to the Tennessee River. The settled portion of the country included about five hundred square miles, and it is a remark-

able fact that, with an estimated population in 1819 of twenty thousand, the settled portion of the county at that time had nearly the same number of inhabitants to the square mile as at the present day. It is said that there was a temporary decrease in population compared with two years previous, caused by emigration of settlers with their slaves to the fertile fields along the Tennessee Valley. In the year 1820 the population of the county was 7,481, of whom about seven thousand were slaves; but after 1820 our population rapidly increased. The population of the county was also differently distributed. West of Huntsville and northward to the Tennessee line was a large white population, and also, along the waters of Flint and in the Big Cove down to the Indian line. Around Whitesburg and down toward Trianna along the river the country was as yet sparsely settled. In the year 1809 John Grayson was the only purchaser of land in the Big Cove, but in a few years there was a continuous settlement from his place to the Huntsville mountain. Many of the ancestors of the present citizens of New Madison were settlers in that region; among whom were the Millers, Bufords, Brazeltons, Ledbetter, Carpenters, DeBows, Wrights, Jenkins, Colliers, and Anyans, many of whom lived within the recollection of the present generation. The county in 1820 was nearly thirty miles long and an average of about twenty wide, and the only mountain range of importance was the Monte Sano range, running nearly south from Huntsville to the Tennessee River near Chickasaw Island. The county, as then constituted, contained a large proportion of level, fertile lands, of which a large area was in a high state of cultivation, and there was but little land then cultivated that did not yield an abundant return. The year 1819 witnessed a great change in the political status of our people. After the State Constitution was formed, the Legislature had convened at Huntsville and formulated a code of laws in conformity with that instrument, and the most important event in the year 1819 was the general State election for State and county officers. It sounds strange to people who live in this age of elections, that men who had lived here from ten to fifteen years had never voted except for militia officers at their company and regimental musters and members of the legislature, but it was not less

strange than true. We may well imagine the bustle and excitement attending our first general election, and how awkward the candidates must have been in the electioneering business. The judges of the circuit and county courts were elected by the Legislature. The constitution provided for a general election of State and county officers in September 1819. At this election William Bibb, then Governor of the Alabama Territory, was elected governor for a two year term, but dying on the 10th of July, 1820, he was succeeded by his brother Thomas Bibb, President of the Senate. They were both early settlers of Madison County. At this election the people voted for members of the State legislature, sheriffs and clerks of the courts. The election lasted for two days; the first day to receive votes, the second to count the votes and make returns. There was an election of members of the legislature, except senator, on the first Monday in August, 1820. Judges of the circuit and county courts were appointed by the legislature. The following is a list of the first officers under the Constitution: Governor, Wm. Bibb, U. S. Senators, John W. Walker, and Wm. R. King; member of Congress, John Crowell; Judge of the 5th Judicial Circuit, composed of the counties of Madison, Jackson, Cotaco, Blount, Shelby, and St. Clair, Clement C. Clay; members of the General Assembly, Gabriel Moore, Senator; Frederick Weeden, Samuel Chapman, John McKinley, John Vining, John M. Leake, David Moore and Samuel Walker for the lower house; Justice of the Quorum, Leroy Pope, chief justice, David Moore, John Withers, Abner Tatum and Edward Ward, associates; Stephen Neal, Sheriff; Lemuel Mead, Clerk of the Circuit Court, and Thomas Brandon, Clerk of the County Court. I have given the names of the members of the General Assembly of 1819 in a former article. The above members were elected in 1820. Many of them have been mentioned in the "Early History" of the county; but Dr. David Moore deserves more extended notice, as he was in many respects the most prominent man of that period. Dr. David Moore was of an old Virginia family of Irish descent and a graduate of the Philadelphia Medical College. He came here quite a young man in 1809, when he invested exclusively in the public lands and entered into a successful practice of

his profession. He was a justice of the quorum from 1815 until the office was abolished, and represented Madison county, with the exception of a few terms, in one or the other branches of the legislature until he retired from public service. In the year 1841 he was a candidate for the United States Senate, and was beaten by Governor Bagby, seven votes. In this contest, although an avowed Democrat, he received the vote of the opposition, and was re-elected by a Democratic constituency a member of the legislature in 1842. He was Speaker of the House of Representatives in 1841, and his financial ability, sagacity and prudence gave him a potent influence in our legislative bodies. He was usually of the committee on finance, and did efficient service in the shaping and controlling of the financial policy of the state. He manifested the same financial ability in the management of his private business. He was a progressive and successful planter, and was at his death the largest land owner in North Alabama, his cotton crop being one thousand bales annually. His health failed under the enormous pressure of public and private business and he died in the year 1844 at the age of fifty-five, and his vast landed estate but little diminished in area is still owned by his children, David L. Moore, General Samuel H. Moore and Mrs. R. Barnwell Rhett.

## CHAPTER II

### County and State Officers to 1823

At a period of which I am now writing, during the peaceful administration of James Monroe, there was but little political strife and the issues made by opposing candidates were more of a local and personal character than national. Consequently, while our legislators were enacting many laws, yet their enactments were local in character, and in alluding to them in the history of a single county I only mention those necessary to explain matters connected with the history of our own county. In mentioning the names of those who held offices in our county in its earlier days, there often appear the names of men who were holding county offices at the time they were members of the legislature. Although a strict construction of the State Constitution of 1819 pro-

hibited the holding of more than one office of honor, trust or profit, yet for many years county officers served in the State legislature without any question as their eligibility, and this circumstance accounts for the fact that David, Samuel Walker, Lemuel Mead, Samuel Chapman and perhaps others were members of that body while they were holding county offices. This usage held until the year 1840, when a committee of investigation appointed by the legislature declared all county officers who were members of the legislature ineligible, and their seats were vacated. Green P. Rice, of Morgan County, President of the Senate and Judge of the county court, was of the number, but in deference to his position the legislature did not vacate his seat until the day before adjournment. Among the old citizens of Madison who thus lost their seats were Robert T. Scott, clerk of the circuit court of Jackson County, Marmaduke Williams of Tuscaloosa, judge of circuit court, and Percy Walker, of Mobile County, Bank Director. At the election in 1821 Samuel Chapman was elected chief justice of the quorum, and Gross Scruggs, Samuel Walker, Charles Betts and James Manning associates; but in the year 1823 this office was abolished and a judge of the county court, and four commissioners of roads and revenue substituted. Samuel Chapman was the first judge of the county court, and Samuel Walker, Nathan Smith, James Mauldin and Ezekiel Craft first county commissioners. At first the commissioners were elected annually, then for two years, and finally for three years. It would doubtless be for the interest of the people if the term of the county commissioners was extended to the same period as the judges of the probate court, thereby avoiding the embarrassment of a change of revenue officers in the term of the presiding officer of this court. From the creation of the office, it appears to have been an established usage to select the county commissioners from different portions of the county, as James Mauldin and Samuel Walker were residents of the northern portion of the county, Nathan Smith of the southern, and Ezekiel Craft of the eastern. The judge of the county court had sole jurisdiction in the county court sessions and in the orphans' court, while pretty much the same duties as at present devolved on the commissioners' court. However

there were many matters under the jurisdiction of the Commissioners' court at that time which changes in our laws have taken from their control. The laws regulating taverns, to which I have already alluded, required the commissioners annually to regulate the schedule of charges to be made by public houses, and this was one of the first duties performed by our first commissioners' court in 1823. As a matter of curiosity, I gave the tariff of charges for the year 1823, which all tavern keepers were required to keep posted up in a public place: Dinner 50 cents; breakfast 37½ cents; supper 37½; lodging 12½ cents; keeping a horse per night, 50 cents; single feed 25 cents; a quart of wine, \$1.50; ½ pint of Jamaica rum, 50 cents; ½ pint of French brandy, ½ pint of whiskey 12½ cents. Auctioneers were recommended by the commissioners' court, and on giving bond in the sum of two thousand dollars were appointed and commissioned by the Governor. It appears that an auctioneer's business was a lucrative one, notwithstanding these restrictions and a tax of two per cent. levied on the gross amount of their sales, we find that Daniel B. Turner, George H. Malone, George W. Lee and James G. Carroll were appointed auctioneers in the year 1823. All county officers not elected by the people were appointed an assessor and collector for the county, coroner, county treasurer and county surveyor. In February, 1823, these offices were filled by the appointment of Littleberry Mauldin, brother of James Mauldin, assessor and collector, Commissioner Ezekiel Craft county treasurer, who appears to have held both offices at the same time Daniel Rather continued as coroner, and Hunter Peel county surveyor. Bennett Wood, a Baptist minister and original owner of the Bell Factory property on Flint River, who had been county treasurer since 1819, filled his accounts and vouchers for settlement at this term, which showed a balance of \$46.15 of county funds in his hands, which was paid into court and a discharge from the duties of his office put on record.

While a reference to the acts of the legislature of 1823 gives the reader an idea of the revenue laws of that period, yet as copies of those laws are becoming rare and inaccessible to the public, I hope a few words on taxation will not be amiss in this connection. The rate of taxation on real estate at

that time was ten cents on the hundred dollars, and land was divided into four grades for taxation, and all the assessor had to do was to decide to what class or grade it belonged. First-grade lands were valued by law at sixteen dollars per acre, second-grade at ten dollars, third-grade at four dollars, and fourth-grade at two dollars. Town property was valued by the assessor as at the present time. The county levy was fixed in 1823 at one-eighth of the state tax, making the tax levy for state and county twelve and a half cents on the hundred dollars. A considerable portion of the land in the county was government land and was tax free, and a large portion of the land purchased at the land sales in 1818 had not been paid for. These last mentioned lands were taxed on the amount of the purchase money that had been paid on them, and consequently paid on a fractional part of their valuation. The tax on real estate then was not more than one-tenth part of the levy made at present, and yielded an insignificant part of the State and county revenue. To the people of the present time the old revenue laws of the state would be objectionable on account of the inequality of taxation, and the present ad valorem system of taxation is a great improvement on the revenue legislation of our ancestors. Merchants paid thirty cents on the hundreds dollars on the amount of their stock for the preceding year, month at interest twenty-five per cent, and banks fifty cents, carriages one per cent on their value, riding horses one dollar each, race horses five dollars each, race-courses twenty dollars per annum, and billiard tables one thousand dollars per annum. Slave property contributed a large proportion of the revenue, as they were all, to the age of sixty, subject to a tax of from twenty-five cents to one dollar each according to age, and all white males between the ages of twenty-one and forty-five paid a poll tax of fifty cents each.

There were but few changes in the legislature from 1819 to 1823, during which time Dr. David Moore continued in the State Senate. In the year 1821 Major William Fleming was first elected to the State legislature. Major Fleming and his amiable and accomplished wife will long live in the memory of our people, and they lived so long in Huntsville



and were so well known to its citizens that it is unnecessary for me to say anything regarding their many excellent traits of character. Major Fleming was a Virginian by birth, chivalric by nature, and generous and sincere to his friends and courteous and forbearing to his enemies. His want of oratorical powers and deficiency in literary attainments were more than counterbalanced by his eminent social qualities and his convivial proclivities, and for more than thirty years he had a strong hold on the Democratic voters of our county. A few years after he entered public life he bought property on Flint River near the new Madison line, and in the southeastern portion of the county he usually got nearly a unanimous vote, and the rapid increase of the vote in that part of the country soon made him invincible in a county contest. In his speeches to the people of that section he gave southeast Madison the appellation of "the tall timbers", which it retains to the present day. With a harsh and discordant voice and an imperfect enunciation, yet the fund of humor characterizing his oratory and anecdote pervading his public speeches gave them a keen relish, while his rigidly honest and sound common sense made him an exceedingly formidable competitor before the people. After the retiring of Gross Scruggs from the position of justice of the quorum, in 1822, he served several terms as county commissioner. Like Major Fleming he was an old Virginia gentleman by birth and breeding, and was the last survivor of the board with which he served. He lived to a good old age on what is now known as the Gus Martin plantation near Cedar Gap. He never sought public office, was a man of sincere piety and strict integrity, and was considered one of the purest and best men of his time. In the year 1822 Stephen Neal, Sheriff of the county, was succeeded by William McBroom. Stephen Neal served as sheriff from 1809 to 1822, when he retired because constitutionally ineligible for another term. But a few weeks ago, Mrs. Frances Neal, his widow, died, aged 96 years. For a score of years she was the last of that remarkable generation of pioneers that settled Huntsville, and but few people ever lived to witness the remarkable and startling changes that transpired and which she saw during her residence of seventy-five years in our city.

## ALABAMA DOCTORS

(From time to time items of interest copied from old Alabama newspapers in the Department of Archives and History, will be reproduced in this magazine. The data herein appearing about licensed doctors in Alabama, 1827-1828, should prove of interest not only to the medical profession but the descendants of those men whose names are recorded here. The poem, "Country Doctor" by Mrs. Edith Tatum, of Greenville, Alabama, was greatly admired by readers of *Good Housekeeping* in which publication it first appeared. It has been carved on the tombstone of a western country doctor.)

### Alabama Doctors 1827

At a meeting of the Medical Board, for the district of Cahawba, December 3, 1827, Samuel C. Oliver, M.D., and Rhyden G. Hill, M.D., presented their diplomas for examination and were enrolled.

The candidates presented themselves before the Board of examiners—Benjamin R. Hogan, Robert Beaty, Holden Evans, Thomas M. Bragg, and William E. Norwood, were licensed to practice Medicine and Surgery, and James M. C. Wiley, licensed to practice medicine.

Edward Gantt, M.D.  
Dean of the Board of Physicians,  
Selma, Ala., Dec. 13, 1827.

SEE: *The Alabama Journal*, Montgomery, Alabama, December 21, 1827, p. 3, col. 6.

### Physicians of Alabama 1828

A list of names of physicians enrolled with the Medical Board at Huntsville, as authorized to practice in this State prior to the 22 Sept. 1824.

Alexander A. Campbell	Tuscumbia
John Littlefield	Shoal Ward of Limestone
R. M. Clark	Franklin Co.
George L. Rousseau	Courtland
Richard H. Carriel	Hazel - Green
Sutton F. Allen	Hazel - Green

---

Levi Todd .....	Florence
Shadrack Nye .....	Florence
Western T. Rucker .....	Florence
John H. Woodstock .....	Florence
Isaac Butler .....	Florence
Wm. McDonald .....	Lauderdale County
Alexander Erskine .....	Huntsville
J. V. Johnson .....	Franklin Co.
Drury H. Cox .....	Lauderdale County
William Clay .....	Tuscumbia
William Wharton .....	Tuscumbia
N. W. Floyd .....	Lawrence County
William B. Johnson .....	Triana
John H. Atkinson .....	Triana
Francis A. Dillard .....	Madison Co.
Samuel Breck .....	Triana
Alfred Moore .....	Madison Co.
Miles S. Watkins .....	Huntsville
Dabney M. Wharton .....	Huntsville
Joseph D. Heacock .....	Madison Co.
Granville U. Foster .....	Meridianville
John F. Wyche .....	Meridianville
Wm. C. Bruce .....	Florence
Wm. B. Green .....	Madison County
L. Gilliam, Doyle's Mills .....	Jackson County
Woodson C. Montgomery .....	Mooresville
Montecue Allen .....	Courtland
Robert C. Price, Doyles Mill .....	Jackson City
De Thomas .....	Blountsville
Edward Davie .....	Limestone Co.
John Eckford .....	Morgan Co.
Stephen H. Doby .....	Tuscumbia
Smith Hogan .....	Franklin County
..... Holmes .....	
George A. Glover .....	Moulton
George Monroe .....	Madison Co.
Samuel C. Sloan .....	Jackson Co.
Thomas L. Trotter .....	Lawrence Co.
Elijah King .....	Madison Co.
John Scott, Dittoes Landing .....	Madison Co.

---

John Faver, Jr.	Limestone Co.
Mathew H. Davis	Madison Co.
John D. Wylie, Dittoes Landing	Madison Co.
John R. Evans	Athens
Wm. Evans	Limestone Co.
Jonathan Looney	Athens
Wm. C. Gibson	Huntsville
William Thompson	Madison Co.
G. W. Higgins	Belfonte
Wm. Anderson	Brownsborough
James Dodson	Decatur
Alfred G. Vaughn	Madison Co.
Edmund Irby	Huntsville
Wm. T. Young	Triana
James S. Ringo	Moulton
Thomas C. Edwards	Moulton
Edward R. Anderson	Moulton
Jonathan Burford	Moulton
Joseph Hughston	Lawrence Co.
Henry Slavens	Springfield, Lauderdale Co.
John A. Green	Franklin Co.
Alexander Sledge	Franklin Co.
Alexander S. Moore	Tuscumbia
Charles Douglass	Tuscumbia

Names enrolled subsequent to the 22nd of Sept. 1824  
as graduates.

Richard Everard Mead	January 1826
Silas Webb	April 6
William H. Glascock	May 1
T. P. Moore	June 20
J. Gatewood	April 1, 1827
F. Hollis Newman	Aug. 6
Robert F. Jones	Nov. 18
James C. Cross	July
Gideon G. Williams	Dec. 4
George R. Wharton	Dec. 17
Edward Pickett	Dec. 18

A list of Physicians and Surgeons, licensed by Medical  
Board at Huntsville.

R. C. Holland .....	Med. & Sur. May 5, 1824
A. B. Washington .....	Med. & Sur. May 5, 1824
Lewis Campbell .....	Med. & Sur. May 5, 1824
Wm. McClung .....	Med. & Sur. Dec 7, 1824
Terry Bradley .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 7, 1824
Jefferson Wilson .....	Medicine, Dec. 7, 1824
Wm. A. Davis .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 6, 1825
Thos. A. Watkins .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 6, 1826
George Morris .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 6, 1826
Nath'l Field .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 6, 1826
Robert Martin .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 6, 1826
George H. Burms .....	Medicine, Dec. 4, 1827
Joseph W. Bibb .....	Med. & Sur. Dec. 1827

Thos. Fearn, Secretary to the Medical Board.  
Dec. 20, 1827.

*Tuscumbia Telegraph*, Tuscumbia, Alabama  
January 16, 1828, p. 3—co. 2-3

(Bound with the *Sentinel* 1826.)

### COUNTRY DOCTOR

He calls no hour of day or night his own.  
Through heat or cold he goes his way alone;  
Here, to bring some mortal into being,  
There, to ease some soul that must be fleeing.  
He listens earnestly to tales of grief,  
Forgets himself that he may give relief  
To bodies suffering, or tortured minds;  
In service to all men his pleasure finds.  
May God forever bless him with His grace,  
For when he goes, oh, who will take his place?

—Edith Tatum in *Good Housekeeping*.

**POEMS****Entering Birmingham**

(Red Mountain Gap.)

What constellation beams  
Before us? What nebulous galaxy  
Of fiery comets, glittering with stars  
In tawny clusters of gold filigree?  
Has Saturn lent his gleams  
And scintillating rings to blaze the way,  
And flush the sky with this unearthly glow  
And brilliancy more luminous than day?

Or has some fairy queen  
Upset her chest of jewels, sapphires blue  
As witching fires of Circe, luring men  
To death: bright diamonds, clear as mountain dew,  
And emeralds misty green?  
The moon, a pale devoted acolyte  
Stands watching. Only dreams such beauty paint,  
Such blinding beauty: Birmingham at night!

—ANNE SOUTHERNE TARDY

---

**Remembering An English Grandfather****I.**

The hedgerows burned with coloring as old  
As English autumn, and as manifold—

Village and spinney, down and common lay  
At one with nature's peacefulness—that day

You bartered Berkshire for uncertainty  
Of young Virginia, far beyond the sea.

## II.

Below the lichened belfry where I stand,  
Three hundred years have scarcely touched the land

That held your heart's devotion till you died,  
A land your memory always glorified.

As then, the line of elms where April rook  
Challenged the tenantry of squirrel; the brook

Spanned by a bridge as ancient as this tower,  
Blend with the landscape, as a leaf with flower.

The village, thatched of roof; the fields, hedge-  
fenced,

Merge also, into beauty keenly sensed,

A mystic, man-carved loveliness. These bells  
Reverberate in spring to citadels

Of hare and pheasant; coverts where the fox  
Find refuge for his earth among brown rocks

And bracken; or the wheatear, flying lowly,  
Rivals the blackbird in her song . . . Now slowly

A flock and shepherd wind across the hill,  
The afternoon grows drowsier, and still.

## III.

O grandsire, mingled with the Jamestown earth,  
Was any conquest or dominion worth

The cost? Or did the destiny that made  
You leave this England, keep you unafraid

The while you faced a wilderness and hewed  
From it a commonwealth? With fortitude

You served Virginia loyally and rest,  
"In the hope of a joyful resurrection," blessed;

Yet in your dreaming, if the dead desire,  
Do you not yearn for your ancestral shire?

—LOUISE CRENSHAW RAY

---

### Belated Heritage

The land is mine, reclaimed from alien hands . . .  
A century ago my young grandsire,  
Upon his iron-grey mount, drew rein and gazed  
Afar beyond the shoulder of this hill.  
A sentry line of pines and maple spires  
Stood chisled in the hush of noon-day heat,  
And only footsteps of the wind betrayed  
The peaceful solitude enfolding him.  
Then suddenly there marched before his eyes  
A ghostly-strange processional of dreams—  
Dreams lit from embers of an Indian fire  
Which once spread terror through the wooded hills.  
With swinging stride came sturdy toiling men,  
Young eager pioneers who blazed the way  
For iron-masters riding close behind  
To cast the mold of cities yet to be . . .  
Dreams wandered wraithlike in that prised hour—  
Eternity compressed in a single space—  
And the vision that quickened the beat of his own  
    young heart  
Now sprang into being, weighed with the struggle  
    of living.  
The sound of anvils echoed through the clearings  
Where brawny smithies worked from sun till sun.  
Wagons clattered along the rocky trails,  
Grinding a fine red powder to clouds of dust.  
Plow-tips and tools were crudely forged, and soon  
The cotton bloomed in furrowed symmetry.  
Then evening glowed with lamplit peacefulness  
As simple hearthstones sent up grateful prayers.



But the darkness that followed was born of a fren-  
zied night,  
Blood-stained and bitter with a lingering hate . . .  
He never lived to see the crisis pass  
Nor progress spring from ashes of war's waste.  
Perhaps 'twas better so, for he was spared  
The hurt of seeing even his own son  
Take leave of the cherished land they once called  
home.  
Would he have understood and welcomed here  
Those men who garnered his dreams and paid the  
price  
Which progress must exact? Or would his pride  
Have held in check the mighty industry  
Now flourishing to bless the land he loved? . . .  
An old daguerreotype is all I know  
Of how my grandfather looked—the deep-set eyes  
And firm young mouth that seemed about to speak.  
Across the century, the words he penned  
In a faded diary hid in an attic trunk,  
Are a precious legacy bequeathed to me.  
Now I feel the love of these hills in my blood.  
No hand that lends fulfillment to a dream  
Can ever be called an alien. Today I stand  
With bared head and humble heart to offer thanks  
For the smoke-filled valleys and tongues of flame  
that lick  
The skies; for hosts of men who look to me!  
My son will give them more than daily bread,  
For beauty must dwell in hearts that know content-  
ment . . .  
A lichened stone, half-hid by rust-red cliffs,  
Records my forbear's name, his birth and death—  
Enough to know his ashes mingle now  
With dust of iron from which his dreams once  
marched!

—MARTHA LYMAN SHILLITO

## MANUSCRIPTS

One of the divisions of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History is the Maps and Manuscripts Division. This division is administered by David L. Darden, Field Collector on the staff of the Department. The collections in that division have been brought together out of private hands during the past forty years of the Department's history. In the collections are diaries, manuscripts, and many letters written by men prominent in the history of the State and the nation. Each issue of the *Quarterly* will carry material from that collection. The two letters reproduced in this issue are of peculiar interest, one from William Lowndes Yancey to his pastor, the Reverend William Henry Mitchell, a Presbyterian minister, native of Ireland who emigrated to America and in 1843 was installed as pastor of the Presbyterian church at Wetumpka. William L. Yancey was himself residing in Wetumpka during that time and the Reverend Mr. Mitchell was his pastor. He later became President of the Florence Synodical Female College and continued as its head until his death. In 1862, while Florence was in possession of Federal forces he was arrested for praying in the pulpit for the success of the Confederacy and was sent to the military prison at Alton, Illinois, where he was held for six months, being paroled at the end of the war.

Mr. Yancey's letter is of peculiar interest in view of the fact that it throws a light upon the religious sentiments of certain members of Congress and reveals Mr. Yancey's own spiritual attitude at the time.

The letter written by Jefferson Davis to Mr. Yancey shows some of the difficulties which confronted the President of the Confederacy and his method of dealing with them. Mr. Davis always held that the greater issues of the Confederacy far superceded any personal or local preferment. He further shows in his letter irritation at the inability of others who see things from only a personal point of view. While a certain irascibility appears in this letter, still, the man who held the Confederacy together for four terrible years, wished that peace might obtain among the leaders of the Confederate

States and that all hate might be reserved for the common enemy.

Washington, D. C.  
April 20th, 1846.

Revd. Wm. H. Mitchell  
My dear Sir:

Your highly esteemed favor of the 14th January, tho unanswered thus long has been read and reread, with both instruction and edification: And our great motive in not answering it sooner, (for I have designedly deferred doing so), has been my sincere desire to be able to answer it in that spirit which savor'd of a growth "in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ." You rightly divined that "the temptations by which I am surrounded are various and numerous." My eyes, my dear friend, are fully open, my mind keenly alive to them. And I, morning and evening, and sometimes at noon day, "by prayer and supplication" make known to my God and Redeemer, how sorely beset I am, and ask for grace and strength to stand erect in faith. I have struggled hard and long to "grow in grace", with a conscious knowledge of my own weakness and utter inability to advance without the aid of a redeeming love. We have a weekly Congressional prayer meeting, when I meet with some few praying spirits—and I attend the sermons of one who speaks boldly, tho' not vauntingly the word of God.

But ah! how little of life—of living and lively faith now animates me—How feeble is the practice of a christian duty and oh! how often—too often is that duty neglected, and sometimes shamefully violated!

I speak thus to you, my friend, because you are appointed a spiritual counsellor; and because were it not for this bright consciousness of my duty and of my errors—this constant desire to kneel and pray forgiveness—this seeking out the humble prayer-meeting—this clinging to a faint hope, I should be tempted to answer the mental query, so often put

to myself "Am I indeed a child of Christ?" in the negative. But that I dare not, cannot do, & still struggle on, tho' with feeble footsteps. My mind is brilliantly illuminated as to duties and errors—and conscience wide awake; but the heart it seems to me is cold & torpid—Knowing the right, I still the wrong pursue, relying upon prayer to save me. I am indeed sorely beset; and feel that if I could once more resume the quiet life of my home,—aided and sustained by my little family, I would walk more erect in faith & live more in fear of the Lord; and I long to return. I much fear, however, that it will be the 1st of August before we can leave here.

We anticipate difficulties with Mexico; and now begin to hope, that we may peaceably settle matters with England. If we do not, we shall not be able to leave here before the 4th of March, next.

Truly and sincerely

Your friend

W. L. Yancey

Endorsement:

Hon. W. L. Yancey/ Apr. 20, 46/ *Religious*

---

JEFFERSON DAVIS TO YANCEY

Richmond, Va.,

June 20, 1863.

Sir:

On the sixth of last month you wrote me that you were informed I "entertained personal enmity" towards you, and that you "seized the earliest moment after receiving the information as to my "personal feelings" to withdraw the application previously made in favor of your son.

Surprised that you should have been so informed, I replied on the 26th that "not having made any declaration to

that effect" I though I had a right to inquire of you how you acquired that information. I went further and said "I was sure you had no right to feel" personal hostility to me and hoped "you might not."

I have now received your letter of 11th inst. in which you not only omit entirely any answer to my enquiry, but make the very grave charge that in my official action I have been "influenced by feelings of personal hostility" to yourself, and not satisfied with reporting that this charge is based on information received by you, you add that you "believe" it.

Repelling this charge as utterly untrue, I again claim the right of inquiring on what information it is based. Notwithstanding your avowal that you have now "allowed a natural resentment to gain an ascendancy in your breast" I can but expect that you will deem it due to yourself if not to me, to answer the inquiries of my former and the present letter.

I would be glad to be able here to pause in my answer, but there are various statements in your letter which if unanswered might be supposed to be admitted, and to which I feel compelled to give a decided dissent.

I am not aware of the existence of any such usage in relation to the appointment of postmasters as you allege to have prevailed. In my whole official life both as an executive officer and as a Senator, no such usage was to my knowledge recognised or acted on. I will add, that if such a usage had actually existed in Washington, I should not for a moment have doubted as to the propriety of discontinuing it here, nor will I consent to be influenced in the exercise of the appointing power which I hold as a trust for the public good, by personal favor or personal resentment. I must add that the Senate is no part of the *nominating* power, and that according, as I do, the highest respect to the opinions of Senators when they recommend applicants, I decline to yield to any dictation from them on the subject of nominations. Your statement that the Postmaster appointed for Montgomery was "recommended by an insignificant number of persons in Montgom-

ery and hardly identified with the place" is so far from accurate as to satisfy me you have been misinformed in this as in almost every other particular connected with the nomination. I am gratified to perceive, however, that you do not disparage the appointee as being otherwise than an upright, competent, and meritorious officer, nor do you state him to be at all unfriendly to yourself, and I would readily have stated to you as I did to others my reason for selecting him, if in like manner you had made the enquiry: although I must deny the *right* of any one to demand my motives for the nominations which I think proper to make, and which are subject to no other control than the approval or disapproval of the Senate.

Your statement, in relation to the letter about the appointment of Brigadier Generals from Alabama, is entirely incorrect. If you will refer to my endorsement on it, you will find that it was not considered as a recommendation for the appointment of officers, but as the assumption of a right to question my motives in making nominations and to dictate the rules which should govern my action. Viewed in this light, I declined to retain it.

I am gratified to learn from you that any opposition you may have manifested to the administration of the government was uninfluenced by personal considerations, and accept your assurances on the subject none the less readily because you express the belief on secret information that my own action as Chief Magistrate is based on opposite grounds. I likewise appreciate to the fullest extent your expressed purpose to preserve independence even at the expense of personal regard, while I regret that you should suppose the preservation of both to be impossible.

I conclude in the hope that you will recognise the obligation to state the authority on which your allegations have been made, instead of replying to my inquiries on the subject by statements justifying yourself for receiving these allegations as true. It is surely not at the present time that unfriendly relations should be allowed to spring up between those to whom the people have committed their interests in this great struggle. For myself all of hostile feeling that I

possess is reserved for the enemies of my country, not for those who, like yourself, are devoted to our common cause. You promise a candid judgment and generous support to my administration so far as demanded by the interests of our country, whatever may be our personal relations. I accept your promise with pleasure as worthy of a patriot, and even were these relations of the most cordial character, could desire nothing more than the redemption of this pledge.

Very respectfully &c &c,  
Jeffn. Davis.

To W. L. Yancey,  
C. S. Senator &c,  
Montgomery, Ala.

### GENEALOGICAL DEPARTMENT

(Space will be given in this department of the *Quarterly* for genealogical queries. Any one having information desired please communicate with the Alabama Department of Archives and History).

Patton—John and Patsy (Darton) Patton, the former born September 1787, died September 1852, who lived in Bell County, formerly Knox County, Kentucky, had two sons, names unknown, who came to Huntsville before the War Between the States. Names of descendants of these two Pattons desired.

Warren—William Hackley and Isabella (Hamilton or Hambleton) Chambers, who went from Greene County to Mississippi in the early 1800. Names of descendants or their lineage desired.

Wooten—O'Neal—Murphey—Young—Chambers. Richard Wooten married Mary O'Neal, of South Carolina, or Alabama, about 1800. Richard Kelly Wooten, II, married Jane Murphey and their children were: Annie married Capt. Wm. Wade, Julia married Norman McLeod, Emma Married 1st Patterson, 2nd Wm. May, Richard Kelly Wooten, III, m. Annie H. F. Wilkinson, of Wilkes County, Georgia, about 1858. Jane Murphey, of South Carolina and Moulton, Alabama. Parcentage wanted. Her brothers and sisters were: Victoria married Dr. James Yonge or Young, Julia married Isaac Oliver, Mary married ——— Windham, Maria married Henry DeBardeleben, Mildred married unknown, Benjamin married Martha Wooten. Mary Chambers, Rehoboth, near Selma. Husband's name and ancestry desired. Her children were: Robert, Thomas and Henry, all went to Texas about 1885, Lou married Dr. Hall, Pherabe went to Texas, Sallie died single and William who lived at Pine Hill and had descendants. Regular fees will be paid for certified wills, marriages, or other documents in these queries.

Terrell-Smith-Dickson.—Line of Henry Terrell and wife, Ann Dabney. Also David Dickson and wife, Anne Allen



Smith, whose daughter, Nancy Campbell Dickson married Jephtha Vining Smith, who was no kin to her Smith relatives.

Turner-Sessums. Dr. James LeGrand Turner, born in North Carolina in 1799 and Juliana Sessums born in the same state in 1808 were married between 1820 and 1825. All of their children were born in Alabama and Texas. They were in Texas in the 1850 census. Where were they married and who were their parents?

Griffin—John Griffin, soldier of the American Revolution, resided in Pike County, aged 97, in the Census of Pensioners, 1841. Address of any descendants appreciated.

Blackwood — Record of James Blackwood, a Revolutionary soldier who moved from Tennessee to Limestone County. His wife was a Miss Lowry. Their daughter, Eliza Jane Blackwood married William Mallory.

### BOOK REVIEWS

*Spring Will Come Again*, by Florence Glass Palmer, Bobbs-Merrill Company, \$2.50.

This is an excellent sectional novel, which neither glorifies the South, as early books did, nor disparages it, as most modern novels do. Instead, it is an historically accurate treatment of a forgotten era in the South's history, between 1880 and 1900 "when the South was first free from Federal domination to work out its economic and political destiny, and discover, if it might, the philosophy of an altered way of life."

The story depicts the life of the William Days in Douglasville, "Jewel City" of the Black Belt, and of William's struggles, first at cotton-growing and then at cotton-ginning. It describes his slow comprehension of the Southern Negro "not in his usual part as comedy relief for white folks' drama, but as an inalienable character in the southern play, a poignant, often tragic figure, given as other men to hopes and dreams, and worthy of an opportunity for development".

The trials of William and his wife Ardisia for a secure way of life in a new South, are aggravated by one Hiram King, "po-white-trash" from Birmingham, whose capital controls Douglasville, and who "in one fatal endeavor drags the entire town into financial muck".

The antithesis throughout the story is indeed interesting and, like the black soil next to the white lime. Interwoven with the story of the days, is the story of Israel Clark, an intelligent negro, with a "snow white soul", who married Viney, so that he might give educational advantages to her talented daughter Becky.

There is also the store of Douglas Ashton, "kindred soul" and admirer of Ardisia, satisfied to live and farm as his aristocratic forbears had done, and though a bit "worn at the cuffs", to carry the banner of a former age of gallantry.

Though William never succeeds in solving the South's problems, his story closes pleasantly, as the spring of the year conspires with Ardisia, William's "Spring of hope", to bring him cheer for every dreariness, "while her green glowing eyes reflect the beauty and goodness of their little world".

*Spring Will Come Again* is an important book — literally, because it is a pioneer in returning the pendulum of the Southern pen from disparagement to its rightful vertical position—and historically, because it is an accurate document of the post-Reconstruction era in the South. In addition, it is a thoroughly human and a very enjoyable story.

—Margaret Davidson Sizemore

*Awake! My Heart*, by Gerrie Thielens. Harpers. \$2.50.

Mrs. Thielens was born in Detroit, Michigan, in 1909, but was educated largely abroad. Her girlhood experiences at school in Lausanne and later under private tutorage in Rome, form the background of her first novel. She returned to South Bend, Indiana, in 1930 and a few years later married and moved to Tuscaloosa, Alabama. Here she started writing for the first time under the direction of Hudson Strode at the University of Alabama.

The first part of the novel, *Awake! My Heart*, is written in the form of a schoolgirl's diary, and is the story of Louise Blair, a young American girl who has lived most of her life in Europe with her journalist father. Realizing the need of school certificates along with travel, she is enrolled in a fashionable boarding school in Switzerland. Louise is a rather shy and studious girl, with natural poise. She is delighted with the school, and the beautiful scenery, especially the view of the lake from her window with the mountains and France just beyond. Her teachers, hoping to use her as a good influence on the other American girl enrolled, assign Penelope Cotton, of Dallas, Texas, as her roommate. Louise is shocked at Penelope's attitude toward life, hating as she does all regulations which require work and prohibit gin and cigarettes. Penelope gives the key to her character in these

words: "I'm from Dallas, Texas, where you can do as you please." In disregard for all rules she indulges in a runaway escapade which results in her dismissal from school.

The second part of the story is laid in Rome, where Louise, under the care of Miss York as chaperone, meets an Italian prince, a baron and an American boy whose name is Kerry Gaines. Louise is surprised at the attention she receives from nobility, unaware that she is an heiress. A little flareup of Italian impetuosity, based on the desire for her money, is the only interruption to the gentle awakening of a young girl's heart. Pen appears again in search of a title and is instrumental in helping Louise make her decision which is one that pleases her readers.

*Awake! My Heart* is told with a charming directness that offers the mind a gracious interlude.

—Lucile Key Thompson.

*Follow the Drinking Gourd.* By Frances Gaither. McMillan. \$2.50.

Unquestionably there has been an avalanche of novels about the Old South during the past decade, but no others cover the same field as *Follow the Drinking Gourd*. The title comes from an old slave song in which the Drinking Gourd represents the Big Dipper that points the way for runaway Negroes to the North Star, the underground railroad and freedom. The book is concerned with conditions which lead slaves to follow the Drinking Gourd away from their families and friends on Hurricane Plantation near the Alabama River. Its theme, the economic and human waste of the slavery regime, is forcefully and impartially presented, but it is not the theme alone that makes the novel important. The chief values lie in the fresh approach of the author, her technique of effective compression, and the accuracy with which she portrays plantation life.

Pervading the whole story of Georgia Negroes transplanted into a new environment and governed by a succession

of overseers, is a sense of loneliness, which hovers over the dense swamp lands, is heard in the plaintive calls of the whip-poorwills and screech owls and even in the mournful whistle of the steamboat which the slaves call "Old Sad and Lonesome". Its real source lies in the absence of their master which leaves no one for them to love and no one to care about them.

There is not a hero in the book, but Poldo, Buck, Long Sam, Yellow Mary, and other negroes are clearly delineated. Even the overseers are portrayed as human beings, not villains, but stupid or indifferent victims of the order of the day.

Absentee landlordism, bad crops, low-priced cotton and the resultant debts bring ruin to Hurricane Plantation, but there is nothing hard or harsh in the author's account of inevitable disaster. Mrs. Gaither has recreated a section of life during the slave era, and her indictment of the system is effective because it is given realistically without bitterness or bias.

—Margaret Gillis Figli.

*Yesterday.* By C. C. Grayson. \$1.00 from the Author at Selma, Alabama.

In his memories of Selma Mr. Grayson gives us a series of pictures out of a past very interesting to those who love the old South. In his "Foreword" the author proves his claim to all that is implied in the term "birth and breeding" so no apology is needed when he frankly confesses to the wonder he felt in his trip to Selma at the age of ten, on the "palatial" steamer *Gertrude*, after the lean years of the post-War period.

The small boy revelled in the life of his new home—from the cock-fights in the yard of the fashionable St. James Hotel, to the tournaments and the Mardi Gras parades. With pardonable pride he gives us a panorama of events and people contributing to the growth of the "wooded city by the River" to which Colonel Wm. R. King had given the name of Selma, from the *Poems of Ossian*. Old homes, old families, old tradi-

tions are reviewed when "East was not far from West", when the railroad formed the northern boundary and Water Street monopolized the business life of the town.

Through the years that followed he shared the interests that grew in the baseball teams, the rival fire companies, the social clubs, the Y.M.C.A., the Masonic lodges, served for years as vestryman of St. Paul's Episcopal Church, and as member of the City Council aided in the development of the city from its "horse-and-buggy days of muddy streets to its present day standards of civic achievement. Like Ulysses of old the might say, "I am a part of all that I have seen." The Battle of Selma is vividly pictured and its significance, as a contributing factor to the fall of the Confederacy, proven. The Selma of today, with its paved streets, splendid schools, beautiful churches, modern hospitals, attractive homes, handsome stores, banks and public buildings is shown to be worthy of the noble traditions to which it fell heir from the worthy men and women who builded in that *Yesterday* of which we love to read.

—May H. Kyser.

*Journey Proud.* Thomasine McGehee. Macmillan. \$2.50.

Thomasine McGehee's *Journey Proud* is far from being just another sensational novel of the War Between the States. In spite of the fact that it covers the years 1857-1868 and contains its full share of battle, murder and sudden death, the term "sensational" is oddly inappropriate.

The reason lies in the fact that the book is consistently written from the point of view of a stay-at-home. War scenes come from letters, quotations from Richmond papers, or from the lips of men at home on sick leave. Mrs. McGehee never attempts an impossible eye-witness account of deeds of derring-do. Her very restraint gives a veil of anguished pity that makes such scenes the more memorable.

Rather than a war novel, *Journey Proud* is a carefully constructed story of the culture of the tobacco-planting sec-

tion of Virginia, generalized by the fact that the plantation system which it describes is the plantation system of the entire ante-bellum South. The amount of information that Mrs. McGehee manages to get into her book (It has fewer than four hundred pages) is an achievement in itself, an impossibility with a person who is less of a phrase-maker.

Mr. and Mrs. MacKay serve as the center of interest for the novel, dominating the thirty-two characters and supplying a smoothly running domestic plot with highlights of tenderness, humor and tragedy. Most of the other characters are representatives of various strata of ante-bellum society. Latin-quoting landowners and superstitious field Negroes rub elbows, figuratively speaking, with rhetorical politicians, ailing poor whites and urbane university students. Thus warp and woof of the social fabric are firmly woven.

The book is literally packed with other details of the culture of Piedmont. There are words of old songs and ballads that are now found largely in out-of-print books or perhaps not found at all. There are interesting bits of folklore like the following: When it thunders in March, the snakes turn over in their sleep. Wide spaces between the teeth mean that a person will travel widely. Never touch an apple when the sap is rising in the tree: the fruit is poison. Soap must be made in the dark of the moon.

Typical and historical scenes appear. There is a tournament (such a necessary festivity in the old South). There are feast days and holidays with various sisters and cousins and aunts come to dinner (and eating typical foods, like Piedmont's famous chess cakes). There is the county fair, the political rally, the gala unveiling of the Washington monument in Richmond, where Jackson and the V. M. I. cadets make their first appearance in the story.

There are scenes of the War. A planter turns tobacco land into farm land for the army. Women gossip about the real reason for the break between President Davis and Piedmont's General Johnston: Mrs. Johnston had called Mrs. Davis a Westerner, it seems, and Mrs. Davis had quite properly

resented the aspersion. A mother feels a sure and terrible premonition that her son is hurt.

Reconstruction comes inevitably. It is the ever-hungry children who work in the fields now. Negroes are sulky and improvident. A school mistress shows her futile rage by viciously marking out the name "Abraham Lincoln" in a text book and substituting "Old Satan". The family break-up is inevitable. Some go to cheaper land, some to the West, and some to a clerk's stool in Richmond or Staunton.

Mrs. McGehee's first novel is deftly phrased, entertaining and informing. Its cultural accuracy is perhaps its most impressive single feature. A person familiar with the particular counties of Piedmont in which the story is laid actually recognizes places, types of family names, and peculiar local customs. It is gratifying to know that this first novel by an Alabamian was given first place by the Book of the Month Club when published and has received favorable reviews in various national journals.

—Emily Sinclair Calcott.



# THE ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY



THE ALABAMA WORLD WAR MEMORIAL BUILDING  
Permanent Home of the Alabama State Department  
of Archives and History

---

VOL. 2

NO. 3

---

FALL ISSUE  
1940

# THE ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY

MARIE BANKHEAD OWEN, Editor

EMMETT KILPATRICK, Co-Editor



Published by the  
STATE DEPARTMENT  
OF  
ARCHIVES AND HISTORY

Price \$2.00 annually; single copies, 50c.

---

VOL. 2

NO. 3

---

FALL ISSUE

1940

WETUMPKA PRINTING CO.  
Printers and Publishers  
Wetumpka, Ala.  
1941

## CONTENTS

	Page
State Archives Dedicated .....	274
Address of Dr. R. D. W. Connor.....	274
Alabama Black Belt—Renwick C. Kennedy.....	282
Big Creek Baptist Church—Marion Johnson .....	291
Fitzpatrick Bridge—Marie Bankhead Owen .....	295
Original Anecdotes about Napoleon Bonaparte—Mobile Commercial Register .....	299
Survivors Constitutional Convention, 1901—Judge Walter Burgwyn Jones .....	309
Martin Marshall's Book: Household Hints—Weymouth T. Jordan .....	318
Recollections of William L. Yancey—Joel Barnett.....	331
More Yancey-Davis Letters .....	334
Later History of Madison County—Thomas Jones Taylor.....	342
Diary of Captain Edward Crenshaw of the Confederate States Army .....	365
Poems—	
The Low Country—Mary B. Ward.....	386
In Peace and Loveliness—Anne Southerne Tardy.....	387
Painted Rock at Sunrise—Anne Southerne Tardy.....	388
All Summer Long—Kathleen Sutton .....	388
Singing and Decoration—Nan Connell Richardson .....	389
Counsel With a Wounded Heart—Louise Crenshaw Ray.....	390
Golden Dross—Lucille Key Thompson .....	390
Lament For a Cardinal—Louise Leyden .....	391
Cheaha Mountain—Louise Leyden .....	391
April—Louise Leyden .....	392
Book Reviews .....	393
Genealogical Department Queries .....	399

### **STATE ARCHIVES DEDICATED BY SOCIETY OF AMERICAN ARCHIVISTS**

The first public exercises held in the Alabama World War Memorial Building under the auspices of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History, which occupies the building, was on June 14, 1940, immediately after the Department moved into its new quarters. At that time the stately marble corridor on the second floor was dedicated by the Board of Trustees of the Department as the Hall of Flags.

The second public ceremonies held in the building transpired on November 11, 1940, when the three archival sections of the Department's collections were dedicated by the Society of American Archivists. That organization, composed of men and women who administer official archives throughout the forty-eight states of the Union were holding their fourth annual meeting. Among the distinguished archivists present was the National Archivist, Dr. R. D. W. Connor, from Washington, D. C. Several other addresses in addition to Dr. Connor's were made, in which each speaker eulogized the vision of the late Thomas M. Owen, who was responsible for the creation of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History, by the Legislature of 1901. That the stately building and its valuable contents were the materialization of the dream of Dr. Owen prior to his death in 1920 was a matter of frequent reference and high praise by each speaker. Other sessions of the Society of American Archivists, during the two days of their meeting in Montgomery, were held at the Jefferson Davis Hotel.

#### **Address of Dr. R. D. W. Connor, National Archivist**

We have met this afternoon to dedicate those portions of this beautiful building that have been set aside for the use of the archival sections of the Alabama Department of Archives and History. All of us are fully aware of the significance of this event. The establishment of this department in 1901 has been called "a new venture in political science" in the United States. Historical societies dedicated to analogous purposes had appeared much earlier in our history and had rendered and are still rendering indispensable service to American scholarship and culture, but those societies were private or semi-public institutions supported in part, at least, by member-

ship fees and endowments from private sources and did not usually have custody of public archives. The Alabama department, on the other hand, was the first archival agency established in the United States as an official organ of a government. The full significance of this fact becomes apparent when we recall that today the Federal Government and nearly every state in the Union have followed the example thus set by the State of Alabama.

A philosopher once said that an institution is but the lengthened shadow of a man's life. No better illustration of this truth can be found than the Alabama Department of Archives and History. The brain-child of Thomas M. Owen, it was he who brought it into existence, nourished it through the weakness of infancy, directed its growth into strength and vigor, and indelibly stamped upon it the qualities of his own mind and character. The idea expressed in this building and the purposes to which it is dedicated, like most ideas that find expression in some concrete form, was not the result of theory but of experience. Although trained to the law, Dr. Owen in early life found his interests running strongly to history. He had already manifested a deep interest in the history of his native state when in 1894 an opportunity came to him to enter the service of the government in Washington. Without hesitation he gave up his growing law practice in Alabama because he realized the opportunities that would be opened to him by a brief sojourn at the Nation's capital. There he would have access to the rich sources for historical research at the Library of Congress and association with eminent publicists and scholars whose interests were similar to his own. Into this circle, composed of such men as Stephen B. Weeks, Colyer Merriwether, Thomas Nelson Page, and, at times, Walter Hines Page, he found ready and welcome admittance. One of the first fruits of his association with these men was the organization of the Southern Historical Association, which for many years was a powerful factor in stimulating historical interests in the South.

At every opportunity to escape from the grind of his duties in the Post Office Department, young Owen would hasten to the Library of Congress, where for two years he labored diligently and happily at the compilation of bibliographies of Alabama and her sister state of Mississippi. This work brought him into close and friendly relations with Dr. Ainsworth R. Spofford, Librarian of Congress, under whose direction Owen did his work. Spofford,

probably, exercised a greater influence upon Owen's professional career than any other person. He was, says his biographer, "perhaps the most widely renowned of the librarians of the old school, who took, or seemed to take, all that was between the covers (of their books) as their own province". His marvelous memory made him "an unfailing source of factual knowledge to official and unofficial Washington" and "a conspicuous and even unique member of various cultural and learned societies" in that city. With Spofford and the other members of his circle of friends, Dr. Owen discussed books, delved deeply into the mysteries of research, imbibed the spirit of true scholarship, and greatly broadened his historical outlook.

Three years of such experience proved a liberal education for the young scholar from the Deep South and when he returned to Alabama in 1897 he was fully resolved to desert the dreary science of Solon for the more congenial service of Clio. The South was notoriously indifferent to the preservation of the sources of its history and Dr. Owen believed that he could render no more valuable service to his people than to arouse them from their lethargy in this matter. To this task he set his hand and heart and mind with all the enthusiasm of the neophyte. A fortunate incident paved the way for him. Calling upon an official at the Capitol one day shortly after his return to the state, he noticed that the door to the office was propped open by an old book. His indignation at this desecration was aroused when upon examination he found the book to be nothing less than a bound volume containing the "original telegrams sent by Gov. A. B. Moore to various military leaders, state and national, during the first year of the Confederacy." Then and there the Alabama Department of Archives and History was conceived.

Aroused by this example of an archival crime, Dr. Owen began his attack upon an indifferent officialdom. He prepared his case with painstaking thoroughness. Everybody knew that Alabama had a great history, but few realized that knowledge of that history was based chiefly on tradition and, therefore, lacked much in fullness and accuracy because of the lack of available source materials. During the two centuries of her history, Alabama had made and accumulated valuable records of her life and development, but nobody seemed to know how voluminous they were, where they could be found, or how well they were being cared for. Tom

Owen, however, had an inquisitive mind. He wanted to know the facts, and he began to investigate. Those of us who have followed along the path that he trod know well enough what he discovered—a trail of destruction left by careless officials and inexperienced clerks; the throwing of valuable official records into tow sacks to be hauled away and dumped into warehouses in order to make room for current files; the losses and deterioration that even the current files were suffering from inadequate protection and official indifference.

As a lawyer and as a scholar, Dr. Owen knew the potential value to both the State and its citizens of official correspondence, orders, reports, account books, land grants, judicial proceedings, Legislative journals, laws, and other public records however old they may be. As a lawyer, he knew that government officials are dependent upon such records for the orderly conduct of public business and the protection of public interests; that the citizen finds in them the evidence of his rights and liberties—his right to vote, his right to the land on which he lives, his right to carry on business, his right to inherit and devise property, his right to freedom of assembly, freedom of speech, freedom of worship. As a scholar, Dr. Owen knew that such records are the chief sources of the history of the state and its people, that many of them have inestimable sentimental and cultural value, and that a people who are indifferent to their past need not hope to make their future great.

Armed with facts and equipped with arguments, Dr. Owen carried his war into Africa. With a bill for the establishment of a Department of Archives and History in his pocket, he invaded the Capitol, besieged representatives, sandbagged senators, and captured the governor. His bill, having jumped all the Legislative hurdles, finally reached the desk of the Governor, who approved it on February 27, 1901; five days later the department was organized and Dr. Owen entered upon his duties as Director, which were to terminate only with his death 20 years later.

Dr. Owen's conception of the objects and purposes of the department is set forth in a section of the organic act. They are: the care and custody of official archives, the collection of materials bearing upon the history of the state, and of the territory included therein, from the earliest times, the completion



and publication of the state's official records and other historical materials, the diffusion of knowledge in reference to the history and resources of the state, (and) the encouragement of historical work and research . . . It would be difficult to improve this statement, and there are probably few of us who afterwards drafted similar legislation for our own states who did not incorporate it almost *verbatim* into our bills. At least, I can speak for one of them.

The beginnings of the Alabama department were modest. An annual appropriation of \$3,000 was deemed sufficient for all purposes and the Senate cloakroom adequate as an archival repository. Nothing daunted by this unpromising outlook, the Director set to work. His first drive was upon heads of executive and administrative departments to persuade them to transfer their non-current records to the archives department. From all sorts of sources he collected manuscripts, books, newspapers, museum objects, and portraits of famous Alabamians. Soon the Senate cloakroom was bursting with Owen's collections and legislators were beginning to fear that unless they gave him more space, he would take over the halls of legislation and perhaps the offices of the Governor and other officials. You may think this statement somewhat exaggerated, but how else, by any accepted canon of historical interpretation, can you explain the fact that in 1903 the alarmed lawmakers were induced to appropriate \$150,000 for the enlargement of the Capitol? Upon the completion of the first of the new wings, Dr. Owen immediately moved in, and with characteristic self-restraint took over *only* half of the basement for his archives and one half of the second floor for his other activities. Doubtless grateful officials of the government were duly appreciative of his consideration in leaving the other half of the wing for the use of some half dozen other departments. But the end was not yet. Within a decade the stream of material which continued to flow into the Department of Archives and History burst forth from its narrow confines in the Capitol and overflowed into five buildings which then stood on the block now occupied by this building in which we are assembled.

This memorial Building is the capstone of Dr. Owen's work and like the Department of Archives and History owes its existence to his inspiration. The year 1919 in which the idea, of which it is the concrete expression, began to take shape in his mind, was the centennial year of the admission of Alabama into the Federal

Union. It was also the year in which Alabama's "Doughboys", leaving 1,698 of their comrades quietly sleeping in the poppy fields of Flanders, came home from the World War, in which they had added new glory to the history of their State. A grateful people wished to commemorate their services to the state and nation by some fitting memorial. What more suitable form could such a memorial take than a beautiful building as enduring as the marble in their everlasting hills, erected "to commemorate the part of Alabama and Alabamians in the World War" and devoted to the preservation of the records of their heroism and patriotism?

The necessary legislation was passed, a commission was created to carry the Legislative will into effect, and Dr. Owen was made its executive officer. Although he died within a year after the creation of the commission, I am sure that it can be said, without injustice to his associates, that it was largely his inspiration in the initial stages of project that enabled them to carry it to a successful conclusion.

Dr. Owen's death on March 25, 1920, would have been a far greater loss to both the Department of Archives and History and the Memorial Commission had there not been immediately available as his successor one who had been at his side from the very conception of his plans and was familiar with every step he had taken in their development. No other knew so well as she his hard struggles and sacrifices in the early days of small things, no other had been a more sympathetic counselor and guide in the days of the larger things, and no other understood more clearly his plans for the future. As his tasks fell from his hands, she was ready to take them up, and I am sure that you are all happy to join me today in paying tribute to the courage and skill with which she has guided them to their present triumphant success.

There is one other phase of Dr. Owen's work and character to which I must refer. He was the courageous pioneer who blazed the trail through the wilderness along which the rest of us have followed. No matter how hard his own problems pressed upon him, he was never too busy or too weary to reach out a helping hand to his younger and less experienced colleagues. I was one of those colleagues who was able to make headway through the archival wilderness only because he had been the trailblazer, and I hope you will pardon me if I inject a personal note into these remarks. In 1907, I became the first full-time, salaried secretary

of the recently established Historical Commission of North Carolina. Never was a less competent amateur called upon to do a professional's job. Fortunately, I had sense enough to realize my shortcomings and in search of guidance I jumped the first train that left Raleigh after my appointment and headed for Montgomery.

Though Dr. Owen had never seen me before, and must have considered me a nuisance, he greeted me with all the kindness of an older brother. I found him installed in his cramped quarters in the Capitol, literally lost to view behind great mountains of disorderly masses of documents, which had been piling up on him so rapidly and in such volume as would have discouraged a less determined man. As you can well imagine, there was little I could learn from this situation about archival organization, arrangement, classification, or cataloguing, nor did I have the slightest comprehension of what he was talking about when he discussed the principle of provenance, *respect des fonds*, and other archival mysteries. Nevertheless, my visit to him was one of the most profitable experiences of my life. It was not what he had done, nor what he said that dwells with me today; it was what he was. He was energy, he was enthusiasm, he was courage, he was vision, he was faith, he was inspiration, and when I reluctantly bade him goodbye I knew in my heart that some day he would build here in Montgomery one of the great archival institutions in our country. I count it a rare privilege, indeed, to be able to come back to Montgomery after 33 years to witness the realization of his dreams as we see them here today.

An eminent European scholar once observed, "The care which a nation devotes to the preservation of the monuments of its past may serve as a true measure of the degree of civilization to which it has attained." Chief among the monuments of a people's past are its work of art and its written records. They happen also to be the most perishable. Primitive people sometimes execute crude works of art, apparently to gratify their urge for self-expression, but with no thought of preserving them. Such people do not make records for the purpose of preserving information for the benefit of future generations. They are too much absorbed in the more urgent tasks of procuring food, shelter, clothing, security. It is only when their primitive needs are assured, when problems of private property and personal rights begin to emerge, when

release from physical labor leaves them time for leisure that people begin to make and preserve records. At first simple and crude because reflecting the life of a simple and crude society, such records increase in variety and complexity as the society itself becomes more highly developed. The character and volume of its records, therefore, reflect the culture of the society that creates them.

When we consider the foresight of the State of Alabama in creating her Department of Archives and History, her interest in collecting and making available for use the records of her past, and her generosity in providing this magnificent building for their preservation, may we not say that Alabama may be well content to point to them as the true measure of the degree of culture and civilization to which her people have attained?

### ALABAMA BLACK BELT

*By Renwick C. Kennedy*

(Mr. Kennedy is already known to readers of *The Alabama Historical Quarterly* through his "The Poets on Fish Creek", a folk study appearing in the Spring issue of the magazine. Pastor of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church in Camden, Alabama, he is also a contributor to such leading American journals as *Christian Century*, *New Republic* and *Social Forces*.)

In Alabama "Black Belt" is a fair-spoken term. It has definite technical, political and social meanings.

Specifically it refers to a belt of twelve counties stretching across the state between Columbus, Georgia and Meridian, Mississippi. The honored counties are Macon, Montgomery, Lowndes, Autauga, Dallas, Wilcox, Perry, Hale, Greene, Sumter, Marengo and Pickens.

The Black Belt corresponds not merely to the right side of the track but to the old, exclusive best-family streets. It is not a matter for remark to be a native of the Wiregrass in southeast Alabama, or of Sand Mountain in northeast Alabama, or of the Tennessee Valley, or of the Birmingham district. These autochthons must stand upon their own feet and win respect by their own merit. But if you are from the Black Belt, well, it is like being from the Low Country in South Carolina, or Tidewater in Virginia, or the Blue Grass in Kentucky.

Virginians and South Carolinians are still proud of the states that gave them birth. They say in casual tones that hardly conceal their satisfaction, "I am from Virginia," or "I am from South Carolina." It carries weight. Southerners who know their South give them instant approval for having been born in either of those states. It is much more effective and gratifying than having been born in North Carolina or Georgia. The reason for this attitude is not difficult to find. Virginia and South Carolina are the two states in which pre-Confederate Southern aristocracy reached its zenith.

In Alabama the Black Belt counties achieved the most exalted aristocracy of any section of the state.

The origin of the term Black Belt is not clear. One school of opinion refers it to the large Negro population of the counties,

running in some cases to eighty per cent. Others refer it to the black soil of the area.

In any case, the original significance of the words has been lost. Today Black Belt in Alabama connotes primarily neither Negroes nor soil, but a way of living.

The men and women of the Old South had something the debunkers have not been able to destroy. Let it be granted that their intellectual culture was on the fustian side, that their physical conveniences were mediaeval, and that their economic underpinning rested directly upon Negro slavery. For good measure let still other indictments be granted.

Still, they had something, a way of life, a grace of living, an attitude of superiority, simple, natural and artless, that their descendants of the Twentieth Century covet with atavistic longing and seldom find. Perhaps the old, abused, ridiculous word—charm—still gets closest to it.

The pre-Confederate South produced the only landed gentry of significant numbers this country has had, though even in the South they were a minority. Basically feudal and European, Southern plantation life developed an aristocracy of immigrant stock that rapidly learned its way about as aristocracy and had by 1861 become in many individual cases the genuine thing. Fortunately the stock was on the whole good, much of it invested with first-class strains of blood and character, which to the gentleman and lady of the Old South were essentially the same thing.

The millions of people who read Margaret Mitchell's story of the liquidation of Georgia aristocracy in *Gone with the Wind*, experienced strange emotions: admiration for the South, sympathy for a despoiled people, contempt for certain types of the despoilers. But to this observer it appeared that one dominant emotion was an uneasy, wistful regret that such pleasant people and their pleasant way of life had vanished from the earth. They had something, something very good and very delightful that few people have anymore. They possessed their souls, those people of the Old South, and took their superiority over other men for granted. Not that they were offensive about it. Nor, perhaps, were they actually superior, certainly not all of them. Nonetheless they were an untitled nobility in the mediaeval South with slaves

to do their work, manor houses to maintain, chivalry to practise and a great tradition to live.

Let every Yankee criticism and renegade sneer at them be granted. Let even proletarian bitterness against them be granted. There still is something in the bombast of their speeches, the rustle of their crinoline and the spaciousness of their lives that makes hungry the bedeviled, mechanized people of present day America.

The type is nearly extinct but not entirely. In the Carolina Low Country, the Mississippi Delta, a few parishes in Louisiana, a few counties in Georgia, and in the Alabama Black Belt the strain still survives, somewhat tainted by the Twentieth Century but preserved well enough to be recognized.

Nowhere is it more authentically intact than in the Alabama Black Belt. Nowhere is it preserved in a larger single area than here. Yet of all the museum pieces of the Old South that remain none has received less publicity and none is less widely known.

There are two reasons for this. First, the Belt was not ravaged by the Confederate War in such spectacular manner as the Delta, Georgia and South Carolina. No major battles were fought upon its terrain, and as a matter of fact only a few minor skirmishes. Federal armies did not penetrate it until the War was in its last months. When they did the torch was not applied promiscuously. Thus, it is not so cluttered with purple history as some other areas of the South.

A second reason is no doubt that the Black Belt has never been made the scene of either a great or a popular novel. Nor has it produced a single writer of its own of real distinction.

So, unsung and unknown and relatively unexploited, it has gone its calm, quiet way, restoring much of its former grandeur at the top while the present century has steadily leached it away from the bottom.

Alabama was admitted to the Union in 1819. Forty-two years later when the War came the Black Belt had a civilization that was hardly inferior to that of South Carolina. It was an amazing thing, this transformation of a wilderness into a civilized community of high culture in forty-two years. What happened, however, was simple enough. The plantation culture of the seaboard

South was lifted bodily and transplanted to the canebrakes of the Black Belt. Slaves cleared the land and put it into cotton and built manor houses. Planters came with their families and relatives and slaves from the Carolinas, Virginia, Georgia, and some turned back eastward from Mississippi.

Frontier conditions disappeared rapidly. Poor whites flocking to the new state found the Black Belt inhospitable with its aristocrats and slaves. Even today the poor white sections of the state are in the rugged, less fertile country north of the Belt and in the less fertile coastal plain south of it.

From the beginning the Black Belt dominated the state, particularly its politics. It has produced governors and state officials and United States senators in numbers far out of proportion to its voting population, and it still does. Some of its counties with less than 2,000 votes are today represented in the State Legislature by one senator and two representatives, while in more populous sections of the state white counties are grouped in twos and threes to get one senator for the group and one representative for each county. Black Belt politicians are astute and to date have succeeded in defeating all reapportionment schemes, but it seems unlikely that they can go on forever playing with clogged dice. The clamor for reapportionment in northern counties and in the turbulent Birmingham district gets louder and more insistent at each Legislature. Some day the white counties are going to turn the proud Black Belt into a political backwater. That will not represent a gain for the State, for the hegemony of the Black Belt has probably been better than any other section could have provided.

This is true because the Belt has produced people of "quality". It has had an aristocracy, for the most part a benevolent, educated, paternalistic aristocracy, in the great tradition of the Old South.

An aristocracy has its faults, and always its ingrained prejudices, which are usually protective devices and which usually contain the seeds of its own destruction. It also has its merits. The aristocracy developed in the Old South had more good points than evil. Granted the Peculiar Institution of slavery, the Southern aristocrat probably handled it better than it has been handled anywhere in the world at any time. The writer does not wish to defend slavery, though it could be argued with some cogency that



Negro slaves were in many respects more fortunate than Negro tenants today. Still, slavery had to go. But upon the economic base of slavery, whatever may be said about it, the Southern aristocrat erected a distinctive way of life that for its dignity and grace has not been equalled by anyone else in this country.

In the year 1941, that way of living survives in the Alabama Black Belt. It is not intact. It is not untainted. It is not a facsimile. It rests not upon slave labor but upon tenant labor, which perhaps is only a change of terms. Yet it is fundamentally the same way of life, modified by time and circumstance, which would have modified even slavery had it continued.

Consider the Black Belt aristocrat of today. He is a gentleman, a scholar and a Christian in the Old South usage of those terms. Certainly he is a gentleman. Actually he is rarely a scholar and only formally a Christian. Fundamentally he is a land-owner dedicated to the theory that the Lord made the country for him to own and enjoy and someone else to work. His worker happens to be the Negro, but his theory would have been the same had the laborer been white.

A thousand-acre plantation in the Black Belt is a commonplace. There are some that run above ten thousand. Upon such land holdings there are a manor house, or perhaps two, and scores of tenant cabins. Cotton is still the major crop, though many owners are turning to cattle.

With the feudal background of an extensive acreage and a large retinue of laborers and their families one maintains ideas and practices that are not current in other communities of the nation.

The typical Black Belter is an intelligent and privileged person. He has graduated from some college, too often a provincial institution. He is not an intellectual. He is a conservative and an individualist. Yet he is a man of tolerance in matters that do not touch him too closely. He is opposed to work. He likes to hunt and fish, to play poker and bridge, to give parties and picnics and barbecues and dinners and to attend those of his neighbors, to loaf and to talk and to dance. He is inefficient and dilatory in his business and at the same time shrewd enough to trade you out of your pants. He follows the cult of chivalry and has a tendency to glorify his women. At the same time he is none too happy with

them, and is entirely capable of seducing his neighbor's wife. He is usually kind to his Negroes but keeps them in place with an iron hand. A Negro in his place as a servant has nothing to fear from him unless a little carelessness, conscious or unconscious, in bookkeeping. For a Negro out of his place, demanding civil liberties or other human rights not customarily granted, his answer is the lash or exile or death. Yet a Negro seldom receives from him the sheer brutality meted out by the poor white. As for the poor white himself, the Black Belter has only contempt. He prefers the Negro.

There are a few pre-Confederate palaces in the Black Belt, as magnificent as any in the South. There are a number of fine old houses, with great halls, enormous rooms, old furniture, and an ample retinue of servants. Living in them are men and women of the old tradition, people who are exquisite hosts, gifted conversationalists, spirited and sensitive human beings, distinctly outside the stream of United States culture.

Montgomery and Selma are their cities, and Mobile, though the latter is outside the Belt. But it is in the small towns that their culture is seen at its best, in Uniontown and Demopolis, Camden and Eutaw, Marion and Greensboro, Livingston and Hayneville. These little towns are different in a subtle, indefinable way. The pace of life in them is leisurely, but that is not the difference. Their people, one feels, know how to live. Not that they make a good living, for they do not. And not that they are happy. The community life is criss-crossed with ingrained hatreds and strange perversions of personal dislike. Many of the old and best families are definitely decadent, as well as financially exhausted. A fierce struggle for survival, for jobs, for emotional triumph over one's enemies is constantly waged. Yet one lives by a code of manners—it could hardly be called a code of morals—that is rarely breached. The darkest hatred and the fiercest contest must conform to the suavities of the ancient code of the Southern Gentleman. So it is that bitter dislikes and poignant forbidden loves rub elbows daily on the streets and in the social contacts of the little Black Belt towns in the general guise of perfect manners and good taste. It is a matter of front, or of form. The code is seldom violated. When it is, the expression it takes may be murder, for the Black Belter will kill you. However he seldom does for he seldom violates his code, which calls for

bitter, unspoken, unexplained, silken hatred, not for violence. It is the "poor buckra" who says what they feel and commit violence.

His friendships are equally vivid and unreasoning. A friend is always right, even though unaccountably he be a liberal, or a sheer freak. For unmitigated loyalty nothing surpasses a Black Belt friendship. That, too, is a part of the code.

The Black Belter takes life in an easy stride. Let it be said again that he has little traffic with work. He knows and eats good food. He wears good clothes. He reads a little and talks beautifully. He has good manners and good taste. He has made a fine art of doing nothing. He likes whiskey, prefers good whiskey, and is expected to take more of it than other men. His habits of thought are complex and indirect, and are compounded too much with his prejudices. He is sensitive, too sensitive, taking offense where you least expect it. His ritualistic religion does not interfere with his life very much, though he maintains a devout attitude about it. He likes his women to be beautiful but at least feminine and non-intellectual. He is uncomfortable without a Negro servant behind his chair or within call. He is either arrogant or timid in the face of the post-war decades of the Twentieth Century, in either case on the defensive. He does not understand or like the present day. He is about broke. His way of life rested upon cotton as its economic support and cotton has betrayed him. He can no longer make money with cotton. He is bewildered. The poor whites and other outsiders, even Yankees, are invading his counties and towns. He is about defeated and will disappear from the world. He knows it but refuses to admit it. Even his children are not going to be like him.

He is an anachronism and perhaps it is just as well that he must go. Yet it is a pity, too. It is an unhappy thing. For the Black Belt gentleman and his lady are delightful people. They are people of quality. They live with a quiet detachment. They come nearer to making a fine art of living than anyone in the United States save their own kind in other parts of the South. They are a fine breed. They have something ordinary mortals do not have. It was in their breeding and training. But there is not much place for them. They cannot survive in a totalitarian, collectivist, proletarian world. They are doomed. Their going will not make the world any better.

Those who know and love them are sorry to see them go.

They have always been people of quality. They had it.

There are still a few of them left in the Black Belt of Alabama. But not for long.



BIG CREEK BAPTIST CHURCH

Organized January 10, 1829

Building Erected 1939

## BIG CREEK BAPTIST CHURCH

### Oldest in Pickens County

*By Marion Johnson*

(This article by Marion Johnson, of Carrollton, Ala., is one of a series of articles about old churches in the state that will be carried in the following issues of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*. January, 1941 marked the 112th anniversary of the founding of the Big Creek Baptist Church, the oldest church in Pickens County. The present building was completed in August, 102 years ago and is the oldest church building of any denomination in that county.)

The First Baptist church to be organized in Pickens County was in 1823 at the Garden, and it was called *Enon*. This organization was later moved to Aliceville, where it has been in continuous operation and will soon be housed in the finest and most commodious building in this part of the state. The second organization was at Yorkville, now Ethelsville, the church at that place having been organized by Elder Jacob Crocker in 1824. It has long since ceased to exist.

On January 10, 1829, the third church was organized at Big Creek. There were fourteen members in the original organization and they chose the Reverend Charles Stewart as their pastor. He labored there until his death in 1856. The first deacons were Notley Gore and Dempsey White.

One can spend an interesting hour in looking over the minutes of the congregation, which are now in the possession of the Moderator of the Union Baptist Association, the Honorable M. B. Curry, of Carrollton. This is not the original volume, for in 1843 the minutes to that time were copied in the present book and it is that volume that has come down to Mr. Curry. It is well preserved and the clerks of the congregation were with few exceptions excellent scribes. The writing is clear and distinct and easily read.

In the second month after its organization the membership of the church had been increased to twenty, one a "Black woman, Melly." That entry led to a close inspection of other similar entries in the book, for the question immediately presented itself: What was the attitude of slaveholders toward the spiritual development of their slaves?

Entry after entry indicates that there was no neglect in this regard. The blacks (for that was the term used in referring to slaves) were given every opportunity to attach themselves to the church. An entry in August, 1839, relates that a committee had been appointed "to examine the preaching talents of a black brother, Peter, and to report to the church." As a result of the investigation Peter was "permitted to exercise in singing, prayer and exhortation among the colored people so far as the law tolerates." In another ten years the minutes disclose that there were thirty-four black members of the Big Creek Baptist Church out of a total membership of one hundred sixty-four. In 1848 it was agreed that the church build an addition to accommodate the "black population." Another entry is to the effect that "the church permit the blacks to hold meetings in this church when it does not interfere with other appointments." And again: "The church respectfully requests the gentlemen of the neighborhood to attend the meetings of the blacks as often as convenient." All in all the minutes of this congregation throw a most interesting aide light on the race relations as they existed "before the war."

Peace and harmony did not always prevail among the congregation, however. On church days the grievances of the membership were aired. Saturday before the regular preaching day in each month was the time when church conferences were held. On one occasion after the investigation of a claim of \$35, brought by one brother against another, a charge of usury was made. The trial was held openly with the membership of the church constituting the jury. In most cases the verdict required the recalcitrant member of the church to present himself before the congregation, confess his fault and make amends. If one absented himself too frequently from church services an order was entered requiring the erring one to attend the next meeting of the congregation and "show cause." Church membership in that day carried with it heavy responsibilities as to conduct. Trials for profanity, dancing, card playing and intoxication were not infrequent. In most cases the guilty one got off by standing before the congregation, acknowledging his fault and asking for forgiveness; but the minutes reveal a number of cases where a member was "turned out because of failure to answer a summons or for a repeated violation of the church rules."

These early members of the Big Creek Church constituted some of the wealthiest and most influential people of the county, many of whose descendants still reside here. It was from this church that Mrs. Candace Bostick, the grandmother of Judge J. J. Willett, of Anniston, and of Mrs. Bessie Willett Elmore, of Demopolis, came with Mrs. Caroline Sherrod and Matthew Lyon and others, to organize the Baptist Church in Carrollton in 1846. From the congregation of Big Creek church sprung many other churches now in existence in Pickens County.

While many value Big Creek Church because of the blood ties that connect them with some one on the long roll of those who have constituted the membership of that church, yet it has a historical value and importance for other reasons. According to the best authorities it was on the spot where the sacred old edifice now stands that there occurred the severance in the congregation which resulted in the organization of the Primitive Baptist Church, leaving the Missionary division to carry on in the old meeting house. This noteworthy fact gives to this simple and unpretentious House of God a claim to fame and should render it an object of solicitude and interest as long as the denomination survives. It was in 1837 that this severance of the church occurred. The anti-missionary spirit, which had been manifest for several years, reached a climax in that year when the Union Baptist Association met at Big Creek church. On this occasion two groups of delegates from Friendship, in Greene County, presented credentials. One group favored non-fellowship with all missionary enterprises, while the other group adhered to the policy of missionary extension. It was agreed that a vote of the Association as a whole be taken to determine which group should be recognized. The Reverend Henry Petty was Moderator of the Association and upon taking the vote he announced a tie—twenty-six votes having been cast by the anti-missionary element and the same number by the missionary adherents. Some insisted that the vote had been miscounted and that the missionary element had a majority of one. This being Saturday it was agreed that the matter should go over until the following Monday. After much discussion on Monday and apparently no vote upon the merits of the case being in sight, a motion was made and seconded that the Moderator be removed from the chair. Without putting the motion, Mr. Petty arose and called upon his friends to follow him from the church. Upon leaving the building he was followed by twenty-five dele-



gates. They formed themselves into a separate Association and thus was born in Pickens County that branch of the Baptist faith known as Hardshells or Primitives. This church grew to be a strong influence in the county and numbered many good and influential men among its membership.

Big Creek ceased to exist as an organized church in 1931. The church building remains, cared for by a few whose ties of family bind them to the spot. It sits just off the Carrollton and Pickensville road and daily many pass who do not know of its existence. Close by is the burying ground where for generations families of the community have placed their sainted dead. Like an aged patriarch the old church house sits in the sun, forgotten by many, revered by a few, brooding upon the memories of other days.

## ALABAMA HISTORY IN BRIDGES

### No. 4

#### FITZPATRICK BRIDGE

*By Marie Bankhead Owen*

Following the practice of many years another beautiful Alabama bridge has been named for a distinguished former citizen of the state. On the morning of December 10, 1940, a long bridge towering above and across the Tallapoosa River, at Tallassee, the Benjamin Fitzpatrick, was dedicated with elaborate ceremonies. Governor Frank M. Dixon designated the name and a descendant of Governor Fitzpatrick formally christened the bridge with water from a spring from which Governor Fitzpatrick had often drunk. The exercises were preceded by an historical pageant under direction of Mrs. T. H. Floyd and entitled "Tallassee on the March". The scenes portrayed in the pageant as the actors marched across the long bridge from Tallassee to East Tallassee where the speaker's stand had been erected for the review, represented characters and scenes in the history of the town and the section. The episode represented began with the invasion of the first white race under DeSoto in 1540 and ended with scenes connected with the present industrial life of Tallassee. A number of bands were present and gave life and interest to the scenes. Bronze tablets on each end of the bridge bore the words "Benjamin Fitzpatrick Bridge. Dedicated to the memory of Benjamin Fitzpatrick; Governor of Alabama, 1841-1845; U. S. Senator, 1848-1861. Bridge built by Elmore and Tallapoosa Counties, the State of Alabama and the Federal Government, 1940."

The Fitzpatrick Bridge, more than 1700 feet in length, the floor being 26 feet wide with four foot walkways on either side, and supported by 12 reinforced concrete piers, varies in width from 40 to 120 feet, conforming with the topography of the area. It is built in a curve and is said by authorities to be the only one of its type in the world. The girders, deck trusses, spans and floor are of steel and reinforced concrete. The bridge forms one of the most important links of State Highway 14, extending from east to west.

The Fitzpatrick Bridge was constructed under the direction and supervision of State Highway Director Chris J. Sherlock and T. P. Trotter, Highway Department Bridge Engineer.

### **Benjamin Fitzpatrick**

Benjamin Fitzpatrick was the ninth Governor of Alabama and was for a number of years a United States Senator from this state. He was born in 1802 in Georgia and died at Wetumpka in 1869. Although born in Georgia, Governor Fitzpatrick was of parentage that had moved from Virginia to the former state immediately following the end of the war of the American Revolution. The older Fitzpatrick served with such distinction in that war that he was presented with a sword for service rendered at Savannah where he was wounded. His newly adopted state elected him to the Legislature where he served for nineteen consecutive years. On the maternal side Governor Fitzpatrick was descended from the Phillips family. The Fitzpatrick ancestry, however, was of Irish origin which located in Virginia as early as 1720. Among Governor Fitzpatrick's other ancestors were the Woodsons and Napiers of Virginia, the latter family being of French Huguenot descent.

The future Governor of Alabama was left an orphan at the age of seven and was reared by an older sister. He came to Alabama in 1816 at that time only fourteen years of age, having been sent into the Indian country to manage the interests of his brothers who had acquired land on the banks of the Alabama River north of Montgomery. While he was still very young he served as a Deputy Sheriff in Elmore County which at the time was a part of Autauga. In addition to supervising the farming interests of the family, young Benjamin became a clerk in a trading house on the present site of Wetumpka. He read law in Montgomery and was admitted to the bar at that place and formed a professional partnership with Henry Goldthwaite who became one of the most distinguished lawyers of the early period of the state.

Just as Alabama became a state, young Fitzpatrick was elected Solicitor of Montgomery County, a position he held for several terms but the lure of the land drew him back to the Fitzpatrick plantation where he conducted his agricultural activities. In those early times most of the politicians of the state were also planters and in 1839 Fitzpatrick was placed at the head of the Democratic

ticket for the State-at-large to canvass the interests of Van Buren for President. He made such a good impression upon the electorate through his public addresses and appearances that in 1841 he was elected Governor of Alabama and re-elected two years later for a second term.

The most important event of Governor Fitzpatrick's administration was the overthrow of the greatly abused state banking system. The operations of these banks had made the state liable for their indebtedness which brought it on the brink of financial ruin. Governor Fitzpatrick appointed a commission to adjust the affairs of the banks which ably fulfilled its trust.

In 1848 Governor Fitzpatrick was chosen by the incumbent Governor, Reuben Chapman to fulfill a vacancy in the United States Senate caused by the death of Senator Dixon Hall Lewis and again in 1853, appointed to the Senate by Governor Henry W. Collier to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Senator William Rufus King, who was elected Vice-President of the United States on the ticket with Franklin D. Pierce. In 1855 Senator Fitzpatrick was re-elected by the Legislature of the State which held that power under the Constitution of that period and served a full term. Upon his arrival in Washington, Fitzpatrick was chosen President pro-tem of the United States Senate in the absence of the Vice-President and served in that capacity from 1857 to 1860. At that time the Democratic Party was in the throes of dissension and held two Conventions. In one of these Conventions, the one held in Baltimore, Benjamin Fitzpatrick was nominated the Democratic candidate for Vice-President of the United States and declined the nomination, realizing that national sentiment was in such a state of mind that the secession of Alabama along with other Southern States was imminent. When his state seceded from the Union in 1861 Senator Fitzpatrick returned home. At the close of the war he was selected to represent his county in the Constitutional Convention of 1865 and was unanimously elected President of that body. That was the last official position held by him as he along with all Confederate leaders was disfranchised shortly afterward. Once more he retired and once more he returned to his plantation near Wetumpka where he died on November 25, 1868.

Governor Fitzpatrick was twice married, in 1827 to Sarah Terry Elmore, daughter of General John Archer Elmore, whose beautiful country home, "Huntingdon" still remains in the family in a beautiful state of restoration. His second marriage which took place in 1846 was to Aurelia Rachel Balssingame, of Marion, Alabama. Six children were born of the first marriage and two of the second marriage.

Governor Fitzpatrick is buried in Oakwood Cemetery, in Montgomery.

## ORIGINAL ANECDOTES ABOUT NAPOLEON BONAPARTE

From Mobile Commercial Register, 1831

(The Alabama State Department of Archives and History has in its collections many thousands of bound volumes of old Alabama newspapers. Articles of especial historical interest are copied from these old volumes and filed in their proper places. The copy of the old Mobile Commercial Register in which the anecdotes concerning the Emperor Napoleon appear, is of particular interest at this time in view of the fact that one of the museum rooms in the World War Memorial Building is dedicated to the state's French contacts. Mr. Thomas W. Martin, President of the Alabama Power Company, has presented to the Department of Archives and History a series of handpainted pictures covering four walls of the room, representing scenes connected with the settlement of Demopolis by the "Vine and Olive Colony" which was set up in Alabama in 1818, following the fall of Napoleon Bonaparte. Among those colonists was Colonel Nicholas Raoul who is quoted in the interview, a part of which is reproduced herewith. The second installment of this interview will appear in the Winter issue of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*.)

From the Journal of an Officer,—Italy, 1815

The Secretary to Louis Napoleon and preceptor to his son, is Colonel Raoul, one who was among the most faithful of Napoleon's adherents, who accompanied him to the island of Elba, and afterwards attended him in his expedition to Paris. He speaks of Napoleon without prejudice, and has given me some striking details of him.

"He has ruined us—he has destroyed France and himself;—yet I love him still; it is impossible to be near him and not to love him. He has so much majesty of manner. He bewitches all minds; approach him with a thousand prejudices, and you quit him filled with admiration, but then, his mad ambition! his ruinous infatuation! his obstinacy without bounds! Besides, he was wont to set every thing upon a cast—his game was all-or nothing! Even the battle of Waterloo might have been retrieved, had he not charged with the Guard—This was the reserve of his army, and should have been employed in covering his retreat instead of attacking, but, with him whenever matters looked desperate, he resembled a mad dog. He harangues the Guard—He puts himself at its head—it debouches rapidly—it rushes upon the enemy. We are mowed down by the grape—we waver—we turn our backs and the rout is complete. A general disorganization of the army ensues, and Napoleon, returned to himself, is cold as a stone.

The last time I saw him was in returning from the charge, when all was lost. My thigh had been broken by a musket shot in advancing, and I remained in the rear, extended on the ground. Napoleon passed close to me; his nose was buried in his snuff-box, and his bridle fell loosely on the neck of his horse, which was pacing leisurely along. A Scotch regiment was advancing at the charge in the distance. The Emperor was almost alone. Lallemande only was with him. The latter still exclaimed, "All is not lost,—All is not lost—rally, Soldiers! rally!" *The Emperor replied not a word.* Lallemande recognized me in passing. "What ails you, Raoul?"

"My thigh is shattered by a musket ball."

"Poor Devil, how I pity you! how I pity you! Adieu-adieu!"

*The Emperor uttered not a word!*

It must be confessed, this is a very striking sketch; I believe they are nearly his words. "Were you with him," said I, "when he first encountered the King's troops that were sent against him on his landing in France?"<sup>1</sup>

"I commanded the artillery on that occasion. He sent me first of all forward to feel the pulse of two battalions *qui nous parroient le chemin.*"

"I was close to General Cambron when he (Napoleon) spoke to me. He gave me his orders with surprising majesty. His whole countenance was lit up by the fire of his eye.

"Go", said he, "You shall be my only advance guard of my finest campaign. Tell them that I am recalled by the wish of the nation; but that I am unwilling to reign at the expense of a single musket-shot. Tell them that if resolved to oppose me, my blood alone should flow. I come to them, I come alone, and with arms supported they may fire upon me—but let them recollect that they will have to answer for it to France and the whole world."

"I advance." "Who comes there?" "France"—"But what France?"—"France" I repeat, "I suppose there are not two." The commanding officer advances—I perceive at once that he is bewildered—he knows not what course to take. The soldiers surround us from every side; murmurs are heard, which finally break out into cries of: "Long live the Emperor".

<sup>1</sup> From Elba.

"The Emperor is with us in a moment, hat in hand. He inquires for old soldiers. He asks if there are any who have made the campaign of Egypt and Italy with him. He takes a grenadier by the moustache—"How now, old mustache, what is this thou hast got in thy cap? Dost thou not recognise thy old cockade? (showing his own hat) Dost thou not know there is but one cockade for France—the cockade of victory the tri-colour?" "In an instant the grenadier tears out the white cockade, throws it down, and tramples upon it—all follow his example. The cry of "*Long live the Emperor!*" resounds from every side, and the triumph of Napoleon is complete". In private conversation; Napoleon exhibited an unbending familiarity of manner to all around him. On duty he was severe, and when affairs went wrong, he growled like a mad dog. He was a man who learned nothing from adversity, which only served to irritate him—besides he was a despot, rather by policy than nature; he had too much contempt for mankind to oppress them, but when his interests demanded it, he oppressed them without remorse. In private he was extremely amiable—but he always maintained an unbending majesty; and sometimes his ardent temperament exploded in sallies of fury."

I asked if Napoleon passed with those who knew him for superstitions. He said Napoleon affected to be above omens, but there was no doubt that he was very much under their influence, although his pride and ambition made him often disdain them. "One thing is certain," said he, "He often spoke of his star. It is seen engraved on all portraits of him, and it is well known that he consulted astrologers".

He told me a long story about "*un homme rouge*" (from the color of his dress) whom Napoleon first knew in Egypt, and who subsequently visited him in Paris, and who was supposed to be particularly addicted to these arts.

"I was at Paris," continued Colonel Raoul, "at the time this man was admitted repeatedly to the Emperor's presence at the Tuilleries. He conversed with him always alone; whether he did these things (which is very possible) to deceive others, or whether he was deluded by them himself I do not pretend to determine. I only state the fact. "The King, Louis Bonaparte" added he, "has told me that these audiences produced always an agitating effect upon the Emperor, and that on one occasion in particular, "*homme rouge* had been heard to exclaim, on quitting his apartment—



"Remember that I have no farther power to remember that your war is changed—remember that your lease is expired." One is tempted to smile at these things, but it must be confessed they are extraordinary at least, when supported by such high authority.

"I was at Fontainebleau with the Emperor, at the time of his first abdication, and commanded the artillery of the guard. He had resolved to march upon Paris with the corps that remained to him, amounting to little more than 40,000 men, and already harassed to death. The Marshals demurred; they were tired out as well as the soldiery, and resolved to make the best terms with the enemy. His abdication was decided on, and he submitted. The next day, he was seen walking in the gallery at Fontainebleau, as if nothing had happened; dressed perfectly as usual *en Colonel de la garde avec ses trois croix, (de la Legion d'Honneur, de la Reunion et de la Couronne de Fer.)* He conversed familiarly with every body, and every body surrounded him with a feeling of increased respect." He approached me. "How," said he, your gunners (who were from the lower Rhine) desert?" "Some, Sire!" I replied.

"But they do very wrong. Tell them I am no longer France. Tell them they still owe her their allegiance."

It was thus this extraordinary man contended with fortune and vanquished her, even after his fall.

I asked Colonel Raoul how the two brothers stood affected to each other? he said, circumstances he could not enter upon had divided them, but Louis is full of kindness and domestic feeling. Napoleon, on the contrary, is a man of bronze. He has nothing in common with the world—he lives but for himself. He acknowledges neither the ties of kindred nor of friendship. While he was at Elba, Louis, who is the most amiable man in the world, wrote to him to say, "that if it would afford pleasure, he would come with his children to keep him company in his exile." Napoleon replied in the most haughty tone imaginable, "That he had done without him in his prosperity and could dispense with him in his adversity."

At the Island of Elba, Colonel Raoul tells me he was for some time an uncommon favorite with the Emperor, who appointed him his standing Aid-de-camp, and scarcely ever quitted the house without him. "I attended him in all his rides and walks, and

played cards with him every evening. Sometimes he gave me five or six little cuffs a day, the greatest proof of his friendship. He always called me "Raoul", and every body said that I was the spoiled child of the family. This was not, however, of very long duration, and perhaps it was in some degree my own fault that it was not. The emperor after his arrival in the Isle of Elba, became penurious to a degree, and seemed to have formed the idea that every body about him had a design upon his purse. The truth is, his mind was engaged at this moment upon the great design of his return, and money was most essential to his success.

"As commandant of the artillery, I had charge also at this time of the engineer department; I received one day orders to make out an estimate for the construction of a *Salle d' Assemblée* to be attached to the palace; I made it out with the strictest regard to economy and fixed the amount at 2000 francs. The Emperor struck off 500, and insisted that I should build it for the remainder. I declared this was impossible, the Emperor insisted, I replied, the Emperor got angry, I defended myself, the Emperor lost his patience, and was at last ungenerous enough to accuse me of wishing to make a profit of it myself. I told him I had not deserved such treatment at his hands. He instantly burst into a furious passion.

"'Be silent,' said he, 'I forbid you to reply. You are like all undertakers, you make war with your superiors, and then capitulate.' "No sire," I replied, "I don't capitulate. At least if I must capitulate with your Majesty, I shall surrender with honor." I instantly quitted him, and immediately sent him my resignation, offering at the same time to serve as grenadier of his guard, but that I could no longer bear his commission, since he had disgraced me. The Emperor was touched. He sent the Grand Marshall (Bertrand) to me with the assurance that he had never meant to wound my honor, and with orders to continue my duties at the palace. The next day the Emperor received me with kindness, but with reserve. He beckoned me to follow him into his cabinet. I obeyed; we were alone; then with a look and tone full of kindness (while he played with my rosette,) "Go, my friend," said he, "spend what you please;" and then drawing himself up, he added in a loud and somewhat severe voice, "but act, act so that I may not be wrong."

However I saw him seldom after this incident, and although he continued to treat me with kindness, he no longer favoured me with little cuffs, nor ever called me by my name—it was: 'Mr. the Commandant of the Engineers.' Never-the-less, there were moments in the sequel when he seemed to remember the past. For instance, when we landed in France, he sent me one of his own horses to ride. He kept me constantly near him on the march and employed me once or twice in a very flattering manner, especially when he sent me to take Lyons with a corporal and two huzzars; and when he last spoke to me on the field of battle at Waterloo, where I had the artillery of the guard (it was at the moment of the charge) he cried in passing me at full gallop, "Raoul, support my cavalry". These are the last words he ever addressed to me and they are engraved on my heart."

There is something very touching in all this, and I defy any one to listen to it without being affected. I have seen a great deal of Colonel Raoul, and have been much pleased with his conversation. There is a frankness and manliness of manner about him, added to a freedom from common place prejudices, and an enthusiasm in his profession, which is very gratifying to meet with. He is quite a soldier in character and appearance. Judging from the anecdotes I have detailed, he may appear an egotist, but he is any thing but this. It is I that have compelled him to these details by the eagerness of my inquiries, and when he has once entered upon them, it is delightful to mark the spirit with which he pursues them. They seem to relieve his mind. At other times he is silent and melancholy; for he has sacrificed everything to his attachment to this family, and seems to mourn over their downfall more than the distracted state of his country.

He evidently builds his hopes upon another dynasty, and a limited construction. He does not hate the Bourbons; he despises them, and considers the whole of their proceedings as calculated to restore the reign of priests and bring back the age of darkness. Of the King he speaks personally with the greatest respect. "Observe those who surround him; Monsier is an incapable; the Duc d' Angouleme is a priest; the Duc d' Berri is hair-brained; and all have some vengeance to gratify; nothing but vengeance! My God, where is this to end?"

There is scarcely a subject connected with times past on which I have not communicated freely with him. He detests the

despotism of Napoleon as much as we do; and his ideas of the demoralization of public principles are as liberal as they are just. "I doubt" said he, "if the French deserve liberty. Look, for example, at the conduct of the infamous senate by which Napoleon was surrounded. There was not a single man amongst them who dared to speak the truth to him or utter anything but the most base and disgusting flattery. It is the French senate which has to answer for the evils which have happened. It is the French senate which has taught Napoleon to despise mankind, and to believe that they are fit to be slaves. In the reign of Tiberius, we find instances of senators who spoke the truth, fearless of the death which they suffered. But Napoleon was not Tiberius; still less were the French Romans."

Among other anecdotes of the Emperor, Colonel Raoul told me that sometime before his quitting Elba, he became particularly silent and solitary. He showed himself rarely to the garrison, and admitted the officers no longer to that familiarity at his levees that he used to do."

"The officers were hurt at this, and as Colonel Raoul was in high favour at this time, he was requested to present their complaints to the Emperor. He did this as respectfully as possible, but the Emperor burst out immediately: "Do you fancy I have raised my self by flattering men? I have never flattered men; I have never flattered the soldier, still less the officer. Less than ever shall I flatter them now that I am unfortunate. Tell them, that if they wish to quit me, they shall have permission to-morrow."

"As they stood over to the coast of France, the Emperor was in good spirits. The dye was cast, and he seemed to be quite himself again. He sat upon the deck and amused the officers collected around him with a little history of his campaigns, particularly those of Italy and Egypt. When he had finished, he observed the deck to be encumbered with several large chests belonging to him. He asked the *Maitre d'hotel* what they contained. Upon being told they were filled with wine, he ordered them to be immediately broken open. "*En distant, nous partagerons le butin.*" The Emperor superintended the distribution himself, and presented bottle by bottle to his comrades till tired of this occupation. He called out to Bertrand, Grand marshal; "pray assist me. Let us serve these

gentlemen—" adding with emphasis—"they will serve us one day!" It was with this species of *bonhomie* that he captivated, when he chose, all around him. The following day he was employed in various arrangements, and among others, in dictating to Colonel Raoul the proclamation to be issued on his landing. In one of these, after observing "*Il faut oublier que nous avons. donne la loi aux nations voisines . . .*" Napoleon stopped. "*Qu'est-ce que j'ai dit.*" Colonel Raoul read the passage. "Halte!" said Napoleon, "*Effacez voisines, dites toujours aux nations!*" It was thus his pride blazed out on every trifling occasion, and his ambition seemed to re-ignite at the very recollections of his former greatness. The world could have no hope with such a man."

I asked Colonel Raoul if he was serious in saying he had been sent against Lyons with a file of men? "Perfectly, I assure you," said he; "not with the vain idea, as you may imagine, of reducing Lyons (where Marshal Macdonald commanded) with a couple of huzzars, but simply with a view of winning the garrison over to our interests by a direct communication from the Emperor." "And how was all this effected?" said I. "By presenting myself at the barrier, and crying, '*Vive le Empereur!*'" "The whole garrison rushed into my arms; Marshal Macdonald, after exerting himself to stop the defection, deemed it prudent to withdraw, and myself and my huzzars were carried through the city in triumph. Every body was mad with joy.—They kissed my hands—my boots, my equipment, and you would have thought I was rather an angel descended from heaven than a simple soldier returned from exile."

I shall close this account by observing, that I do not entertain a doubt of the truth of these different anecdotes. Independent of the internal evidence they possess, the manner, with which they were related, and the character of the man who related them, remove every suspicion from my mind. I never met a Frenchman so exempt from prejudice and gasconade as Colonel Raoul, or so ready to speak philosophically of the errors committed by the Emperor and his Countrymen. He said to me one day, when I inveighed against the extreme licentiousness of the French army, "You are perfectly right, my friend. The mischief, however great which we have done to the world, is nothing in comparison with that which we have done to the morals. After all, however, we have become *les Dindons*. Of the farce, and on this account, we have I confess, deserved it." Some opinion may be formed of the charac-

ter of Colonel Raoul, when I add, that previous to our parting, I asked him frankly if it were true that Napoleon had murdered his prisoners at Jaffa?

"Alas! I fear it is too true, although I was not there". "And the Duke d'Enghein?" "It is a spot that will stain his character forever"; "Is it possible, then, my dear Colonel," said I, "that you esteem such a man?" "Pardon me", replied he, "I don't esteem—I admire him. I admire the greatness to which he has elevated my nation, and for his marked kindness towards myself—I am not ashamed to confess that I still love him. I served fourteen years in his guard; I made the campaigns of Austria and of Russia with him; I accompanied him to Elba; and had I not been wounded and taken prisoner at Waterloo, I should have also followed him to St. Helena. I have sacrificed everything for him, and my attachment to him has grown with the extent of my sacrifices. Now that all is lost, my only pleasure is to watch over a scion of his race, (Louis) since they would not permit me to attend his son, and to predict for France a future less distinguished by glory, but more favourable to liberty."

It will be remembered that these anecdotes were related to the writer fifteen years ago. They are the overflowings of a broken but enthusiastic spirit, which no adversity could entirely subdue, and which blazed out to the last, in loyalty to France and her master, what though the conqueror of her hundred battles was at this period a captive and an exile, what, though every chance of restoration and escape was at an end, the humble partaker of his toils and companion of his victories vindicates in these anecdotes Napoleon's supremacy in war, as well as in misfortune; and leaves behind moreover an example in his own devotedness, which is the best guarantee to all existing governments of the unpurchased and unpurchasable fidelity of a liberal minded and enlightened soldier.

Colonel Raoul left Italy for America and after the reporter of these anecdotes parted with him, in 1815, although he promised to correspond, no line has ever found its way to England; and the individual who admired his character and sympathizes in his misfortunes, is ignorant at this moment if he is still in existence, or if his career has been closed in proscription and in exile in a foreign land. A prophetic feeling of regret leads the writer to

apprehend the latter; but should it be otherwise, should these pages ever meet his eye, and the regenerated prospects opening to his country induce his return to that France which he mourned with such regret and served with such devotion he will at least learn with satisfaction that the English officers know how to appreciate his character and estimate his fidelity; and that the writer of these lines, who has never ceased to lament the interruption of their mutual intercourse will be the first to welcome him with an expression of affectionate attachment.

(To be concluded in Winter issue of the Quarterly.)

**SURVIVORS CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION, 1901**

*By Judge Walter Burgwyn Jones*

(The last Constitutional Convention of Alabama was held in Montgomery, in 1901. Four years ago the survivors organized themselves into an association, of which Frank N. Julian, Montgomery, is Secretary, having also been Secretary of the Convention itself. The Legislature of 1939 made an appropriation to print in book form the Proceedings of the Convention as appeared in the Montgomery Advertiser during the sittings of the Convention. The following address was read by Judge Jones to the Survivors meeting held in Montgomery on October 30, 1940.)

It is a source of deep regret to our distinguished Governor, the Honorable Frank M. Dixon, that grave and pressing affairs of State make it impossible for him to be with you this morning when you meet in your fourth reunion. The Governor has given me the happy privilege, and done me the great honor, of representing him here today, and as the Governor's representative I bring you a cordial welcome to Alabama's capital and the kindly greetings of the Chief Executive of the State, and through Governor Dixon the greetings of the grateful people of Alabama to you, the surviving members of the Constitutional Convention of 1901. It is the Governor's hope that your sessions will be pleasant, and that you will find both happiness and satisfaction in renewing the warm friendships of the summer of 1901, when you toiled through the long summer days for the peace and prosperity of our people.

It is commendable for you to hold these reunions, and to gather together yearly to keep alive the firm friendships which you made and cemented in the historic days of 1901. Divine mercy and goodness have spared you surviving delegates and officers of that convention and permitted you to again clasp the friendly hands of those who worked with you, and to look once more into the faces that you have loved through all the long years which have passed since that momentous day in May, now 39 years ago, when you first met to discharge the weighty duty placed in your hands by the people of Alabama. It is sweet, too, that as you meet here this morning you recall with tender love those of your fellow members who are with you only in the spirit.

The vast majority of those who labored with you in Alabama's old Capitol during that never-to-be-forgotten summer of 1901 have



now passed from among the living. They have felt Death, the Consoler, lay His healing hand upon their tired hearts, to forever still the life beats. A kindly voice has beckoned them to that land where there is the Light that grows not dim, the Love that fails not, and the Peace which passeth all human understanding. As you meet here today, you do not forget them: they live in your hearts and surely to live in the hearts of those we love is not death. "Absent or dead, still let a friend be dear, a sign the absent claims, the dead a tear."

### Conditions in Alabama Leading up to the Constitutional Convention

Let us consider for a few minutes some of the conditions that necessitated the calling of the Constitutional Convention.

The urgent task of that representative body of the people was to establish white supremacy in the State within the limits imposed by the United States Constitution.

One of the worst results that followed the War for Southern Independence, so gallantly waged by the people of the South during the four long years of the sixties, was the giving of the ballot by Federal bayonets, chicanery, and amendments to the Federal Constitution, to the mass of ignorant Negroes and freed slaves in the South.

The duty that the Convention of 1901 faced is clearly and well stated in the Address of the Committee of the Convention to the People of the State:

"The years since the adoption of the Constitution of 1875 have been one long battle to prevent the undermining of our institutions by the participation in our government of a mass of unworthy or vicious voters. Daily experience has brought home to you, with a force to which no recital by us can add, the array of evils which follow in the train of such a struggle, and the fearful sweep in the future, if we can not find other means to secure good government. Relief from present conditions is essential to our morals, our peace and our welfare. Nothing could be worse than the inevitable operation of our present suffrage provisions. Any change which restricts the evil, must be improvement. . . . Your delegates have wrought as best they could, and submit the result of their labors, feeling confident that the plan submitted will purge the electorate of the unworthy and vicious voter who has so long debased our suffrage."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of the Constitutional Convention of 1901*, pp. 1756-1757.

A thoughtful student of the social, educational and political issues in the Southern States in 1904, three years after the Alabama Convention, the Reverend Edgar Gardner Murphy, discusses in his book, *The Present South*, the political issue brought about by the presence of the Negro in our national life; and, writing of the method the Southern States adopted to control the Negro vote and to make certain Anglo-Saxon supremacy, Mr. Murphy recalls that the South had to make the choice between civilization and democracy, and notes that the forms or conceptions of them, however sacred these might be, must await the stable and efficient reorganization of the social life.

### **Artful Management of the Negro Vote**

Political conditions in the South prior to 1901 were insufferable. Then the Negroes were being cajoled, pampered and flattered, and political conditions were so shaping themselves as to enable the Negro to retrieve much of the power that the race lost when the Carpet Baggers, Radicals and Scalawags were finally overthrown in 1874.

The fraudulent manipulation of the Negro vote had become notorious. Professor A. B. Moore, in his *History of Alabama*, quoting *The Birmingham News* of July 30, 1902, noted that from cheating Republicans and Populists the Democrats had turned to cheating their fellow Democrats and "that every election was begrimed with the filth of fraud." Professor Moore, getting his thought from the words of John B. Knox's address as president of the Convention of 1901, continues:

"Under the old system, elections had not only become a stench in the nostrils of every man who made any pretense to honesty, character and decency, but they did not stop there. There was fast being developed a system of ballot box manipulation, corruption and fraud which was reaching out beyond the bounds of politics. The youth of the State were being taught that cheating in elections was excusable, and this was leading on to dishonesty in commercial and social life. 'The impending conditions', the Birmingham paper observed further, 'meant nothing less than the ultimate ruination of the youth and the degradation of the State.'"

### **The Supreme Question as Alabama Saw It.**

The Reverend Mr. Murphy writes in his book:

"It was opportune for the North to declare that the freedman could not protect himself unless given the ballot in the mass; it was equally opportune

for the South—with whole States where the Negroes were a majority, with many counties where the number of black men was treble the number of white men—to declare that the supreme question was not the protection of the Negro but the protection of society itself; that White Supremacy at that stage in the development of the South, was necessary to the supremacy of intelligence, administrative capacity and public order, and involved even the existence of those economic and civic conditions upon which the progress of the Negro was itself dependent.”

So, one of the paramount reasons in 1901 for the demand that Alabama revise her 1875 Constitution was the fact that the youth of the State were being taught, with general public approval, that cheating and fraud in elections were all right. If cheating in elections was all right, then it was easy to go a step further and condone dishonesty in the social, official and commercial life of Alabama.

### Suffrage to Be Limited by Legal Conditions

The Reverend Mr. Murphy on this aspect of the question writes:

“The growing youth of the South became habitually familiar with ever lowering political standards as the subterfuges which were first employed against the black man come to be employed between white men in the struggle of faction against faction within the party. The better heart of the South now rose in protest. An unlimited suffrage was impossible, but the limitation of the suffrage must be established not by fraud or force but under legal conditions, and must be determined by a fixed and equitable administration.”

The people of Alabama were forced, therefore, in 1901 to the realization that the white race had to be set free from the continued necessity of using intimidation and fraud in elections. So the great effort of the State in that day was to do away with cheating and fraudulent practices in public elections. The State's work, the work of the Constitutional Convention of 1901, *was to preserve white supremacy by doing legally in the future what in the past good citizens had been forced to do by fraud.*

### From Intimidation to Legal Procedure

Charles and Mary Beard, in their book, *The Rise of American Civilization*, gave this version of the South's attitude in these words:

“Faced by a military government directed by Republicans in Washington and supported by Negroes at hand, the white man of the South forgot ancient divisions in the presence of forces more formidable. Having determined to

recover their dominion, their first task was, as a matter of course, to wrest the ballot from the newly enfranchised freedmen—the ballot conferred upon them by the Fourteenth and Fifteenth Amendments, supplemented by various federal force bills for the supervision of elections.

"This they accomplished, in the early stages, by forming secret societies such as the Ku Klux Klan and the White Camelia which, by warnings, nocturnal visits, impressive parades in white hoods, and other methods, sometimes including murderous violence, managed to frighten great masses of colored voters away from the polls, in spite of federal protection there. Very generally the freedman into whose hands the ballot had been thrust by the Republican victors did not care to risk his head in exercising his political rights, so that the mere show of force materially reduced the number of ballots cast against the Democrats.

"Finding such tactics highly effective and the resistance of the Northern Republicans weakening as the passions of the late war cooled, the Southern whites moved from intimidation to legal procedure by writing into their State constitutions various provisions which lawfully deprived the Negroes of the ballot, without disturbing the political prerogatives of the Caucasian race."

### **The Convention Called**

In 1901 the people of Alabama made their choice. They demanded that our elections should be purged of all fraud and intimidation, and that the supremacy of the White Race, and the peace of the State, should be made secure by the Constitution of the State itself.

In December, 1898, the General Assembly called a convention and delegates were elected. Governor Joseph Forney Johnston, however, convened that body in extraordinary session and the call for the convention was repealed. However on December 11, 1900, the General Assembly again called a Constitutional Convention. More than 115,000 voters trooped to the polls. The voters of the State sustained the call when 70,305 voted for a Constitutional Convention, and 45,505 voted against it. Thus the majority for holding the convention to submit a new Constitution was practically 25,000 votes. Six out of ten voters demanded a new Constitution.

On April 23, 1901, the people of the State elected the 155 delegates to the convention; 141 of these delegates were Democrats. Four delegates were chosen from the State at large, eighteen from the congressional districts of the State, thirty-three from the senatorial districts and 100 delegates distributed from among the several counties.

From the State at large came four able delegates: Robert J. Lowe of Birmingham, former Governor William Calvin Oates of Montgomery, Frank S. White of Birmingham and John B. Knox, of Anniston. The latter became the presiding officer of the convention.

### **Strong Men of the State in the Convention**

Never has there been in Alabama a body of representatives that contained so many strong men, so many able men, so many men with marked qualities of leadership, and so many grimly determined men.

From the Congressional Districts came former Governor Thomas Goode Jones of Montgomery, Edward W. DeGraffenreid of Greensboro, future Governor Emmett O'Neal of Florence, Richard Wilde Walker of Huntsville and J. Fritz Thompson of Centreville. From the Senatorial Districts of Alabama came General Richard Channing Jones of Wilcox, William H. Samford of Troy, George P. Harrison of Opelika, A. H. Carmichael of Tuscumbia and Gregory L. Smith of Mobile.

The various counties of the State sent to Montgomery, for the sessions of the convention, men of the stamp of Malcolm S. Carmichael of Elba, Henry Opp of Andalusia, Thomas W. Coleman of Eutaw, Thomas M. Espy of Dothan, James Weatherly and Henry C. Selheimer of Birmingham. Madison sent Robert E. Spraggins, Perry sent W. H. Tayloe, Tuscaloosa sent J. Manley Foster and Mobile sent Harry Pillans. From all over the State came her ablest sons to do their part in framing Alabama's new Constitution, and to help preserve White Supremacy.

### **Sessions of the Convention**

At noon on May 21, 1901, the sons of Alabama, who had been chosen delegates to the convention, met in the historic hall of the House of Representatives on Capitol Hill, the same hall where Alabama's Ordinance of Secession had been passed forty years before, the same hall where so much of the State's history had been made, and the very hall in which so many of Alabama's Governors had been sworn into office.

Thomas Nicholas McClellan, then Alabama's gifted Chief Justice, called the assembly to order and read the Enacting Act creating the Convention. He directed that as the names of the

delegates were called they come forward and enroll themselves. Every elected delegate, 155 of them, came to the secretary's desk and signed the Convention roll. When that was done the Chief Justice administered the oath to the whole body, every member standing. The convention then adjourned until the next day when it elected John B. Knox of Anniston president, and listened to his able and thoughtful address.

At the conclusion of President Knox's address, the other officers of the convention were chosen, among them, Frank N. Julian of Colbert as secretary and William F. Herbert of Montgomery as assistant secretary.

The convention remained in session 82 working days, that is from May 21, 1901, until September 3, 1901, when it adjourned *sine die* on its 82nd day.

### **The Work of the Convention**

Were time to permit, it would be a labor of love this morning to recall to you in detail the great work that the Convention did for Alabama and the useful part you had in those historic labors. But it must suffice to mention briefly: The Convention preserved white supremacy in Alabama; provided for honest elections by intelligent voters. It took the ballot from the hands of the unworthy. The Constitution submitted to the people, by its own force, appropriated to public education eight times as much as the Constiution of 1875. The new Constitution increased the power of the people by giving them the right to elect many officials who had formerly been elected by the Legislature. It made far-reaching and important changes in the Legislative department of the government. It tried to pluck out by the roots the evils of local legislation, and it would have succeeded completely but for an unfortunate construction placed upon the Constitution by the Supreme Court. The Convention in the Constitution gave the Legislature broad powers for the regulation and reasonable restraint of carriers, trusts and monopolies. The Constitution added entirely to the service of the people. It improved the administration of justice, stopped the unwise chartering of private corporations by special Acts, forbade the giving of free passes by railroads, made it easier to amend the Constitution, and wisely curtailed the power of cities and counties to contract debts.

In framing the new Constitution the delegates "did not forget that it was the work of the dominant race, and should secure the just rights of the weaker race as well." They did not conceal from the world "the conviction that the welfare of both races would be secured and enhanced by keeping the control and direction of the government in the hands of that great race whose blood and sacrifices founded our republic and gave free institutions to America." And the Convention did not draft a Constitution for a great State along the lines of race hatred and unworthy prejudices. "The purpose of the new instrument is to protect the weaker as well as the stronger race."

### **People Ratify the Constitution**

On the fourth day of the convention it adopted a very important resolution: "That it is the sense of this convention that such Constitution as may be adopted by this convention shall be submitted to the qualified voters of Alabama for ratification." And paragraph four of the schedule of the Constitution declared that it should be submitted to the qualified voters for ratification or rejection, and that no elector should be deprived of the right to vote at that election by reason of his not being registered.

The election was held November 11, 1901, when William D. Jelks was Governor. At that election 136,589 qualified voters went to the polls. The ratification of the Constitution was voted for by 81,734 voters, and its rejection was voted for by 54,875 voters. The majority for the Constitution was 26,879 votes. On Thursday, November 28, 1901, Thanksgiving Day, the new Constitution went into effect and became binding upon the people of the State and its representatives.

### **Beneficent Effects of New Constitution**

Alabama's Constitution of 1901, has given the people of the State, the rule of the intelligent and the virtuous. It has brought peace and prosperity. Under its education, industry, agriculture and commerce have flourished. Alabama has gone on its way with courage, patience and steady improvement in all departments of its government. Her government has functioned with efficiency, honesty, and with justice and fair play for all.

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of the Constitutional Convention of 1901.* 40.

Alabama today is grateful to the delegates to the Constitutional Convention of 1901, for the part they played in building that great instrument under which our people have lived and prospered for nearly forty years, and which has brought peace and happiness to the sons and daughters of our beloved State.

To you, the surviving delegates and officers of that useful body which worked so hard, so ably and so patiently during that long and tiring summer of 1901, in Montgomery, the people of Alabama through her Chief Executive express gratitude and appreciation, and the hope that the rest of your lives may be spent in days filled with happiness and contentment.

And to you, the great majority of that convention who now sleep so quietly and honorably in your graves, to you whom the sound of our voices can not reach and to you whose hands we can not again clasp in this life, Alabama tenderly says: "Sleep on, beloved sons. Your State remembers, and will ever remember, your unselfish labors for the cause of good and honest government. In the golden book of our sweet remembrance your names and deeds are written in letters set with diamonds and pearls, and your memory will live on in the grateful hearts of the people you loved and served."



**MARTIN MARSHALL'S BOOK: HOUSEHOLD HINTS\***

*Edited by Weymouth T. Jordan<sup>1</sup>*

(Continued from *The Alabama Historical Quarterly*, Summer Issue, 1940)

**Artificial Mahogany.<sup>2</sup>**

The following method of giving any species of wood of a close grain, the appearance of mahogany, in texture, density, and polish, is said to be practiced in France, with such success that the best judges are incapable of distinguishing between the imitation and mahogany. The surface is first planed smooth, and the wood is then rubbed with a solution of nitrous acid. One ounce of dragon's blood is dissolved in nearly a pint of spirits of wine; this and one-third of an ounce of carbonate of soda are then to be mixed together, and filtered, and the liquid in this thin state is to be laid on with a soft brush. This process is to be repeated, and, in a short interval afterward, the wood possesses the external appearance of mahogany. When the polish diminishes in brilliancy, it may be restored by the use of a little cold-drawn linseed oil.<sup>3</sup>

\*The editor wishes to acknowledge the generous financial aid given by the Social Science Research Council for the purpose of making a general study of ante-bellum Plantation Practices in Alabama.

<sup>1</sup>For the editor's foreword and discussion of the document which is the source of the material included here, see his "Martin Marshall's Book: Introduction," *The Alabama Historical Quarterly* (Summer Issue, 1940), 158-168. Except as otherwise indicated, all items included in the present series of articles were presumably domestic practices developed by Marshall himself.

<sup>2</sup>The Book is presented in its original order, form and punctuation, except as indicated. Two editorial liberties, however, have been taken, namely: indiscriminately placed items of a similar nature in the original document have been combined to form separate articles; and the descriptive heading of each item has been italicized.

<sup>3</sup>This description of the method of giving wood the appearance of mahogany comes from a newspaper clipping which Marshall pasted into his Book. Many of the items included in the journal, especially on household hints, are clippings. But in most cases no indication is made of the newspaper from which the clipping was made. Therefore, whenever this is the case the editor has referred in a footnote to the item as follows: Unknown newspaper clipping.

**Cement.**

One part Sand, Two parts ashes and three parts Clay—it is said will make a cement as hard as marble & impenetrable by water.

**Paste that is Paste.—**

Dissolve an ounce of alum in a quart of warm water; when cold, add as much flour as will make it into the consistence of cream; then strew into it as much powdered rosin as will stand on a shilling, and two or three cloves; boil it to a consistence, stirring all the time. It will keep for twelve months, and when dry may be softened with water.<sup>4</sup>

**To Clean Silk.—**

One fourth of a pound of soft soap, one teaspoonful of brandy, one pint of gin and mixed well together. With a sponge, spread the mixture on each side of the silk without greasing it, iron on the wrong side, and it will look as well as new.

**An Ant Trap.—**

Procure a large sponge wash it well and press it dry, which will leave the cells open. Then sprinkle over it some fine white sugar, and place it near where the ants are most troublesome. They will soon collect upon the sponge and take up their abode in the cells. It is only necessary to dip the sponge in scalding water which will wash them out “clean dead” by the thousands. Put on some more sugar and set the trap for another haul. This process will soon clear the hous(e) of every ant, uncle and progeny.

**Moth.**

Take an ounce of Cloves, one of Cedar balls and one of Rhubarb, pulverize and sprinkle them in a drawer or Chest in which Clothes are to be placed. It will prevent moths from injuring the clothes, and create an excellent scent.<sup>5</sup>

**To Wash Guns.**

... Wash your gun barrels in spirits of turpentine by dipping a rag or sponge fastened on your gun rod into the liquid, and

<sup>4</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping. This was also Marshall's source for the next two items included here.

<sup>5</sup>Copied by Marshall from an unknown issue of the *Southern Cultivator* (Athens, Georgia, 1843—date). At the present this magazine is published under the title of *Southern Cultivator and Dixie Farmer*.

swabbing them out three or four times, when they will be cleared from all impurities,<sup>6</sup> and be used almost instantly, as the turpentine will evaporate and leave the barrels dry; even if they are a little moist it will not prevent their going off like water. After being washed thus, there is no danger of rust, as when water is used. I am an old experienced gunner, and have practiced this for years and found it useful.<sup>6</sup>

#### **To Remove Stains and Marks from Books.—**

A solution of an oxalic acid, nitric acid, or tartaric acid, is attended with the least risk, and may be applied upon the paper and prints without fear of damage. These acids, taking out the writing ink, and not touching the printing, can be used for restoring books, where the margins have been written upon, without attacking the text.

#### **To Clean Oil-Paint.—**

The best thing for cleaning oil-paints is a sponge dipped in ammonia, which has been copiously diluted with water. Soap dissolves the turpentine as well as the linseed-oil, and not only destroys the smooth and shiny surface, but exposes, also, the lead to the influence of the water and air, and is, therefore, not proper to use.

#### **Various Recipes.—**

An ox's gall will set any color—silk, cotton, or woollen. I have seen the colors of calico, which faded at one washing, fixed by it.

A warming-pan, full of coals, or a shovel of coals, held over the varnished furniture, will take out white spots. The place should be rubbed with flannel while warm.

Lamps will have a less disagreeable smell, if you dip your wick-yarn in strong hot vinegar and dry it.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup>This and the following seven items are copies of clippings from unknown newspapers which were included in Marshall's Book.

<sup>7</sup>Another method to improve lamp wicks was: "First steep the wicks in a solution of lime-water, in which saltpetre has been dissolved. To 1 gallon of water add 2 ounces of saltpetre and  $\frac{1}{4}$  pound of lime. Dry well the wicks before using. It improves the light, and prevents the tallow from running." Unknown newspaper clipping.

**Items for Housewives.**

To Remove Ink from Cotton and Linen.—Dip the spotted part of the linen into melted tallow, wash out, and the spots will disappear, and leave the linen as white and pure as before it was soiled.<sup>8</sup>

To Keep a Stove Bright.—Make a weak alum-water, and mix your British-lustre with it, perhaps two teaspoonsful to a gill of alum-water; let the stove be cold, brush it with the mixture, then take a dry brush and rub the stove till it is perfectly dry. Should any part, before polishing, become so dry as to look gray, moisten it with a wet brush, and proceed as before.

**Mending Broken China.—**

Take very thick solution of gum arabic in water, and stir it in Plaster of Paris, until the mixture becomes a vicious paste. Apply it with a brush to the fractured edges, and stick them together. In three days the article cannot again be broken in the same place. The whiteness of the cement renders it doubly valuable.

**To Make Starch Polish.—**

Take 1 oz., Spermaceti, and 1 oz. White Wax, melt, and run into a thin cake on a plate. A piece the size of a quarter dollar, added to a quart of prepared starch, gives a beautiful lustre to the clothes and prevents the iron from sticking.

**Recipe for preventing the Flea infesting persons, rooms, or beds.**

Take a few branches of penny royal, lay them on or near the bed, or carry a few sprigs in the pocket, & the Flea will never make its appearance—this simple preventive has never failed of the desired effect—or essence of penny royal.

**To Prevent Bed Bugs**

Take about one teaspoonfull of quicksilver and the whites of six eggs, put them together into and (*sic*) earthen dish. Beat it well, and then with a feather anoint the holes and Joints of the bed

<sup>8</sup>Ink was also removed as follows: "Soak the article in sweet milk one day or more, then put on a little salt and rub if not soaked out." Unknown newspaper clipping. Marshall advised, too, "As soon as the accident happens, wet the place with juice of sorrel, or lemon, or with vinegar, and the best hard soap."

twice, in the spring and summer and it kills the eggs and prevents the approach of the bugs.<sup>9</sup>

### **Washing of Clothes Made Easy.**

. . . On the night preceding the day intended to be set aside as wash day, have all your clothes, white and colored, coarse and fine, put into tubs of clear water, . . . and let them remain there all night.

Put on your boiling vessel . . . , fill it half full of water to be boiling heat, after which put in a vessel of the size of the one we use (six gallons), two teaspoonfuls of sal soda, one quart of soft soap, and one quart of lime and water made by pouring three gallons of water to one quart of lime the night previous, so that it may have had time to settle, and in proportion, if smaller vessels are used; stir the water and get the sal soda soap, and lime water well mixed up, then put in your clothes, boil rapidly one hour, and them the work is done. Take the out and rinse them well, rubbing . . . .<sup>10</sup>

<sup>9</sup>Marshall manufactured two other applications for the prevention of bed bugs with: one quart of alcohol and two tea spoonsful of corrosive sublimate; or thirty grains of corrosive sublimate, one ounce of spirits of salt, and one quart of turpentine. Another "Antidote for Bed Bugs," copied from an unknown newspaper, was: "Take a quantity of whale oil, and about the same quantity of lard or tallow, simmer them a few minutes together, so as they will mix. Apply the mixture with a feather or fine brush to the crevices and joints of the bedsteads, and these vermin will not only desert the beds, but leave the room."

<sup>10</sup>Reprint of a letter written by an unknown person, of Oglethorpe County, Georgia, to the *Southern Banner*, (Wytheville, Virginia, 1860-1865 ?), clipped from unknown newspaper. The soap used was made with six pounds of potash, four pounds of lard, and one-fourth pound of rosin. It was made as follows: "Beat up the rosin, mix all together well and set aside for five days, then put the whole into a ten gallon cask of warm water, and stir twice a day for ten days, at the expiration of which time, or sooner you will have one hundred pounds of excellent soap for \$1.50." Marshall also made a soap with two quarts of soft soap, two quarts of soft water, one pound of sal soda, and one gill of turpentine. His Book also contains a clipping, with the date "7th April 1825," from an unknown newspaper, describing a "New Soap": "Take one pint of spirits of turpentine, one pint of alcohol, two ounces of hartsborn, one ounce of gum camphor; shake them well together, then to one quart of soft soap add three tablepoonsful of this mixture."

### Valuable Recipes.

**Oil which never corrodes or thickens.**—Take olive oil and put it into a bottle, then insert coils of thin sheet lead. Expose it to the sun a few weeks, and pour off clear.

**Blue Ink.**—Take sulphate of indigo, dilute it with water till it produces the color required. It is with sulphate very largely diluted, that the faint blue lines of ledgers or other account books are ruled. If the ink were used strong, it would be necessary to add chalk to it to neutralize the acid.<sup>11</sup>

**Liquid Japan, for boots and shoes, harness, etc.**—Take treacle, 8 parts; lampblack, 1 part; sweet oil, 1 part; gum arabic, 1 part; isinglass, 1 part. Mix well 32 parts of water. Apply heat; when cold add one ounce of spirit of wine. You may add an ox's gall.—Place the bottle by the side of the fire before use, and apply with a sponge.<sup>12</sup>

### To remove Iron Moulds from Cotton or Linen—

Take an earthen vessel, pour into it boiling water, then spread the stained parts of your cloth over it, let it remain until well penetrated with steam, then rub on the places sorrel juice mixed with salt until it is well soaked. Such clothes washed afterwards in common lye, will be made free from spots of mold.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>11</sup>Another domestic ink was made of "Two drachms of nitrate of silver, added to a weak solution of tincture of galls." An indelible ink was made with "Nitrate of silver, one drachm, mixed with a solution of half an ounce of gum arabic in half a pint of pure rain water."

<sup>12</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping. Blacking was also made as follows: "To one pound of Ivory black, in which has been mixed half an ounce of—Oil of vitriol and one ounce of pulverized loaf sugar—mix the whole with a gallon of vinegar and let it stand three days, when it is fit for use. It should be stirred often, and kept from the air to prevent evaporation." Marshall copied this item from the *Recorder*, May 2, 1820, an unidentified newspaper. His description of the manufacture of another blacking was: "Take of Lampblack 3 gills Sugar ½ pint Whiskey ½ pint Vinegar 1 gill the white of one egg well beaten (,) mix them well in a Jug or bottle and add half a pint of warm water." Still another was to "Burn wheat straw, grind the coal fine, mix it with molasses or sugar, vinegar, and a little oil."

<sup>13</sup>Moulds were taken from linen by: "Hold the iron mould on the cover of a mug of boiling water, and rub on the spot a little juice of sorrel and salt, & when the cloth has thoroughly imbibed the juice, wash it in ley—"

**To remove Carriage Wheel greas(e) from woolen Cloth.**

To effect this, the spots of grease must be first rubbed with fresh butter, then lay on two or three strips of blotting paper and apply a hot flat Iron to it; this will entirely take out the spots—

**Blackening ball, to make—**

Take an iron pot and set it on brick or rock, with the bottom upward, have a quantity of rich lightwood splinters split fine, burn them slowly under the pot until you have a sufficient quantity of Lampblack, then turn up the pot and let it cool so that it is just warm enough to melt beeswax—Scrape down the lampblack, then take two ounces of Beeswax on the point of a case knife or stick, and melt it by rubbing (*sic*) it in the pot: then add four ounces of Tallow and two ounces of brown sugar which has been previously well beaten together, then add two ounces of soft turpentine—Stir it well together until it is cold enough to form into a ball or roll—if it should prove to be too hard, melt it again and add a little oil, stirring (*sic*) and cooling as before—

**To dye a good Green—**

Dye your yarn blue first, then dip it in yellow dye until you have as deep green as you wish—some dye the thread yellow first and then dip it in blue dye, which is best.

**To make a Beautiful Blue.—**

Take alder berries, mash them and press out the juice; to two gallons of juice add about one ounce of copperas and two ounces of alum. Dip the thread in this thoroughly, and air it, and the dye is set.<sup>14</sup>

**Camphor Ointment for Chapped Hands**

Scrape into an earthen vessel  $1\frac{1}{2}$  ounces of spermaceti and half an ounce of white wax; and six drachms of powdered camphor and four table spoonsful of the best olive oil. Let it stand near the fire until it desolves (*sic*), stirring it well when liquid. Before retiring put the ointment on the hands, also before washing them: use soap as usual.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>14</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping.

<sup>15</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping. Another treatment for chapped hands was <sup>19</sup>wet them and then rub them with "about half a teaspoonful of good honey."

**To wash Calicoes.—**

Infuse three gills of salt in four quarts of boiling water, and put the calicoes in, while hot, and leave it till cold. In this way the colors are rendered permanent, and will not fade by subsequent washing.<sup>16</sup>

**A Secret Worth Knowing.—**

Boil three or four onions in a pint of water. Then with a gilding brush do over your glasses and frames and rest assured that the flies will not light on the article washed. This may be used without apprehension, as it will not do the least harm to the frames.<sup>17</sup>

**To take out grease spots in cotton or linen clothes.**

Wet the spot with water, and rub in well Magnesia, or chalk, when dry brush it well.

**Mice and Rats.—**

. . . Get live plaster of Paris and flour, mix them dry in equal quantities, lay it in dry places, and sprinkle a little sugar amongst it. Both rats and mice eat ravenously, the plaster sets firm directly after it is moistened, becomes a lump inside, and kills to a certainty.<sup>18</sup>

**Perfume.<sup>19</sup>**

The perfume of flowers may be gathered . . . in a very simple manner, and without apparatus. Gather the flowers with as little stalk as possible, and place them in a jar, three parts full of olive or almond oil. After being in the oil twenty-four hours, put them into a coarse cloth and squeeze the oil from them. This process, with fresh flowers, is to be repeated according to the strength of

---

<sup>16</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping.

<sup>17</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping.

<sup>18</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping. One of Marshall's own methods of getting rid of rats and mice was to "Gather the plant dog's tongue, which grows in fields; at the period when the sap is in full vigor, bruise it with a hammer or otherwise, and lay it in the house, barn, or granary, infested by rats or mice, and they will immediately shift their quarters . . ." His favorite methods, however, were: "Mix a little red or white lead, in powder, with Indian meal, and set it by, for them to eat and Die—Better still—To destroy mice & rats, a plenty of good Cats, feed them well, & they will perform well."

<sup>19</sup>This heading has been supplied by the editor.



the perfume desired. The oil being thus thoroughly perfumed with the volatile principle of the flower is to be mixed with an equal quantity of pure rectified spirit, and shaken every day for a fortnight, when it may be poured off, ready for use . . . .<sup>20</sup>

### **Useful Recipes.**

**To clean Paper Hangings.**—First blow off the dust with the bellows. Divide a white loaf eight days old into eight parts. Take the crust into your hand, and, beginning with the top of the paper, wipe it downwards in the lightest manner with the crumb. Do not cross or go upwards. The dirt of the paper and the crumbs will fall together. Observe, you must not wipe above half a yard at a stroke, and, after doing all the upper part, go around again, beginning a little above where you left off. If you do not do it extremely lightly, you will make the dirt adhere to the paper. It will look like new if properly done.

**To preserve Iron from Rust.**—Melt fresh mutton-suet, smear over the iron with it while hot; then dust it well with unslaked lime pounded and tied up in muslin. Irons so prepared will keep many months. Use no oil for them, at any time, except salad oil, there being water in all other. Fire-irons should be wrapped in baize, and kept in a dry place, when not in use.<sup>21</sup>

### **To drive away, or prevent the approach of the moth or caterpillars.**

Wrap up yellow or turpentine soap in paper, or place an open bottle containing spirits of turpentine within the wardrobe. But as the smell of the latter may be unpleasant, sprinkle bay leaves, or wormwood, or lavender, or walnut leaves, or rue, or black pepper in grains.

### **Boxes**

It is said that Cedar turned end-wise to the Gudgeon, Make(s) the best box of wood—Brass and Sand melted together in a crucible, makes the best composition box—

### **Varnish to clean Furniture**

Melt bees wax by rubbing it on a warm flat Iron, let it run or drop into a tin cup or pan set on warm embers—Add half as

<sup>20</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping.

<sup>21</sup>Unknown newspaper clipping. The date "7th April 1825" is written on the margin of this clipping.

much Spirits of Turpentine as you have of the melted Bees wax—Simmer it slowly, and mix it well by stirring (*sic*). Then pour it into a stone Jar, and it is ready for use—Put a small quantity at a time on a woollen rag, and rub it briskly on your furniture, and it will give a fine gloss—

**To take out fruit spots.**

Let the spotted part of the cloth imbibe a little water without dipping, and hold the part over a lighted common brimstone match at a proper distance. The Sulphurous gas, which is discharged, soon causes the spots to disappear.

**To take mildew out of linen.**

Rub it well with Soap; then scrape some fine chalk & rub that also in the linen, lay it on the grass: as it dries, wet it a little, and it will come out after twice doing.

**To remove grease spots from paper.**

Take of roche alum brunt, & flour of brimstone an equal quantity of each; and reduce them to a fine powder, wet the paper a little, put a small quantity of the powder upon the place, & the spots will disappear.

**Permanent ink for marking linen.**

Take 60 grains of nitrate of Silver (Lunar caustic), dissolve it in a glass mortar in double its weight of pure water; add to this solution 10 drops of nitric acid; this is the ink.

In another vessel dissolve 60 grains of Salt of tartar in  $1\frac{1}{2}$  oz. (3 table spoonsful) of water; this is usually named the liquid pounce, with which the linen is wet previously to the application of the ink.

**Common Solder**

Put into a crucible 2 lbs. of lead, and when melted, throw in one pound of tin—

**To explore unventilated places**

Light some sheets of brown paper, or other combustible, and throw into the well or cavern; also fix a long pipe, which may be made of leather, to a pair of bellows and blow for some time into the place.

**To render paper fire proof.**

Dip it in a strong solution of alum water, and then thoroughly dry it. In this state it will be fire proof. This will be readily known by holding a slip, thus prepared, over a candle. Some paper requires to imbibe more of the solution than by a single immersion, in which case the dipping & drying must be repeated, till it becomes fully saturated. Neither colour nor quality of the paper will be in the (least) affected by this process, but on the contrary, will be improved, whether written, printed, stained or painted for hangings.

**To remove flies from rooms.**

Take half a teaspoonful of black pepper, in powder, one teaspoonful of brown sugar, and one table spoonful of cream; mix them well together, & place them in the room, on a plate, where the flies are troublesome, & they will soon disappear.<sup>22</sup>

**Cement for mending Marble.**

Mix the white of an egg with finely powdered quick lime. It would probably answer to mend earthen ware as crockery, etc.<sup>23</sup> newspaper: "An excellent cement for seams in roofs of houses, or in any other exposed places, is made with white lead, dry white sand, and as much oil as will make it into the consistency of putty. The cement gets as hard as stone in the course of a few weeks."

**Greasing Carriage Wheels**

Take lard, Wheat flour, and black lead—Melt the lard over a gentle fire, and the other ingredients—equal in weight, may be added, till the composition is brought to a consistence of common paste without the heat to(o) near boiling point. Or 2 parts hog's lard by bulk, & one each of black lead & flour.<sup>24</sup>

**White Wash for fences—**

One ounce of white vitriol (sulphate of zinc). Three ounces

<sup>22</sup>To kill flies, Marshall also advised: "Make a tea of the flowers saffron, sweeten it and set it in a plate, & it will destroy every fly that sips it."

<sup>23</sup>Marshall copied the following method of making cement from an unknown

<sup>24</sup>Under the heading of "Carriage & Harness" Marshall also directed: "Clean the Brass mountings with Sweet oil & rotten stone—Grease the wheels with Oil or Lard & Black Lead—Oil the Top, Harness, etc., with neatsfoot oil, washing the leather first, & put on the Oil before the leather dries." The date "March 24th, 1841" is written beneath this item.

of Common salt, to every 3 or 4 lbs. of good fresh lime, it is said, renders it very durable, exposed to the weather.

#### **Gum Arabic Starch.**

To produce a fine gloss on linen, the Shirt bosom, etc. Take two ounces of fine white gum arabic powder—put into a pitcher, and on it a pint or more of boiling water (according to the stiffness you desire) and then having covered it, let it set all night. In the morning pour it carefully from the dregs into a clean bottle, cork it and keep it for use. A table spoonful of gum water, stirred (*sic*) into a pint of Starch that has been made in the usual manner, will give to lawns (either white or printed) a look of newness when nothing else can new them after washing. It is also good (much diluted) for white muslin and bobinet.

#### **To whiten old Bonnets.**

If old yellow straw braid is soaked a while in water and then suspended inside of a no-headed barrel or hogshead, and brimstone is inflamed at the bottom of the cask, and suffered to commence burning thoroughly, the top covered over, the straw will become whitened by the action of the acid—

#### **Good Writing Ink—**

Finely bruised Galls, 1 lb. Green Copperas in powder  $\frac{1}{2}$  lb., Gum Arabic 4 ounces, Water 4 pints. If you choose you may add 6 ounces of Logwood. Steep a week or more, Shaking it every day.

#### **Hair Ointment—**

Take of Castor Oil (ol: Ricina), Bare's Oil, Deer, or Mutton suet (Tallow), Essence, or O(i)l of Roses, Equal quantity. And you may add Puccoon root in proportion to the quantity of each. The above ointment will change the colour of the hair, if used every morning, to a black, or dark color—and give a gloss to the hair, if properly managed—<sup>25</sup>

#### **Varnish for Boots & Shoes by which they are rendered impervious to water.**

Take pint of Linseed oil, half a pound of mutton suet, Six or eight ounces of beeswax, and a small piece of rosin, boil all these

<sup>25</sup>Marshall recorded that he had obtained this information from E. L. Howie, probably a friend, and that Howie had received it from a Mrs. Prescott who lived at an undetermined place in Louisiana.

in a pipkin and let the liquid cool till it is milk warm. Then with a hair brush lay it upon new boots and shoes—If old boots are to be varnished, the mixture is to be laid on when the leather is perfectly dry.<sup>28</sup>

(To be continued)

<sup>28</sup>Copied from an unknown newspaper or other publication. After copying this item Marshall stated: "A little lampblack might be added. M. M."

## RECOLLECTIONS OF WILLIAM L. YANCEY

*By Joel Barnett*

(The letter reproduced here was originally printed in the *Montgomery Advertiser*, July 18, 1914. Mr. Barnett, long since dead, was acquainted with all the public men of his times and knew Mr. Yancey in an intimate way. This letter is reproduced at this time in view of the fact that Yancey-Davis correspondence has appeared in former issues of the *Quarterly* and other letters between those two distinguished public officials are produced in this issue.)

Editor The Advertiser:

I hope you will permit me to commend in an humble way the plans now in motion for the celebration of the 100th anniversary of the birth of one of Montgomery's greatest citizens, Hon. William L. Yancey. Although but a young man when Mr. Yancey passed from the political stage in the South, I have very keen recollections of him as a man and as a statesman. In the flush of vigorous and enthusiastic youth, I held him as the model of what the leader of a great people should be. As a contribution to the series of recollections now occasionally appearing in your paper, this communication is written.

The first time I ever saw Mr. Yancey was at the home of Col. B. J. Baldwin, who then resided near Fitzpatrick station, now in Bullock, but then in Montgomery county. He was accompanied by Mr. George Hails, father of our fellow townsman, Mr. George Hails of the tax collector's office. They were on their way to High Log, where Mr. Yancey was to speak in joint debate against Hon. Henry W. Hilliard. My boyish imagination was fired by the conversations of my elders, who characterized Mr. Yancey as the Demosthenes of fiery and impetuous speech, and Mr. Hilliard as the polished and faultless Cicero.

Among the numerous devoted friends and admirers of Mr. Yancey in Montgomery were Mr. George Hails, above referred to, Dr. Carnot Bellinger, who had married the sister of Mr. Hails; Captain John Cheney, whose wife was the sister of Dr. Bellinger; Colonel Bolling Hall, Hon. John A. Elmore, Hon. W. P. Chilton, and a host of others. Among his young friends were Captain James Stewart, now living in Montgomery, and the late Col. John W. A. Sanford, of beloved memory. Among others I should mention in this connection was Hon. James Yancey Brame, Sr., once

sheriff of Montgomery county, and the father of my friend James Y. Brame, Jr., Montgomery. Mr. Brame was closely related to Mr. Yancey, as his middle name shows.

I recall having heard Col. James Gilchrist relate, in that thrilling conversational style for which he was so much noted, that Mr. Yancey was never so effective in speaking as when he was faced by great opposition. From Colonel Gilchrist's statements it appears that Albert Jones had been murdered near McGehee's Switch in the lower part of this county, and that a number of negro slaves in that vicinity were charged with the offense. The citizens were intensely outraged, and the negroes were threatened with lynching. By request, Mr. Yancey and Colonel John A. Elmore drove out to the scene. After a few moments' conference, Colonel Elmore appealed to Yancey to speak to the crowd in the attempt to quiet them, and to secure for the negroes a hearing. As a result of his appeal, Colonel Gilchrist states that the hot passion of the company was cooled, and that the negroes were turned over to the officers without harm.

I have talked with many of our older men, who had heard Mr. Yancey on more than one occasion, and in great crises, say that perhaps his very greatest speech here was the one made by him at the Southern Commercial Convention which met in Montgomery in 1858, in opposition to Hon. Roger A. Pryor of Virginia. This speech, it was said, placed Mr. Yancey in the front rank of constructive statesmen, and indicated large ability as an economist. Certain it is that the convention brought together some of the greatest leaders of the South. At that same convention Mr. Hilliard was also one of the speakers supporting Mr. Pryor.

Col. John W. A. Sanford, whom I have mentioned above, was certainly one of the most cultured men who ever lived in Montgomery. He was widely read, and had an extended range of experience in public life. He told me once that he had heard all of the greatest orators of his time, including Prentiss, Clay, Webster and Douglas. Their best efforts, he said, were not equal to the best oratory of Yancey. He gave it to me as his deliberate opinion that Yancey was the greatest natural orator whom the United States had ever produced.

Mr. Yancey returned from England in February, 1862. Soon after his return to Montgomery, he made a visit to Central Institute, then in Coosa, but now in the upper part of Elmore county, Alabama. His son, Goodloe H. Yancey and I were then in attendance upon this far-famed school, conducted by Captain T. C. Bragg, one of Alabama's greatest ante-bellum teachers. Mr. Yancey spent about three weeks there, and I saw him often. He was reserved, quiet of manner, and wholly unassuming. He made no speeches while there. He seemed to be in a serious and reflective state of mind, whether on account of the condition of the country or of his own health, which I later learned was much impaired, I do not know. Probably this was due to both causes.

JOEL BARNETT.

Montgomery, Ala., July 17, 1914.



## MORE YANCEY-DAVIS LETTERS

(The four letters below are important in that they reveal some of the difficulties confronting the Confederate Government from almost the beginning of the War Between the States. Although William L. Yancey was a Secession leader and introduced Jefferson Davis in Montgomery with the well known expression that "the man and the hour have met", the letters show the former criticizing the policies of the President of the Confederacy about a year after the war began. These reproductions are *verbatim* copies of the originals which are preserved in the Division of Maps and Manuscripts of the Alabama State Department of Archives and History.

Yancey wrote the letter of April 6, 1862, soon after returning home from Europe, where he had served the Confederate States of America as one of its three Commissioners designated to gain recognition for the newly created Confederate Government. As pointed out in this letter the European Delegation had difficulty obtaining sufficient funds to make the necessary purchases of the much needed arms and munitions. In addition to having governmental financial matters brought frequently to his attention, Yancey did not receive his salary as scheduled and was therefore forced to borrow money in order to return home.

In the letter written jointly by Yancey and Clay on April 21, 1862, the reader will observe early criticisms of President Davis. It also shows that Yancey was not the only person dissatisfied with certain administrative policies of the President.

The letter of May 6, 1863, is significant in that it seems to be the first time Yancey expressed the belief in writing that Davis "entertained personal enmity" toward him. The reply to this letter was reproduced in the last issue of *The Alabama Historical Quarterly*.

Finally, the letter of July 11, 1863, was written as a bitter denunciation of Davis about two weeks before Yancey died. In this letter Yancey reviewed incidents which had been taking place for more than a year and renewed his criticisms of them. It also refers to two other letters which are reproduced in this issue.)

Richmond 6th April, 1862

Sir

I have had occasion very recently to examine with some care the instructions of the War Department to Capt Huse—and the letters of that officer to the Secretary of War.

Having a full personal knowledge of the views of Capt Huse—and of his operations in Europe—and of the capacities of European manufacturers to supply arms etc—I beg leave to submit for your consideration the following.

The finished military education of Capt Huse naturally incline him to contract for and buy none but the most superior rifled arms.

The instructions of the government strengthen him in that inclination.

The markets of Europe, at this time, can afford but few rifled muskets.

Many very fair smooth bore muskets may yet be bo't in Europe if pains is taken to find them.

The appointment of at least two additional officers, to make different sections of the Continent of Europe the sphere of their operations, would facilitate the acquisition of such arms.

Instructions to each to confine his operations to the section allotted to him, would prevent conflict in enquiry & purchase & consequent rise in prices.

The manufacturers of the rifled as well as other muskets and carbines, are now pretty much open to be monopolized by our contractor, but to this end a large amount of cash in hand is absolutely necessary—as forfeit money is required to be deposited at time of contracting. Cash also is absolutely necessary to be paid at time of delivery under contracts—which is monthly.

I notice in Mr. Memminger's statement of amount of money sent to the agents of the War Department, that in the most critical period of our contracts in England, that between 25th September and 19th January, near 4 months, he only sent \$1,031.00. The consequence was that he (Capt Huse) had to beg an advance from S. Isaac, Campbell & Co. to amount of half a million dollars. Had this house not have generously aided us, we should have lost every contract, and with them some 50,000 muskets delivered in that period and since.

The funds sent up to 7th March, will only pay for deliveries under old contracts—which do not I believe amount to over 10,000 muskets a month.

If we are to arm 200,000 additional men, or rather to obtain 2 or 300,000 more muskets by fall, not only will you be compelled to send additional officers, imbued fully with your ideas, but a million of dollars a month, in advance.

Pardon me for these suggestions—They are dictated by a solemn sense of duty. I address them to you because I believe that from the immense pressure upon you of every interest, you

cannot comprehend all, unless with the aid of some plain spoken friends.

I have spoken of what I know, and submit it, for what it is worth, to your consideration.

Respectfully  
Yr. obt. Svt.  
(Signed) W. L. Yancey

His Excellency )  
Jeff'n Davis )  
President, etc. )

A true copy  
Burton N. Harrison  
Private Secretary

Senate Chamber  
Apl. 21, 1862

The President :

Sir,

Including the late call for 12 Regts. Alabama has 40 Regts. in the field ; & but five Brig. Genls.—Withers, Rodes, Wood, Leadbetter & Forney. We are informed that two Brigades of Alabama Troops, in late battles at Shiloh, were led by Brigadiers from other States.

It is certainly natural and reasonable that men should prefer leaders from their own State ; & that those who think themselves qualified, by education & experience to command, should feel disappointed & mortified when they are overlooked & postponed, & Brigades from their own States are placed under the command of officers from other States, who are their juniors in years & in time of service, below them in rank & undistinguished in the field of battle.

We should not think the aspirations for General offices by mere civilians deserving much consideration, when in competition with those educated & experienced in arms. But they seem to us entitled to respectful consideration in competition with other civilians, from other States, which have already their full proportion, or more, of General officers. We had heard that you ob-

jected to the promotion of some of the Colonels from Ala., that they had not shown themselves in action worthy of a Brigadier Genl's command; & that your rule was, or would, in future be, in respect to such offices, that one must win his spurs before he could secure such an appointment. We concede the justice & sound policy of the rule when enforced in practice.

Some of our friends from Ala. in command of Regts., to whom we have stated your rule, as a reason for their not having been promoted, think the rule departed from in your late nomination of Col. Pryor for a Brig. Genlshp.

Entertaining the same opinion, & thinking that there are Alabama Cols. whose commissions are of older date, & whose experience & previous course of life give them higher claims of confidence, we have felt it due to them & our State to call your attention to them. And, in accordance with their expectations & our own feelings, we respectfully recommend for appointment as Brig. Genls. Sydenham Moore, Tennant Lomax, Thomas J. Judge & Eli S. Shorter—all in command of Regts. of Alabamians.

We are most respectfully,

Yr. Obt. Svts.

C. C. Clay, Jr.

W. L. Yancey

N.B. We think it proper to say further, that some of our Ala. Cols. served in the Creek War of '37 in Ala., & 12 or more months in Mexico. And, furthermore, that we do not esteem Gen'l Rodes or Gen'l Leadbetter as Alabamians: the latter is a northern man who has been resident in Ala. for only a few years, & the former is a Virginian, who was only so-journing in that State while superintending the construction of a Rail Road of which he was Engineer. We do not think he claims Alabama as his residence, but regarded Va. as his home & intended to return to it when his employment as such Engineer was completed.

Most respectfully

yrs &c &c

W. L. Yancey

C. C. Clay, Jr.

Written in ink on the back of this letter is the following, which is the reply from Jefferson Davis:

It is the province of the Executive to nominate and of the Senate to confirm or reject.

Recommendations are willingly received and respectfully considered by me, but I will not argue as to their propriety and do not recognize the fairness of the within statement of my course, and assumption as to what it should be.

Jefferson Davis

W. L. Yancey )

C. C. Clay )

Senators

Also, written in pencil, on the back of this letter is the following notation:

Hon. W.L.Y. I send you this upon condition that you return it to me, or a copy composed by us.

C. Jr.

Montgomery, Ala.  
6 May 1863

Sir:

Entirely unaware that you entertained any personal enmity towards me, a short time since I requested you as the President to confer a commission upon my son Dalton H. Yancey.

The holding that you are but the Trustee for the people in dispensing the offices of the government, and therefore that one, even your enemy may consistently with his self-respect, lay before you an application for one of the places at your disposal, I am also aware that places are often conferred as reward to friends and refused as punishment inflicted upon enemies.

Most assuredly I should never have placed myself in the position of asking a place for my son, if I had entertained the least idea that a conscientious difference of opinion with the President upon some points of his administration had caused him to indulge towards me personal dislike.

I have not heard from you relative to that application, and I therefore seize the earliest moment after receiving information as

to your personal feelings, to withdraw the application made to you in behalf of Dalton H. Yancey, a cadet in the University of Alabama.

I am &c &c  
W. L. Yancey

Hon. Jeff'n Davis  
President of the C. S. A.

Montgomery, Alabama  
11 July, 1863

Sir :

Your letter of the 20th ult. in reply to mine of May 6th was received by due course of mail—I have considered its contents, and it seems to me to call for a reply.

You state that you have not made any declarations to the effect that you were inimical to me—but you do not deny the correctness of the information I had received that you were inimical. In such matters, actions are more significant than words.

Since the interview I had with you, shortly after my return from Europe, in reference to your economic policy in the purchase of arms and munitions of war was generally abroad, I have noticed a change of your manner to me, which repelled advance on my part. And I have particularly noticed your selections for nominations for office from among the most inveterate personal foes I had in Alabama.

Whatever doubts I may have entertained as to your feelings towards me, and I did entertain them, unwilling to believe that mere political differences of opinion would disturb our former good relations, were dispelled by your action in nominating Mr. Burton for Post Master at Montgomery. A most exceptionable gentleman, representing the wishes of a large majority of the people of the town, was recommended to you for that place both by Mr. Clay and myself and received the endorsement of Mr. Chilton. Montgomery is the postal town of Mr. Chilton and myself. I have understood that it has been a usage and a courtesy yielded to a Senator, as a part of the appointing power, to nominate as post master in his postal town one agreeable to him. Yet you *overrode* all these considerations, and appointed one unknown to you personally, I believe, recommended by an insignificant number

of persons in Montgomery, and hardly identified with the place. I have understood and believe that you were influenced in the rejection of Mr. Glackmeyer, whom I recommended, by feelings of personal hostility to myself. Though a representative of the people and State, I have never been consulted by you as to a single appointment made by you, in Alabama. About a year ago, Mr. Clay and I joined in a letter calling your attention to the fact that but few Brigadier Generals had been appointed by you from Alabama, compared with the number appointed from other States, and that several Brigades of Alabama Regiments were commanded by Brigadiers from other States. We presented you with a list of names of Alabama Colonels and recommended them to you for their fitness, in our opinion, for promotion. That letter of recommendation which, in my opinion, should have been filed, was returned to us with your endorsement, to the effect that by the constitution it was your province to nominate, and that of the Senate to confirm or reject. The return to us of that paper and the endorsement, I considered them, and do now, an act of grave discourtesy. Under these circumstances I consider that you are mistaken in the averment made in your letter of the 26 ult. that "I had no right to feel personal hostility to you." On the contrary, I think that the circumstances evince a settled hostility on your part to me, and justify a return of such feelings on my part. But I had not allowed a natural resentment to gain ascendancy in my breast 'till I learned of your actions in the appointment of a post master at this place and the reasons which influenced you. There seems to be an excuse offered in your letter for your inimical course towards me in the following sentence, "It is true that for some time past an impression has been upon me that you were in opposition to my administration, and that it was not of that measured kind which results from an occasional difference of opinion, but does not disturb good wishes and desire to give support." Such an impression must have been derived from communications made to you by others, not friendly to me. It could not have been derived from my conduct on public measures. A record of that conduct is upon file in the capitol. I fearlessly and calmly appeal to it against the insinuation that I have been influenced in the least degree by personal considerations. I have rarely differed with you on questions coming before the Senate when I did not find myself sustained by some of your truest friends in their opinions and votes. When I have been compelled to differ

with you—it has been done from a high sense of duty to the country.

Upon administrative measures of a legislative character I have generally agreed with you. The chief questions upon which I have differed with you, have been questions of a purely executive character.

Your noble personal friend, Mr. Clay, a gentleman who would not flatter Caesar for his crown, can assure you that we have conversed together freely on these subjects of difference, and that they were invariably subjects of regret that we were compelled to take different views of them from those held by you. I had hoped that our personally kind relations might be maintained and made to harmonize with my independence as a public man. But if the two are inconsistent with your views, I shall adhere to my independence, and regret the loss of personal regards. I regret that you did not accede to my request to return to me my application for a military appointment for my son Dalton H. Yancey. I am inclined to consider your course in the matter as conciliatory. My self-respect however calls for a return of the application, and I renew my request. I beg you to be assured that no matter what may be our personal relations, your administration will receive from me a candid judgment and generous support so far as it is demanded by the interests of the country; while the lively recollections of former personal friendship and good deeds, will always temper any opposition which I may feel called upon to make to any of your measures or acts.

I am, Sir,

Yrs. &c. &c

(Signed) W. L. Yansey

Hon. Jeff. Davis,  
&c. &c



## LATER HISTORY OF MADISON COUNTY

*By Thomas Jones Taylor*

(Judge Taylor's "Early History of Madison County" was concluded in the Spring, 1940, issue of the *Alabama Historical Quarterly*. This installment is the second of his "Later History of Madison County", the first being in the Summer, 1941, issue of the *Quarterly*. This article first appeared in the *Huntsville Independent*, in 1883 and 1884.)

### Chapter III.

#### Roads and Transportation.

It is an old adage that a country about which little is written is generally in a peaceful and prosperous condition. This accounts for the dearth of the written history of events transpiring in our borders from the year 1820 to 1840, and may also justify us in the conclusion that during that decade our people were in a highly prosperous condition and that nothing disturbed the tranquility that prevailed over our county, in common with the whole Tennessee valley. This period of our history was also remarkably free from political excitement, and party lines as yet had not sufficient divergence to identify the powerful political parties that afterwards divided the country, and sought to shape and control the destinies of our republic. Madison County, in the full sense of the term, was an agricultural community. Our fresh and fertile fields yielded immense crops of corn and cotton, and it was the ambition of men in every profession to own and cultivate farms. The number of owners of small farms was also rapidly increasing which materially contributed to the general prosperity of our people. In the northern and north-eastern parts of the county, where the wornout fields are uncultivated and grown over with sedge and other growth there were communities of small farmers, many of them owning no slaves, and the slaveholders usually working in the fields with their slaves. The farming interests of our people naturally awakened an interest in the question of transporting our products to market. The country was new, the few public highways but newly opened, our streams unbridged, and intercourse of the people with the county site was subject to many drawbacks and obstructions. The transportation of our heavy cotton crop to market at the lowest cost was a problem difficult of solution, and enlisted the serious attention of business men.

While salt, lumber, flour, fruit and other imported articles were readily floated down Tennessee river from its upper waters to Whitesburg and Triana, yet the carrying of cotton our great export, to market was expensive and difficult. A considerable quantity of this staple was hauled in wagons to Nashville, and the wagons returned laden with goods and merchandise for our people. But New Orleans soon became the great center of the cotton trade, where the larger portion of the cotton crop was conveyed on flatboats down the Tennessee, Ohio and Mississippi rivers by a long and tedious route to its destination. Below the Muscle Shoals there was but little trouble except in the long voyage, but here cotton shipping was attended with many vexatious delays and difficulties. The people had to haul their cotton to Tennessee river or some boatable stream emptying into it, and after their cotton was safely stowed in the large flatboats that were riding safe on the broad current of the Tennessee, they had to wait for a high tide that would carry them over the shoals, and sometimes the Spring season was nearly passed before it came. To the man who wanted to make money cotton was every thing, because there was no other product that would bear transportation as it then existed. This question originated many important enterprises, having for their object the improvement of facilities of transportation and the cheapening of the rates of carrying our enormous cotton crop to a ready market. The first of these enterprises was the formation and incorporation of the "Indian Creek Navigation Company," under the auspices of Leroy Pope, Thomas Fearn and others, to construct a canal from Huntsville Spring down Indian creek to Triana, and the "Flint River Navigation Company," whose object was to render Flint river navigable for flatboats and keel-boats from Scott's Mill (now Brownsboro) to the Tennessee. There was also an earnest effort to obtain the aid of the general government in opening the Muscle Shoals, and there was a considerable amount of money spent by the general government for that purpose. Yet, while the Indian Creek Navigation Company persevered in their undertaking and many of the original corporators were nearly reduced to bankruptcy before the enterprise was finally abandoned, and the Flint River Navigation Company kept up cotton shipments for a long time, none of these enterprises were successful, and water transportation down the Tennessee with all its old drawbacks was our great highway, until the advent of railroads revolutionized the carrying trade of the whole country.

Some of the cotton was laden on steamboats at the foot of the shoals from the flatboats, or "broad horns," as they were formerly called; but many of these flatboats were built and received their freight on the banks of Paint Rock and Flint and were unloaded at the levees of New Orleans. These boats would carry three or four hundred bales of cotton, and, the shoals once passed, they generally floated leisurely and safely down the current to their destination.

The magnificent poplars of Madison and Jackson counties furnished excellent material for gunwales, or in boatman's phraseology "boat-gunnels"; many of these trees being from eighty to ninety feet to the limbs, and growing as straight as if adjusted by a plumb line, and when cut down and split open furnished excellent material for the foundation of a flatboat. These gunwales were trimmed to a proper shape and framed on strong timber levers projecting beyond over a steep bank, and when the great frame had been well floored and calked it was moved out to the projecting ends of the levers, generally working on rollers, where it was turned over into the stream, bailed out, finished off, equipped with its rowing and steering apparatus, loaded and launched on its long voyage. If its crew were so fortunate as to pass out with a shoal tide, a licensed shoal's pilot was taken on board at Whitesburg or Decatur, and in a short time they were shooting rapidly down the tumbling shoals; now dodging a dangerous obstruction and now rounding an abrupt point, where for an instant they would appear to be rushing headlong against the frowning rocks, but at a word from the pilot an oar would dip on this side or that side, the steering oar gently touch the water, and the boat would lightly glide round the point of danger and dash at headlong speed down the raging current. The skillful and keensighted pilot and experienced oarman, with every faculty intent and alert, would finally draw a sigh of relief, as with muscles relaxed they passed into smoother waters, and finally cabled to the bank at the old city of Eastport, once a place of high renown among the river navigators, where the shoal pilot resigned his place to the river pilot.

He, before untying his cable and launching on his long voyage, inspected his craft, repaired damages, and not unfrequently took a farewell spree as the river code prohibited drunkenness while in command of a broad horn and in charge of its valuable cargo. While cotton was worth from twenty to thirty-five cents a pound

the river pilot received from one hundred and seventy-five to two hundred dollars each trip, and as the pilot in the early times frequently walked from New Orleans to Decatur and Whitesburg, and at best never made more than two trips during the freighting season, his charge was certainly not exorbitant. The expense of carrying down a boat of four hundred bales was from five to six hundred dollars, and the freight charged was from four to five dollars a bale. The trouble of transportation was not so much the expense as the delay and uncertainty, as it was not uncommon for nearly half the summer to pass before the planter could get an account of his sales from his commission merchant at New Orleans.

Cotton freighting was a lucrative business, and many of our citizens found in it the road to fortune. They sometimes built boats for shipment to Tennessee river, but they generally bought good East Tennessee boats for the shipment of cotton delivered on the Tennessee river, and employed many men in the business who made corn crops in the summer and spent the fall and winter on the river. Of the old class of cotton-freighters, Richard W. Anderson was one of the best known and one of the last survivors. He was in this business from somewhere about the year 1820 and accumulated money which being invested judiciously at the land sales of 1830 made him a wealthy man. He was a man of excellent judgment, was a good surveyor and made good investments in real estate. The Andersons were descendants of a prominent family in Maryland and there were five brothers and two sisters of the family who came here at an early day. Dr. William Anderson a well known physician who settled at Brownsboro, was of the number. He afterwards moved to Holly Springs, Miss., and for a long time was a prominent citizen of that place, where his descendants still reside. Richard W. Anderson was a noted pedestrian, and some marvelous stories of his pedestrian feats were formerly current in the county. It was said that he would frequently walk down to Whitesburg and back to Huntsville for exercise before breakfast. There was also a story in circulation that when he first embarked in the freighting business he always walked from New Orleans back to Huntsville and always came in three or four days ahead of the crowd, who never undertook to keep up with him, and that on one occasion being disgusted at the extremely low price offered him for one of his boat cables he coiled it up and stalked home on foot with it on his shoulders. After he retired

from business he generally made his home in Huntsville, where he was as much noted for his eccentricities as he was respected for his benevolence. The monument erected by him in memory of the deceased members of his family and to mark the Huntsville meridian is likely also to perpetuate his memory for many generations. Wm. B. Taber, for a long time identified with our manufacturing interests as superintendent of the Bell Factory, in which he was a stockholder, married a sister of Richard W. Anderson, and dying at Nashville, last fall, he was brought to Huntsville and buried by the side of his wife, who for nearly forty years has slept under the shadow of the Anderson monument. Richard W. Anderson died in Huntsville at a ripe old age just before the beginning of the civil war.

#### Chapter IV.

##### Election Districts and Muster Grounds.

While Alabama was a Territory the people first voted for members of the Territorial Legislature at the county site. Justices of the peace and constables were elected at the company muster-grounds, and the captains of the companies with two freeholders selected by him held the election. This law prevailed for many years after the State government was organized, and these old mustering places were the original location of many of our present voting places in the different precincts. Thus it will be seen that the division of the county into election districts originated in the old militia organization of the county, and the law of 1852 defining the boundaries of the election districts was really nothing more than locating by written law what had for a long time already been located by common consent as the limits of the different company beats. The first voting place established after Huntsville, was at Horton's Mill on Barren Fork of Flint river, nearly a mile above the bridge at the forks of the river, and for several years this place and Huntsville were the only general voting places in the county; and this did not interfere with the old district muster-grounds where justices and constables were elected. The war of 1812 and the rumor of wars after that period kept up a thoroughly military organization among our people, and the captain of a company was quite a prominent personage in his little principality, and there were generally many aspirants for military preferment at the election of military officers. In the course of time voting places were

established in the larger number of these old musterbeats for the convenience of the people in the general elections, and finally, in the year 1852, the whole county was divided into regular election districts whose boundaries were accurately defined and made a matter of record, and each designated by a permanent name instead of being known as the beat of whoever happened to be captain of the company of that district. The sixteenth sections were made the basis of these divisions, and many of the old precincts still have their old boundaries.

The largely increasing population of North Alabama made it necessary for our State Legislature to establish new voting places in different parts of the county. Our first legislature, in 1819, established six voting places in Madison county, to-wit: At Henry Brazelton's in the Big Cove, at Mayer Griffin's above Maysville, one at Major Cottrel's at Hazel Green, one at Hillsboro on Hester creek, and at Captain Leonard's above Wood's Mill on Flint river. In the year 1821 voting places were established at the house of Mr. Farley near Cluttsville, and at Capt. Jacob's near Whitesburg, and one at the house of Drury Connally near Meridianville. This made eleven voting places in the county, including Huntsville and Horton's Mill, and they were well distributed for the convenience of the people of the county. Although in general elections the people could vote at any voting place in the county, yet in elections the vote was pretty well distributed among these voting places, and the large vote hitherto polled in Huntsville steadily decreased until its vote was but slightly different in proportion to the vote now cast under the law restricting the voter to his own election district.

The old muster-grounds where the justices, constables and militia officers were elected, possessed great attraction to our fathers, and the battalion and regimental muster-grounds of sixty years ago, the one muster being in the spring and the other in the fall, were anxiously looked forward to as the time of reunion among old neighbors who had separated by moving to different parts of the county. They were accustomed to meet on these occasions, exchange greetings and discuss the news of the day. In fact, it was a very common practice in trade to make notes due and payable on muster day and there was a great deal of business transacted on such occasions, even when there was no election on hand. The business, too, was of a varied character; for instance

it was customary on this day to settle feuds of the past year in a fair, stand-up fight, and a muster rarely passed without several breaches of the peace, which generally ended with but little damage to any one. The inevitable peddler of ginger-bread was on hand generally in the form of some son of Ham, who managed to coax or hire a holiday from his master and who had generally set up the entire night before in the business of baking up a cart load of ginger-bread for the crowd on the next day. Elections in those days were of frequent occurrence, and as a consequence these old muster-grounds were much infested by candidates and whiskey flowed freely. To the little boys the muster-ground had all the attraction that the circus offers to the boys of to-day. The moving, animated crowd, formed of the flower of the chivalry of half a county like Madison, was of itself a sight worth seeing. The brigadier or major-general in his stylish new uniform, with three-cornered hat and dangling plume reviewed the troops on his prancing steed, escorted by his brilliant, well-mounted staff in holiday attire, and the farce of a drill soon over, as there seemed to be a tacit agreement to hurry through that part of the business as rapidly as possible and devote the greater part of the day to other business. It was at these musters that the alert, supple-jointed candidate was in his native element, and when he belonged to another regiment did not hesitate to take advantage of an unfortunate rival who, being subject to military duty, meekly marched in the ranks, by fascinating the fathers of the regiment by anecdote and humorous talk and frequent proffer of an exhaustless whiskey flask to those of a thirsty temperament. The eighth of January, long commemorated by our fathers, the fourth of July and regimental muster day were long and great holidays of our fathers. There were two regiments in Madison county, the Second Regiment being formed long before the State was admitted into the Union, and, as well as I can ascertain, its muster-ground was near old Blue Spring camp-ground. The other regiment (number not remembered) had its muster-ground at Henry Brazelton's in the Big Cove, and was the rallying point for the brave boys of New Madison. There were so many of these old companies that it is hard to locate the company muster-grounds, but I would fain preserve from oblivion the name of as many of these old captains of companies and their location as I have been able to gather from the meagre records on the subject. In the northern portion of the county were Captains Wm. G. Barton, Pitman Pitts, Allen Wall,

Joseph Taylor, Wm. Kirkland and Jesse Bendall. From Meridianville westward to Madison and east to Flint river, were Captains W. Graves Bouldin, Wm. M. Roper, Dudley Sale, Friley Jones, Alfred Haggard, R. B. Armistead and James Johnston. Captains John Williams, John McDougall and George Kelly, commanded companies from Hickory Flat to Bragg's; Nicholas Ware, J. J. Simmons and R. G. Hewlett commanded companies including Cedar Gap, Maysville and Brownsboro; David Lacey at Mc Nulbytown, John B. Turner at Whitesburg, Jason L. Jordan near Lannier's, Jonathan Collier and William Sutton near Collier's and Vienna, John Hill in the Big Cove, another Benjamin Clark on the Dug Hill road, and Frederick Elgin, John Harrison and Joseph Dunn around and in Huntsville.

One of the most noted military characters of that day was John K. Dunn, for a long time commander of the Madison Light Infantry Company, a roystering blade who gave himself the sobriquet of "H-1 and K Dunn." Thus it will be seen that at this time there was nearly thirty military companies, each forming a muster-beat entitled to two justices of the peace and a constable; but this number was gradually pruned down to about fourteen.

I have given the names of these old officers as a reminiscence of the olden time, and also to show that in those days the office of captain of a military company was considered an honorable and prominent position, as the older citizen will readily recognize in this list the names of many of our once prominent and respected citizens. For instance the names of the ancestors of the Wares, Hills, Taylors, Colliers, Kellys, Williamses and others, forming a large and most respectable number of the present citizens of Madison county. Of this number Dr. William Kirkland, who was a soldier of the war of 1812, was one of the latest survivors. Capt. Fred. Elgin, an old and respectable citizen of Huntsville, died some three years ago, but the latest survivor was Capt. Wm. M. Roper, who died at his residence on the Winchester road at an advanced age during the past year. He lived so long in our community and was so well known by our people and so highly respected for his many excellent christian traits of character, that I can say nothing in regard to him that is not already known to the people of the county. Capt. Joseph Taylor and Capt. Allen Walls were prominent and influential citizens; both were for many years



commissioners of roads and revenue for the county and both emigrated to Arkansas, where they died after the close of the civil war. John T. Harrison was an uncle of our townsman Perry L. Harrison and the father of Dr. Wm. Harrison, once a prominent physician of Guntersville, Alabama.

I find but little allusion to the regimental officers. Among our old militia generals were D. M. Bradford, a veteran of 1812, John Graham and B. T. Patterson, long U. S. Marshal of this district. Of the old militia officers there are but few survivors, and if the question of seniority were to arise Gen. John M. Humphrey would claim the higher rank, but Col. Wm. C. McBroom, of Guleysville, would probably be ranking officer by date of his commission as colonel of the gallant old militia regiment of East Madison, if not by superiority in rank.

## Chapter V.

### Clearing the Lands.

When our fathers came to this county it was everywhere covered with a magnificent growth of timber. Except the Chickasaw Old Fields around Whitesburg and the one solitary prairie on the Rice plantation north of Triana, which did not cover half a section of land, the forests were in their primeval state; and in order to prepare and fit the soil for farming purposes it was necessary that the land should be cleared of the gigantic forest trees that shut out the life-giving rays of the sun from the surface of the soil. In the first settlement, and until capital and slave-labor from the older States made this a possible task, the work had proceeded slowly, and a few acres here and there indicated the different settlements of the earliest pioneers in the county; and even when labor had become cheap and abundant in some part of the county, the destruction of the timber in the new grounds required many years of serious work. Girdling the timber on the new grounds was almost the universal practice and was called deadening, and a tract of land where the trees were girdled and the land not fenced or cultivated was known as a "deadening." Trees deadened in August and September did not put forth any more leaves, and by the following spring cultivation of the land might commence with a prospect of a partial crop, though cultivating such land was generally rough work, as the roots of the trees, so thickly interwoven

## FALL ISSUE, 1940

in the soil, made thorough cultivation and a fair return for the labor performed impossible. The timber was very seldom cut and hauled off the land, as most farmers were of the opinion that land was better on which the forest growth was allowed to remain and gradually decay. In old Madison, where large tracts of land were taken up and clearing was undertaken on a large scale, the land-owners with their stalwart slaves and strong oxen and horses were able to girdle and fence large tracts in comparatively a short period of time, but the work awaiting a solitary laborer with his forty or eighty acres of virgin land covered with giant forest growth, involving the labor of clearing and fencing enough land to support his family, was a task at once arduous and laborious. At the time of which I wrote, especially east of the mountains, a large number of small farmers were clearing lands-afterwards consolidated into larger farms, and their labor fitted for cultivation many of the clean, fertile fields on which, to-day, can be seen not the least vestage (sic) of the primeval forest that once thickly covered them. After the first year's cultivation, the tall poplars and sturdy oaks, in process of decay, began to drop their smaller branches, and by the opening spring the earth was covered with their debris, that must be gathered and burnt before plowing began. In the course of another season the winds of winter prostrated the less durable and the smaller trees, and log-rolling commenced. At first this labor was not so heavy, as the logs were small and easily managed, and in a few years the taller and more durable trees, divested of bark and smaller limbs, the skeletons of the once living forest, remained. But the timber was so dense that there were immense numbers of these dead trees standing, and when, in course of time, the winds prostrated their huge trunks, their removals was a herculean task, requiring from one to two months' hard labor in the beginning of the farming season. Among the settlements of smaller farmers during log-rolling time, there was by common consent a community of labor. Every family was expected to furnish at least one good hand for a month's or six weeks' labor, and when his log-rolling day came round he expected his neighbors in person or by proxy to be on hand for business. The oak and popular timber was notched at intervals of ten or twelve feet on the logs and fire kindled on them, which being built up morning and evening, soon gnawed its way through and severed the prostrate trunk into convenient lengths for rolling. Hickories of large size were very heavy, but fortunately when partly seasoned and

once ignited they were generally consumed entirely. Just before log-rolling day, the farmer with his sharp axe inspected his new ground and severed all cuts not entirely cut off by the fire, as it was considered bad management to delay a score of men in chopping up logs on log-rolling day. It was wonderful to behold how a force of stalwart, experienced farmers would pile up the logs over acre after acre of fallen timber. They would approach the several cuts of a log, oak or poplar, stretching for sixty or seventy feet on the ground, inspect it a moment, divide into squads, turn a cut here and there into proper position, and almost as quick as though two or three large log heaps would take the place of the prostrate timbers. From sunrise until sunset, with a single hour's rest at noon, the work would go on, or until the job was completed, and every man was expected to dine and sup with his neighbor who was furnishing the day's work.

There were giants in those days, the loads the men carried with their long dogwood hand-spikes were wonderful; sometimes the logs were so large that when raised the men on either side could scarcely see over them, and to the bystander it presented the novel spectacle of a big log moving off with a row of men on one side. In this business, by long practice, our ancestors acquired a peculiar sleight in grasping the hand-spike, in balancing the body, and keeping proper step in bearing the unwieldy burden. From this branch of labor originated the phrase of "toting fair", as between men of nearly equal strength an inch or two difference in the divide of a stick gave great advantage, and where a strong man matched a weaker one it was expected to neutralize the difference in dividing the leverage of the hand-spike. The old settlers made the use of fire a valuable auxiliary in clearing up the lands in the spring, but sometimes it turned to a dangerous foe. In the spring, which in those days was generally early and warm, the logs in the fields would be piled, and through an entire settlement the logs would be fired nearly at the same time, and at night the face of the whole community would be illuminated by the blazing heaps. If the season was unusually dry, the sap of the standing timber would ignite and burn like tinder. Sometimes the wind would rise and the flying sparks would set the dead forest on fire, and the farmers would have to fight for their fences and fodder stack through the entire night among the fire and smoke and blazing and falling branches and trunks of the burning trees. A blazing

fire-brand would fall on the dry fence, the watchful farmer would come to the rescue and the rails would be scattered to the right and left out of the reach of the flames, and the danger would hardly be averted before he would have to hasten to some other point of danger. These conflagrations would sometimes spread from field to field and the whole neighborhood would come to the rescue. During the winter the dark forests would drop a thick covering of leaves over the surface of the earth and they, becoming dry in the spring would accidentally or designedly be set on fire. This fire would probably start on the mountains and night after night the bright fiery circles would increase in area until a rise or change in the wind would send them speeding down the valleys, and when they got among the canebreaks the popping of the cane would be like the collision of the skirmish lines of opposing armies. As the flames approached their fields the owners would clear long paths round their enclosures and fire would fight fire, the slower line of flame would meet the faster and with a brilliant glare on meeting would die out along the whole opposing line and the danger would be over for a season. From the first fencing of the lands until the disappearance of the original forest growth was a period of many years and involved an immense amount of manual labor. Timber at that time was of little value and to our fathers the supply seemed inexhaustible, and the amount wantonly destroyed on lands of but little agricultural value was enormous. A large area of land was cleared by non-land owners, who would take leases on forty or eighty tracts which they would clear and fence on which they would erect cabins, for the use and occupancy of the lands for from five to seven years. I can recollect many wealthy and prosperous farmers of the olden time who started in business on such leases of land, of which by years of industry and thrift, they finally became owners. From long experience and labor in making rails to fence these lands and building their tenements the early settlers attained wonderful dexterity in the use of the maul and axe, and we have authentic evidence of a single laborer splitting one thousand rails between sunrise and sunset. With a heavy Collin's axe with a helve four feet long of strong white hickory, they tackled the immense forest trees, and in an incredibly short period of time they would fell and chop them into convenient lengths for rails or boards. While it was necessary for agricultural purposes that the forest growth should be removed, yet it was a great calamity that the timber should have been wan-

tonly destroyed on lands comparatively barren, on which the timber would finally have been incalculably of more value than all the land ever produced. It is possible that denuding the land of its forest growth has made the country healthier, by removing decayed vegetable matter, that was once a fruitful source of disease, and in causing the filling up and placing in cultivation of what were once in summer stagnant ponds and lagoons, and in removing the causes of obstructions in our creeks and rivers and thus improving the drainage. Yet aside from the immense pecuniary loss to our people the wholesale destruction of our forests has in many other respects inflicted serious injury upon our county. As a consequence of the destruction of our forests, the seasons are more uncertain, springs that once furnished an abundance of water throughout the year have failed, the annual rainfall diminished and drought is more frequent. When we see the settlers on the western prairies, by judicious timber culture, restoring the forest growth and know the success of their efforts in that direction, we are convinced that the time has arrived for our people to attend to the preservation of the remnants of our once magnificent forests, and also to restore the forest growth on their worn and useless land by the planting and culture of forest trees.

## Chapter VI.

1823 to 1828.

From the year 1823 to 1828, there was but little change in the condition of affairs within our borders. Our people were quietly engaged in developing the agricultural resources of the county and gradually extending the area of their farming lands, by clearing and fencing new fields. The tide of emigration that tended westward after the land sales of 1818 had reached its flood, and the decrease in the price of cotton, the great staple of the Tennessee Valley, together with depression resulting from wild speculation in public land, began to exert a depressing influence on our people. A large element in our population, consisting of small farmers, seeking cheap homes, was rapidly filling up the eastern and southeastern portion of the county, and many of them were clamoring for the final extinguishment of the title of the Cherokees to the eastern part of Madison, and the placing of the same upon the market. The older Indian line stretching across the county to the Tennessee line, northeast of New Market to Flint River above

Wood's Mill, was a barrier that could not be passed until removed by act of Congress, and the hardy pioneers who were crowding along this line looked with lingering eyes on the beautiful and fertile valleys of Flint and Hurricane, but various obstacles intervened and delayed the opportunity of possession for several years. Until the year 1822 or 23, the people east of the mountains had no public roads, and about this time a road was reviewed from Wofford's section by way of Brownsboro to meet a road coming from Woodville, the then capital of Decatur County, at the county line, which was then at the fork of the Bellefonte and Clear Creek roads west of Joe Criner's, now the Isbell place. When Decatur county was abolished, this became the great thoroughfare of travel between the counties, and the prominent attorneys of Madison county traveled over the route at least twice a year, on horse-back, to attend the Jackson county courts, and then a stage route was established, and for many years transported the mails and passengers to and fro between the county sites. About the same time, John Webster, John Fortner, Henry Brazleton and others were appointed to view and mark out a road from Huntsville across the mountain by what was then known as "Webster's Gap" to Henry Brazleton's where there was an election precinct and a regimental muster guard (sic). Shortly afterwards, Joseph Pickens and others, as commissioners, extended this road to meet a road to be opened in Decatur County to the county line, which was near the old Cobb ford.

The Madison and Whitesburg road had already been opened from the Tennessee line to Tennessee river, which was crossed by the Limestone road forming part of the old military road from Winchester to Natchez by Hazle Green. This road was also tapped at Connally by the old Winchester road running from that point by the old town of Hillsboro the then voting place of the New Market people. Below Huntsville a road had been opened through Belvin's Gap to the Big Cove, and also one from the Whitesburg road to Leemon's Ferry. The old bridges the county had built was one across Fagan's, now Dry Creek, near the site of the present bridge in the city limits on the Whitesburg pike, and a long wooden bridge across Flint river at site of old bridge at the mouth of Briar Fork which was constructed by Bennett Wood, who then lived just beyond the river and was at that time County Treasurer. The bridge was insured for many years by the builder,

who not only contracted to construct it but also gave bond to keep it in good repair for that period of time at his own expense. The records of the day show that during these years much was done in the way of facilitating communication throughout the county, and the opening of the great county thoroughfares greatly assisted in developing the business interests of our county site, and many of our merchants were building up a country trade that laid the foundation of their future prosperity. In the year 1825, William McBroom, sheriff, retired under constitutional enactment, and was succeeded by John P. Neal, who was sheriff until 1828.

In State and national politics our county still retained its prominence and the county furnished a large quota of the State's representatives in congress and in the senate. As regards United States Senators it is a remarkable fact that Madison county furnished a senator from the year 1819 to the civil war, with the exception of the term from 1842 to 1848, when Arthur P. Bagby and Dixon H. Lewis were in the senate from Middle and Southern Alabama, Dr. David Moore having been defeated by Gov. Bagby in consequence of an unfortunate division among the Democracy in the northern part of the State on local issues. As a matter of interest I give a list of our citizens either at the time or originally citizens of the county who have been United States Senators: John W. Walker, from 1819 to 1822; William Kelly, from 1822 to 1825; Henry Chambers, 1825 to 1826; John McKinley, 1826 to 1831; Gabriel Moore, 1831 to 1837; C. C. Clay, 1837 to 1843; Jere Clements, 1849 to 1853, and C. C. Clay from 1853 to 1861. Thus we see that but for the defeat of Dr. Moore in 1842 by the opposition of some Democrats from the northern portion of the State this county would have had an unbroken line of State Senators from the formation of the State Constitution in 1819 to the beginning of the civil war.

During this period there was much complaint about the court house and jail. The old square-yellow brick court house that stood a little east of the present building and which had been finished about the year 1817, though a large and imposing edifice for a new county at that time, began to get out of repair, and was deemed by many unsafe on account of the size of the rooms and the want of sufficient thickness of the walls. In the north western part of the present court house yard was the pillory, stocks and whipping post, nearly due west from the old jail that stood just out side of

the railing round the court house square, in the northeast corner of the square. The steep declivity on which the court house stood descended abruptly in the direction of the jail, which stood on nearly level ground in a kind of basin that sometimes in winter turned to a pond. The following letter from Joseph Caruthers, the jailor, and John McBroom, sheriff, will give some idea of our jail comforts at that time. This letter is dated February 7, 1825:

"To the Hon. Judge of the County Court of County Commissioners of Roads and Revenues: It becomes my duty, as the Jailor of Madison County, to inform you that the jail of said county is insufficient for the safe-keeping of the prisoners committed thereto and has been so for a number of years. Owing to the frequent attempts to break through the windows they have become insecure, and the floors of the several rooms have become quite decayed and are falling through. The roof is so bad that whenever there comes a heavy rain almost everything within the walls become entirely wet. I therefore pray you to review the same, as I believe you are by act of the legislature required to do, have the necessary repairs done, so there may not be so great a responsibility on my part for escapes.

(Signed)

John McBroom,  
Sheriff."

ROBERT CARUTHERS,  
Jailor .

In the month of August, 1825, John P. Neal succeeded Mr. McBroom as sheriff and soon after he went into office he wrote to the commissioners, and in his letter he says: "I call the earnest attention of the court to the insecure condition of the jail, and hereby enter my protest against it." But it was many years before the old jail and market house were torn down and a new jail built on the site of the present jail. This was owing, doubtless, to pecuniary troubles, as a committee to audit the treasurer's books from the year 1825 to 1828 reported the amount of outstanding claims against the county treasury over and above available assets (sic) at forty-four hundred and thirty-eight dollars, which claims were out in the form of county scrip and were at a heavy discount. About the year 1825, the old jail bounds that heretofore extended over an area of ten acres, were extended one mile in every direction from the jail, thus giving prisoners for debt who could give bond not to try to escape the liberty of the whole city.



From the year 1823 to 1828 there was but little change in county officers. Samuel Chapman continued Judge of the County Court and Thos. Brandon Clerk, and Lemuel Mead Clerk of the Circuit Court. The Court of County Commissioners, being elected every two years, underwent some changes. Gross Scruggs served as commissioner for the greater portion of this period, and the office was filled by Thomas McGee, Joseph Pickens, Stephen Biles, Samuel Walker, James McCartney and Geo. T. Jones—all of whom are well remembered by the old citizens of the county. Thomas McGee was then getting to be an old man, and lived near what is now known as the old Driskell place, on the Tennessee line. Joseph Pickens lived in the Big Cove, and was long one of the most popular and influential men in New Madison, noted for his kindness of heart and unstinted hospitality. Geo. T. Jones, who lived on Mountain Fork, was a man of more than ordinary talent, who frequently represented our county in the legislature, where his good sense and sound judgment made him prominent. He was a progressive and successful planter, and aside from public duties, by thrift and industry, accumulated a handsome property. But of the body of able men who served as commissioners during this period James McCartney was by far the most prominent. Coming here about the year 1810 without capital, he entered on a career of successful speculation in which he distanced all competitors, and had his years been prolonged he would doubtless have been one of the wealthiest men in the State. When about nineteen years old he married Eliza Allen, a most estimable lady, and a sister of the Rev. John Allen, who for a period of many years was the venerated pastor of the Presbyterian Church of this city. In the land sales of 1830 James McCartney invested heavily, and had he lived to reap the fruit of his investments would have realized an immense profit from his ventures. He was also an extensive and progressive farmer, and was far ahead of public sentiment on the erection of cotton factories, and at the time of his death, in 1833, before he had reached his fiftieth year, he was devising plans for the erection of an extensive cotton factory on Flint River, which, under his management, would doubtless have greatly added to the material prosperity of our county.

During this period North Alabama still held the supremacy in the councils of the State. Nich. Davis, of Limestone, who became the leader of the old Whig party in North Alabama, was

President of the State Senate from 1823 to 1827, and during the same period Samuel Walker, William Kelly and C. C. Clay of Madison, were speaker of the Lower House, except for the years 1826 and 1827, when the speaker's chair was filled by Samuel W. Oliver of Conecuh county. James J. Pleasants was Secretary of State from 1821 to 1824. Henry Minor was first Circuit Judge of this District, and then reporter for the Supreme Court. In 1825 Jno. M. Taylor succeeded him as Circuit Judge, Jno. M. Taylor was a man of versatile talents, being at one and the same time merchant, preacher and lawyer. As a merchant he was a failure, but he was an eloquent preacher and a brilliant lawyer. From the year 1823 to 1827, James G. Birney was Solicitor for our Judicial district, and was then a popular and talented lawyer, and when he sold out his property and went north, to become a leader in the old Abolition party and its first candidate for the Presidency, he voluntarily abandoned a career that promised him a brilliant political and professional future in our State.

## Chapter VII.

### Merchants of Madison County, 1820 to 1830.

The decade in our history of which I am now writing witnessed a great development of the mercantile business of the county. Many of the successful and prosperous merchants of the time had commenced business here at an early period, and from small beginnings were now fairly launched in successful and profitable business. During the prosperous era in the Tennessee Valley from the war of 1812 to the period of which I write, they had kept pace with the country's progress and established their business on a sure foundation. While some of the pioneer merchants had retired from business, and others had sought new fields of enterprise, an unusually large proportion of them were here actively engaged in business, and for many years were prominent business men in our community, and are well remembered by our old citizens. Of the number who came here at the first settlement of the country, Alexander Gilbreath, the first of the number who commenced business in Huntsville, had removed south of the river where many of his family still reside. Luther and Calvin Morgan and Samuel Morgan went to Nashville, and if I mistake not one of them was the ancestor of Gen. John H. Morgan, so famous as a cavalry officer during the civil war. Samuel Morgan engaged

in business in Nashville, Tennessee, and was for nearly a quarter of a century a prominent and successful merchant in that city. Concerning Joshua Falconer, John P. Hickman, Neal B. Rose and Philip Foote, well known merchants in Huntsville before Alabama was a State, I have but little information, and I believe there are no representatives of their names now in the county.

But many of these old merchants lived and prospered and died at an advanced age in this community, and their families are largely represented in our county. I propose to devote this article to their memory. I regret that my sources of information are so meagre, as a recital of their struggles and trials and final success would be an interesting theme. Before the State was organized and when the Cherokees were east of us and the Chickasaws were west, the traffic with the Indians was an important part of the city's trade, and it was nothing uncommon for forty or fifty Indians from Tennessee river to march into the city and spend a day or two trafficking and bartering with the merchants. I can recollect many of the old merchants, and their tales of the olden time, when they travelled to Philadelphia and New York on horseback and by stage, were of the most thrilling character. They swam their horses across the swollen and unbridged watercourses, and traversed the Cumberland ridge in parties, as a precaution against robberies that sometimes occurred in the mountain solitudes. Some of them actually loaded wagons with their goods in the northern cities and conveyed them over the long and tedious journey to Huntsville. They were a most remarkable race of men, wise, prudent and courageous, never discouraged by difficulties nor dismayed by toil or danger. I have in previous articles briefly referred to some of them, and at the risk of repetition I again return to them. Among the early settlers, Stephen Ewing, James White, James Clemens, Andrew Beirne, William Patton, John Read and D. N. Bradford commenced business here at an early date, and were long well known and successful merchants. Among the number who commenced business from 1820 to 1830 and became prominent in our mercantile community were Frank T. Mastin, Wm. H. Powers, B. M. Lowe and O. D. Sledge. Stephen Ewing was one of the earliest of our merchants, and was for a long time engaged in an extensive business. He belonged to the old and distinguished family of Ewings that had since furnished so many prominent men in the States of Tennessee, Kentucky and Ohio,

and was an honorable representative of a remarkable family. With but little capital, he commenced business in a small way, trading in salt and flour between Whitesburg and Huntsville, and won his way to fortune by untiring industry, sound common sense and unswerving integrity. James Clemens was also an early settler and a successful merchant. A man of sound judgment, fine business capacity and imposing appearance, though somewhat reserved in manner, his success was due more to native talent and thrift than to personal popularity. He was the father of Jere Clemens, one of the most brilliant, eloquent and popular politicians of his time. James White and Andrew Beirne were Virginia gentlemen, of the old school, both scions of old and influential families of the Old Dominion, with many of the virtues and vices of that splendid type of the Anglo American known as the Old Virginia cavalier stock. James White was for a time in partnership with Alexander Gilbreath, the pioneer merchant in the county. James White was a man of considerable means and invested largely in real estate, owning with other property a fine body of land on both sides of Tennessee river near Whitesburg, which town received its name from him. He was blessed with a large family, of which Thomas W. White and Gen'l Ad. White are the representatives in Alabama, many of his descendants living in Virginia, where the family owned a large property. Of the family of Andrew Beirne, Col. Geo. P. Beirne was the only male representative, and at his death the name became extinct in our county. Col. Geo. P. Beirne was a worthy representative of a noble race, and will long live in the memory of our people, and in connection with this allusion to his father I take the liberty of quoting the following eloquent portrayal of his character from an address to the Huntsville bar in August, 1881, by one who knew him well! "He was as marked and distinguished among his fellow men for his personal appearance as for the attributes of his mind. He was a man of striking personal appearance. A tall and commanding figure, indicative of great strength, and a face of finely marked and manly features, with a broad forehead, a heavy brow and a large and lustrous eye. His face was an index of his character and frankness as a man. In its expression was reflected as distinctly the varied emotions of his nature as the mirror reflects the features of the face. In all the walks of life he exemplified in a high degree that order of refinement and that type of civilization of which we are so justly proud, and by precept and example he exerted

an influence rarely felt. A more touching and eloquent tribute could not be paid to any man than to say what can truthfully be said of him, that he will be missed, and his memory cherished sacredly by those who most need an unselfish friend, the widow and orphan."

William Patton, the other member of the old firm of Bierne and Patton, was of Irish descent, and he possessed in a high degree the rare business endowments that form the character of the model merchant. He was at once merchant, manufacturer and farmer combined, and was remarkably successful in whatever he undertook. His cotton gin was one of the first erected in the city, if not the first, and it is said that his son, ex-Governor R. M. Patton, now a man advanced in years, is wont to boast that he was the pioneer gin driver of Madison county. William Patton's first gin stood south of Walker street and east of Meridian Pike, and the motive power is said to have been an old-fashioned one-horse tread-wheel power, and it was the business of the future Governor to keep the old horse that furnished the power to his work. William Patton had a natural turn for machinery, and owned several mill sites on which he experimented more or less. At length he became associated in business with J. J. Donegan, an Irishman also, who became one of the leading merchants of the period. Patton, Donegan & Co. finally became sole owners of the excellent water power at and above the Bell Factory on Flint river, which was for a long time the site of the most important cotton factory in North Alabama. It is my impression that James Manning was also in the mercantile business, though he was also an opulent planter. He belonged to the celebrated colony from Petersburg, Georgia. These colonists had come from Virginia to Georgia, and named their new place of settlement Petersburg, after the old Virginia home, and a large number of them came from Georgia to Alabama about the year 1809 or '10. Among the number were the Popes, Walkers, Bibbs, Manning and Coxes, all of whom became more or less prominent in the new country. James Manning is said to have been a man of high culture, and his talent was inherited by his descendants, among whom were the Lowes and Congressman Van Manning, of Mississippi. His son, R. J. Manning, commenced business here and rose like a rocket, but lacking the judgment of the older merchants, he made a disastrous failure. In his palmy days of prosperity he placed the well-known "Manning money" in circulation at one time as current as a modern

national bank note, and erected one of the most costly residences in the city, on the north of Holmes street, which afterwards became the residence of Dr. David Moore. John Read, one of the oldest merchants in the city, was clerk in the land office when it was removed to Huntsville in 1811, and he was for over forty years a merchant in the town. Francis T. Mastin was from an old and respectable Maryland family, and after living in Virginia for many years came to this county about the year 1826. He was a man of fine business capacity; he accumulated a large property enjoyed an enviable reputation in the community which his descendants have maintained down to the third generation. He was the last survivor of the noble fraternity who left the indelible impression of their high character on the citizens of this town. B. M. Lowe also came here during his period, and was rapidly advancing to the foremost position among our merchants that he held for ten years. He became exceedingly popular, and among other offices he was elected Major-General of the militia of that time, considered an exalted and honorable position. Gen'l Lowe married a daughter of James Manning and raised a family noted for culture and refinement. His daughters were intellectual and accomplished. Robert J. Lowe, one of the most brilliant of our young men, died during the first year of the civil war, and the intellectual power and magnetic influence over the people of our late Congressman, William M. Lowe, the youngest of the family, was freely conceded by his most bitter political opponents and at the time of his sudden death his reputation had become national. William H. Powers, long a conspicuous figure in business circles also commenced business here before the year 1830. He labored under the then disadvantage of northern birth and under a reserved manner and brusque speech and deportment he concealed a liberal and benevolent nature. He was an old line Whig and a strong Union man, but when the war commenced he warmly sympathized with the cause of the south. During the war he went north to his native State, and many unfortunate Confederates immured in Northern prisons were recipients of his bounty and he is held in grateful remembrance by many survivors of the war who doubtless owed their lives to his prompt and judicious aid. After the war closed he returned to the city to which he was bound by so many ties of confidence and friendship, and died at an advanced age, honored and respected by our people.

In closing these sketches of our old merchants, I can but express regret that I know so little of them, and the little that I do know of them has mostly been handed down to the present time by tradition.

(To be continued.)

## DIARY OF CAPTAIN EDWARD CRENSHAW OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES ARMY

(The final part of the diary will be published in the Winter issue of the *Quarterly*.)

### Friday, 16th. December, 1864.

Cloudy and pleasant. In company with Captain Holmes spent the day with Sergeant Shirley of Pogue's battalion of artillery a few miles below here. We had an excellent dinner, and returned to our command late in the evening. No news of importance today, except that Fort McAllister had been carried by assault, and it was supposed by a part of Sherman's army which will put him in communication with the fleet, and settles beyond a doubt his safe arrival at the coast of Georgia.

### Saturday, 17th.

Clear and warm. Nothing new to-day. On duty as officer of the day. Lieut. Bradford, commanding the Marine Guard of the "Chickamauga" now Mat Wilmington paid us a visit to-day. He will return on the 19th, inst. 2nd Lieut. E. R. Smith received orders, this evening to go to Charleston.

### Sunday, 18th.—

Clear and pleasant. No news. Remained in my quarters all day. Did not go to church. Sent ten dollars in gold to Sergeant Smith of the Marine Guard of the "Tallahassee", by Lieutenant Bradford which I borrowed from his while I was on the "Tallahassee."

1864. December,

### Monday, 19th.—

Cloudy and cool. It is reported in the Yankee papers that Hood was badly defeated before Nashville by Gen. Thomas with the loss of many prisoners and guns, on the 15th, and 16th of this month. The news is very discouraging. Saturday morning, last, Mr. Foote of Tenn. made a speech in Congress on the currency bill, saying 'that if it did not pass he would despair of our cause.' He drew a gloomy picture of the present state of affairs, and denounced the President, and some act that had been passed by Congress in session. He said 'that events would probably happen in the next ten days, resulting from what had already been done that would compel him as a freeman to leave Congress; that he



did not know how to legislate in chains; and that the liberty of the press would be stopped by the same causes' &c.

A very unwise speech to say the least of it.

**Tuesday, 20th.—**

Clear and cold. Nothing new to-day. 2nd Lieut. E. R. Smith left for Charleston, this morning. Mr. Wm. C. Rives, of Virginia, made a noble and eloquent speech, in Congress, on the Currency Bill yesterday. He spoke in favour of the Currency Bill and highly complimented Mr. Secretary Trenholm. He also made some noble and eloquent remarks on the state of the country. He spoke hopefully of our cause. His speech was worth of a Roman Senator. Reinforcements have been passing through Richmond all day going South.

1864. December,

**Wednesday, 21st.—**

Cold and cloudy; rained all day. On duty at the wharf and as officer of the day. No news or reports to day, except the report that Gen. Breckinridge had defeated the Yankee General Burbridge in Southwestern Virginia. My application for the withdrawal of my resignation as captain in the 58th, Ala. Reg't was returned to day with this endorsement:

"To justify the allowance of this application a letter should accompany it proceeding from the officers of the company & of the regiment expressing their consent and approbation to the appointment should accompany it.

By order

(Signed) J. A. Campbell

A. S. W."

19 D 1864

**Thursday, 22nd.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day, except that an immense fleet under Admiral Porter and Ben. Butler sailed from Fortress Monroe to attack Wilmington. At last accounts some of the fleet had appeared off Wilmington. Visited Richmond today; got aground in the river and did not reach the city until 2 o'clock. Returned in the evening on the cars.

**Friday, 23rd.—**

Clear and cold; nothing new. Remained in camp all day. 1st Lieut. F. H. Cameron returned today, from absence on leave. Sent

John on his way home this morning. Sent my valise by him with some things for Pa. and Ma. Gave him fifty dollars to help pay his way.

1864. December,

**Saturday, 24th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. On duty as officer of the day. 2nd Lieut. Thomson left this post on forty days' leave this morning; he lives in Mississippi. Sent my application to withdraw my resignation, to be mailed by him in Montgomery to Col. Jones.

**Sunday, 25th.—**

Christmas, but very unlike Christmas. There was no good cheer to raise our drooping spirits; no reunion of friends around the old family hearth; no thanksgiving and pouring out the soul in worship to God; but the day has been gloomy and cheerless to me. Father of mercies, grant that, the next Christmas, we may be all allowed to reunite around our family firesides! Passed the entire day in my quarters in silent meditation. There was no good news from our armies to cheer me. But the blessed Thought that God, in his infinite mercy, gave his only begotten son as an atonement for our sins, cheers me and gives me new life. I will not despair when we have such a God to aid us; for he has said that he will protect the weak and aid those who are deserving and he will hear the prayers of those who call on him in an humble and contrite spirit.—He will do what is best for us; his will will be done and not that of our enemies.

**Monday, 26th.—**

Cloudy and rainy. No news to-day. Dined with Serg't Shirley of Lt. Col. Pogue's Artillery Battalion. Col. Pogue himself dined with us. We had a good dinner and egg-nog. I found Col. Pogue to be a well informed gentleman. I enjoyed my visit very much. I returned to my quarters late in the evening, feeling very much fatigued.

**Tuesday, 27th.—**

Cloudy and warm. On duty as Officer of the Day. The Currency Bill passed Congress yesterday. A telegram from Wilmington says that the enemy attacked Fort Fisher, and under fire of their fleet landed three brigades two and a half miles from the fort and made an assault upon it; but were repulsed. Savannah

has been evacuated without any loss. No news from Gen'l Hood. The people seem to be getting over the depression caused by Hood's defeat and Sherman's successful march through Georgia. Lieutenant Thursday had an egg-nog this evening.

**Wednesday, 28th.—**

Cloudy and rain to-day. Gen. Bragg telegraphs from Wilmington that the enemy were repulsed in their attack on Fort Fisher, and had re-embarked; but that their next movement had not been developed. Remained in my quarters all day.

**Thursday, 29th.—**

Cloudy and cold; it was sleeting all day. Went to Richmond and returned in the evening. Drew one month's pay to and including December 1st. No news to-day.

**Friday, 30th.—**

Clear and cold. The Yankee fleet that was engaged in the attack upon the forts defending the mouth of the Cape Fear River has sailed away; and on the same day, three steamers ran the blockade with stores for the Confederate Government. Read some interesting articles in the "Eclectic Magazine". I extract the following:

"Personal Recollections, &c. of the late Lady Blessington" by P. G. Patmore.

'Listening is the happiest and most indispensable of all the talents which go to constitute a good talker; for any talk that is not the actual and immediate result of listening, is at once a bore and an impertinence.'

'One of 'Lady Blessington's attractions \* \* \* \* \* was that strong personal interest which she felt, and did not scruple to evince, on every topic on which she was called upon to busy herself—whether it was the fashion of a cap, or the fate of nations.' 'Lady Blessington was a beautiful and fascinating woman; perhaps the loveliest woman of her day.' (1818 to 1849).

**"The Fatherless"**

"Speak softly to the fatherless!  
And check the harsh reply  
That sends the crimson to the cheek,  
The tear-drop to the eye.  
They have the weight of loneliness  
In this rude world to bear;  
Then gently raise the fallen bud,  
The drooping floweret spare,  
Speak kindly to the fatherless!  
The lowliest of their band  
God keepeth, as the waters,  
In the hollow of his hand,  
'Tis said to see life's evening sun  
Go down in sorrow's shroud,  
But sadder still when morning's dawn  
Is darkened by the cloud.

Look mildly on the fatherless!  
Ye may have power to wile  
Their hearts from sadden'd memory  
By the magic of a smile.  
Deal gently with these little ones,  
Be pitiful, and He  
The friend and father of us all  
Shall gently deal with thee!

**"The Shadow of the Past"**

Oh! joy to the spring-tide sun,  
For it opens the buds to leaves,  
And it makes sweet climbers run  
With their fragrance over the eaves;  
And it calls glad birds about  
To sing new songs of praise;  
Oh joy to the Spring, but it cannot bring  
The joy of by-gone days!

I think on the Past with a thought  
 That paineth the bosom sore :  
 A face, a form, to my mind is brought,  
 Which my eyes can never see more !  
 I hear a kind word said  
 By a tongue that is mute and cold ;  
 I feel the clasp of a hand, now dead  
 And withering in the mould !

But the thought of friendship changed  
 Is worse than a dream of the dead ;  
 And I think of the dear estranged  
 Till reason, with peace, seems fled.  
 There are hearts that loved me once,  
 There are hands that once caress'd,  
 That are colder now than the frost on the bough  
 That killeth the bird in its nest !"

**Saturday, 31st.—**

Cloudy and cold. Heavy fall of snow. Went to Richmond in the morning and returned in the evening. Made purchases in the market for a new-year's dinner. No news to-day.  
 1865. January,

**Sunday, 1st.—**

• Clear and cold; much snow on the ground. We had a good dinner to-day. Had several friends to dine with us. Passed the day very pleasantly. It was rumoured to-day that Gen. Hood had turned on Gen. Thomas and defeated him. I hope it is true. All quiet along our lines in this neighborhood. Have not heard from home in a long time.

**Monday, 2d.—**

Clear and cold. Snow still covering the ground. No duty as officer of the day and at the wharf. No news to cheer the advent of the new-year except the repulse of the Yankee 'Armada' at Fort Fisher.

**Tuesday, 3rd.—**

Cloudy and cold. Snowed again to-day. No news to-day. Went to Richmond and returned in the evening. Received a polite note from Miss Clara Campbell inviting me, in behalf of

her sister, to a small party at Judge Campbell's this evening. I intended to return to Richmond in the evening and avail myself of this kind invitation; but there was such a heavy snow falling in the evening, that I was afraid to venture out in it.

**Wednesday, 4th.—**

Clear and cold. Ground covered with snow—looks very picturesque and beautiful. Sent a polite note to Miss Clara Campbell acknowledging and regretting my not being able to accept her invitation in behalf of her sister. Nothing new to-day.

**Thursday, 5th.—**

Clear and cold; snow still covering the ground. No news to-day. On duty as officer of the day. Received a letter from Mother dated 15th, ultimo, saying that Pa. and Uncle Fred. had joined a cavalry company of Reserves, and that the company had been ordered out by the Governor in anticipation of a Yankee raid on Mobile and Pollard, Alabama. All were well at home.

**Friday, 6th.—**

Cold and rainy all day. Went to Richmond in the morning and returned in the evening. Called at Judge Campbell's; saw Mrs. Lay and Miss Clara Campbell; enjoyed my visit very much. Bought a gallon of Sorghum Molasses at a wholesale grocer's for our mess, and paid \$40<sub>n</sub> for it.

**Saturday, 7th.—**

Clear and Cold in the morning; cloudy and cold in the evening, rained some. When Gen. Wood's Army was last heard from it was at Corinth, Mississippi. He telegraphs that he has suffered no material loss since the battle before Nashville.

**Sunday, 8th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. On duty as officer of the day, and officers at the wharf, Lieutenant Butt of the Navy visited us to-day and dined with us. Did not go to church; but read my bible in my quarters.

**Monday, 9th.—**

Clear and pleasant. Nothing new; Gen. Hood's official report of the battle of Nashville has been received saying that he lost 50 pieces of Artillery and one Maj. Gen. Ed. Johnson and two Brigadier Generals captured; that his loss in killed and wounded was not heavy; and that the number of prisoners was unknown. Re-

ceived a long letter from Pa. and one from Uncle Ed. Crenshaw. Answered Pa's letter at once.

1865 January,

**Tuesday, 10th.—**

Cloudy, and rained all day; quite warm for this climate. No news to-day. Every thing looks gloomy, and every one seems to be low-spirited. The "Richmond Examiner" continues to be very severe on the President, and blames him for our disasters—very unjustly I think.

**Thursday, 12th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Went to Richmond to-day and returned in the evening. Colonel Terrett Commanding Post at Drewry's Bluff returned in company with me; he had been absent for the last two or three weeks on leave.

**Friday, 13th.—**

Clear and cold. A considerable freshet in the James River for the last two or three days; it has been very high. All of our wharves at Drewry's Bluff are under the water. Francis P. Blair Sr. has arrived in Richmond—it is reported that he comes on a Peace mission. On duty as Officer of the Day and at the wharf. Received a letter from Uncle Tom Crenshaw. All well at home. Very poor crops were made last year at home.

**Saturday, 14th.—**

Clear and warm. No news to-day. Remained in camp all day, superintending the making of a trunk for my books and papers. No news from my old regiment. Saw by the papers that my old friend and commander, Col. Murphy of the 17th Ala. was missing at the Battle of Franklin. I hope that he was not killed; but captured; he was always very kind to me.

**Sunday, 15th.—**

Clear and pleasant; no news to-day. Remained in camp all day.

"We live in deeds, not years; in thoughts, not breaths;  
In feelings, not in figures on a dial.  
We should count time by heart-throbs. He most lives  
Who thinks most, feels the noblest, acts the best."

"The busy world shoves angrily aside  
 The man who stands with arms a-kimbo set,  
 Until occasion tells him what to do;  
 And he who waits to have his task marked out,  
 Shall die and leave his errand unfulfilled."

"I envy no quality of mind or intellect in others—not of genius, power, wit, or fancy; but if I could choose what would be most delightful, and, I believe, most useful, to me, I should prefer a firm religious belief, to every other blessing, for it makes life a discipline of goodness, creates new hope, when earthly hopes vanish, and throws over the decay, the destruction, of existence, the most gorgeous of all light; awakens life, even in death, and, from decay, calls up beauty and divinity; makes an instrument of torture and shame the ladder of ascent to Paradise, and, far above all combination of earthly hopes, calls up the most delightful visions—palms and amaranths, the gardens of the blessed, the security of everlasting joys, where the sensualist and the skeptic view only gloom, decay, and annihilation." Sir Hamphrey Davy.

"Be careful of whom you speak, and how, and when, and where."

"Then none was for a party;  
 Then all were for the state;  
 Then the great man helped the poor,  
 And the poor man loved the great;  
 Then lands were fairly portioned;  
 Then spoils were fairly sold;  
 The Romans were like brothers,  
 In the brave days of old."

#### **Monday, 16th.—**

Clear and pleasant. Remained in camp all day. The Yankees captured Fort Fisher and most of its garrison last night; having bombarded it furiously all day with their fleet, they made an assault upon it in the evening with their infantry, which had landed five miles from the fort, and were repulsed, but at 10 o'clock at night they succeeded in taking it. No particulars given. Many peace rumors afloat in Richmond. Nothing new from Gen. Hood's army except the Yankee report that they are going into winter quarters at Corinth, Miss.



**Tuesday, 17th.—**

Clear and pleasant. No news from any part of the Confederacy today. On duty to day.

**Wednesday, 18th.—**

Clear and pleasant. Nothing new to-day. On duty to-day.

1865. January,

**Thursday, 19th.—**

Clear and cold. Went to Richmond to-day, and returned in the evening. Heard a great many peace rumours, arising from the presence in Richmond during the last few days of Mr. Francis P. Blair, Sr. and Gen. Singleton of Illinois, reputed peace commissioners; but the Northern papers say unauthorized to treat for peace.

**Friday, 20th.—**

Unpleasant weather. No news from any point.

**Saturday, 21st.—**

Unpleasant weather; wet and disagreeable. No news to-day. On duty.

**Sunday, 22d.—**

Clear and cold. It is reported that our iron-clad fleet are to go down the river to-night or tomorrow night.

**Monday, 23rd.—**

Clear and cold; nothing new to-day. Remained in camp all day.

**Tuesday, 24th.—**

Clear and cold. On duty as Officer of the day. Our iron-clad fleet went down the river last night, and passed Signal Hill without any damage. They have been fighting heavily all day at the Yankee obstructions below Howlet's Battery. The small wooden gunboat Drewry was brown up. No further news, except the report that only one of our iron-clads can get through the Yankee obstructions.

1865. January.

**Wednesday, 25th.—**

Clear and cold. Our fleet came back to their old anchorage last night, without having accomplished any thing. They were

very roughly handled, and had a good many officers and men killed and wounded. Received a letter from Mother yesterday. Mr. Blair is in Richmond again. Yesterday our batteries on the North Side opened on Fort Harrison and kept up a brisk fire for a short time.

**Thursday, 26th.—**

Clear and cold. Went to Richmond to-day and returned in the evening. Mr. F. P. Blair, Sr. went North yesterday. There are many rumours with regard to the proposition that he made to President Davis; but as he does not appear to have had any authority to treat for peace, I shall not take the trouble to mention any of them. Wrote to Mother. Mailed several Richmond papers to Pa.

**Friday, 27th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Remained in camp all day. Did nothing besides reading the papers, and visiting my brother officers.

**Saturday, 28th.—**

Clear and very cold. No news to-day. On duty as officer of the day.

**Sunday, 29th.—**

Clear and very cold. Hon. A. H. Stephens, Hon. R. M. T. Hunter, and Hon. Jno. A. Campbell, Peace Commissioners left Richmond for Washington to-day. They will go through our lines at Petersburg.

1865. January, .

**Monday, 30th.—**

Clear and very cold. No news to-day; but many wild rumours about peace. Gold has been worth nearly one hundred for one, and is now worth over 40 for one. The river has been frozen over for the last two or three days and consequently the boats cannot run between this place and Richmond.

**Tuesday, 31st.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Went to Richmond today and returned in the evening. On account of the river being frozen over the boats could not run and I had to walk going and coming. February,

**Wednesday, 1st.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Went to Richmond to-day and returned in the evening. Received a letter from Mother to-day.

**Thursday, 2d.—**

Clear and cold. Nothing new. Mr. Shippey, master C.S.N., and an old friend of mine staid with me this evening and to-night. He is ordered on a secret expedition with Lieut. Reed, C.S.N. and Lieut. Thurston, C.S.M.C. and 100 sailors and marines. On duty as officer of the day.

**Friday, 3rd.—**

Clear and cold. Nothing new. Lieut. Reed and his party left at daylight. They intend to go around the left flank of Grant's army.

**Saturday, 4th.—**

Clear and cold. Nothing new. On duty as officer of the day.

**Sunday, 5th.—**

Clear and cold. Our peace commissioners have returned. They went as far as Fortress Monroe, where they were met by President Lincoln and Secretary Seward, with whom they had a long interview. The result was unfavourable to us as was expected. President Lincoln refused to treat with the Confederate States while in arms. He requires us to lay down our arms and submit before he will make any terms with us. And before we do this I hope that we will fight until the last man, woman, and child in the South is slain. Better death than dishonor.

**Monday, 6th.—**

Clear and pleasant. No news to-day. Remained in camp all day. Went to church yesterday.

**Tuesday, 7th.—**

Clear and cold. Snowed last night. On duty as officer of the day and at the wharf. There was some heavy fighting on Gen. Lee's extreme right yesterday. Two divisions of Gordon's Corps and one of A. P. Hill's were engaged. Gen. Pegram was killed and Gen. Sorrel was wounded. Our troops drove the enemy into their entrenchments.

**Wednesday, 8th.—**

Clear and cold. Snow covering the ground. No news to-day.

**Thursday, 9th.—**

Clear and very cold. Went to Richmond to the Grand Mass Meeting of the people of Richmond, called for to express their feelings at the insult offered to the Confederate States by President Lincoln, in his ultimatum to our Commissioners in Hampton Rhodes a few days ago, which ultimatum was, "Submission or Subjugation."

There was an immense crowd present. Hon. R. M. T. Hunter, Hon. Hugh Sheffey, Hon. J. P. Benjamin, and other prominent gentlemen addressed the meeting. I was particularly struck with Mr. Benjamin's manner and voice. He is a beautiful speaker. He advised that negroes be made soldiers, and that the Government take possession of all the resources in the Confederacy and use them to gain our independence. It being late I left just before the close of his speech.

**Friday, 10th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Remained in camp all day. Finished reading last night a book written by Rev. Charles Kingsley, called "Two Years Ago." An abolition tale in which miscegenation with the black race is openly advocated.

**Saturday, 11th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day.

1865. February,

**Sunday, 12th.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Received orders to report to-morrow, to Flag Officer Mitchell of the James' River Squadron to relieve 1st Lieut. Gwyn, in command of the Marine Guard attached to the C.S. Iron-Clay Steamer Virginia.

**Monday, 13.—**

Clear and cold. No news to-day. Reported for duty—to relieve Lieut. Gwyn—to Flag Officer Mitchell, in the evening. Was ordered to report to Lieut. Comm'd'g Dunnington of the Iron-clad Virginia. Do not like life on an iron-clad. There is not air nor ventilation, nor light enough.

**Tuesday, 14th.—**

Clear and cold. The river has been frozen over again for the last two or three days. Visited my friends at Drewry's Bluff to-day, and returned to the ship in the evening.

**Wednesday, 15th.—**

Clear and cold. Nothing new to-day. Went on picket last night, with one midshipman, four seamen, and two marines, on the South bank of the river below "Signal Hill". Nothing unusual occurred during my tour of duty. Returned to the ship at daylight. The exchange of prisoners has been renewed again. Several boat loads our men and Yankees have passed the squadron going up and down the river to-day.

**Thursday, 16th.—**

Clear and cold. We heard to-day that Armiral Semmes is to relieve Flag Officer Mitchell in command of this Squadron.

1865. February,

**Friday, 17th.—**

Cloudy and rainy. Visited my friends at Drewry's Bluff to-day. Captain Meire, who is stationed at Mobile, and is one of the best officers in our corps, was there to-day on a visit. Returned to the ship in the evening. Received an order saying that my guard would be relieved and that Capt. Simms would furnish me with a new guard from Drewry's Bluff. No news to-day.

**Saturday, 18th.—**

Clear and cold. It is reported to-day that Columbia has been evacuated by our troops. Went on picket on the South bank of the river last night. It rained on me, and as I had no shelter, I had a very disagreeable time. Left my post at day light and reached the ship about 7 A.M. One of our 'flag of truce' steamers, while coming up the river yesterday, was blown up and totally destroyed by one of our own torpedoes, (it is supposed), a few miles below here, and four lives were lost. Received my new guard on board to-day, and sent away the old one under charge of 2nd Lt. Pearson, who brought down the new guard. Rear Admiral Semmes relieved Flag Officer Mitchell in command of this squadron. He was received with all the customary honors, the marines presenting arms, &c. My guard also presented arms to Flag Officer Mitchell when he left the ship. I now have 2 non-commissioned officers, 2 musicians, and 12 privates in my guard.

**Sunday, 19th.—**

Clear and cold. Bad news from South Carolina: Columbia has been evacuated by our troops and taken my Sherman. Clear and cold. Went to Drewry's Bluff to-day with Dr. Goldsborough. I have not heard from home in a long time, and now that all communication is cut, I do not know when I shall hear again. Gen. Johnston's report of the operations of the "Army of Tennessee" from the evacuation of Dalton up to the time that he was relieved has been published. It appears from it that he was very unjustly treated by the President in being relieved when he was about to reap the fruits of his strategy; but President Davis said, when he sent the report to the Senate, that it would be unjust to publish it without the accompanying correspondence. It would be very unjust to blame President Davis without knowing all the facts of the case.

**Monday, 20th.—**

Clear and pleasant. A beautiful day. No news to-day.

**Tuesday, 21st.—**

Cloudy and cold. Went on picket last night. No news to-day.

**Wednesday, 22nd.—**

Clear and pleasant. Went to Richmond to-day. No news to-day.

**Thursday, 23rd.—**

Clear and cold. Staid in Richmond last night with Cadet Hallam of the Regular Army. Saw at the Spotswoods Hotel, yesterday evening, Alfred Scott, just returned from a Yankee prison as a paroled prisoner. He is a Virginian by birth but has a plantation close to my Father's in Butler County and married a Miss Taylor in Greenville, and was living there at the commencement of the War, when he joined the 9th Ala. Reg't. He was captured at Hatcher's Run a few weeks ago. I went with him last night to his uncle's Mr. T. Daniels'; spent a very pleasant evening. Returned to the ship this morning. No news to-day.

**Friday, 24th.—**

Cloudy and rainy. The river is high and still rising. No news to-day. Went on picket last night.

**Saturday, 25th.—**

Cloudy and rainy. River still rising. No news to-day.

**Sunday, 26th.—**

Clear and beautiful. River very high but beginning to fall. No reliable news to-day but many rumors—some of them very unpleasant ones to us. Visited my friends Lt. Barboult & Dr. Goldsboro of the Navy and 2nd Lt. Eggleston of the Marines on board the C.S. ironclad "Fredericksburg."

1865. February,

**Monday, 27th.—**

Cloudy and rainy. No news of importance. Gen. Johnston has been restored to command again, and put in command of Gen. Beauregard's army, it is reported at his (Beauregard's) own request.

**Tuesday, 28th.—**

Cloudy and rainy during the day. Clear and beautiful during the night. No news to-day. Many unreliable rumors afloat. Lieutenant Trigg returned to the Ship to-day from an expedition, having been absent for some weeks. Received a letter yesterday from Cousin Charlotte Cherry. I was truly glad to hear from her. She wrote me a very kind letter.

**Wednesday, March 1st.—**

Cloudy and rainy. No news to-day. Sick with fever to-day; took sick last night.

**Thursday, 2'd.—**

Cloudy and rainy. No news to-day. Feel better to-day, but still sick. Our paroled prisoners are returning in great numbers now. Two or three thousand pass up the river every day or two.

**Friday, 3rd.**

Cloudy and rainy. I am much better to-day. No news to-day. Mr. Mayo, Master C.S.N. whose acquaintance I formed while on the "Tallahassee" at Wilmington came on board with several other Naval Officers to-day and took dinner with us. I like Mayo very much, he is a very handsome young man.

1865. March,

**Saturday, 4th.—**

The weather begins to show signs of clearing off. I am well again, and feel very thankful that I have escaped so lightly. Went to the "Bluff" this evening to remain all night. No news to-day.

**Sunday, 5th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news to-day. Returned to the ship at 1 P. M. Lieutenants Bradford, Doak, and Roberts, of the Marine Corps have been paroled and returned from prison. Lieutenant Thomson has returned from leave. It is reported that Gen. Early has been defeated, and captured.

**Monday, 6th.—**

Clear and beautiful. The river is very high, and has been so for several days. No news to-day. Went to Richmond in the evening.

**Tuesday, 7th.—**

Clear and beautiful. Saw Capt. Benthuyssen and Lieutenant Murdoch of Marine Corps., last night. They were captured at Fort Fisher and have just returned from prison. I saw Lieutenant Bradford and Doak to-day; and also Lieutenant Roberts, all Marine officers, who were captured at Fort Fisher. Most of them were wounded. Visited at Judge Campbell's to-day. Received a letter from Aunt Laura Elmore to-day, dated Jan. 23rd. Returned to ship this evening. Marshal Kane and a party of ladies were on board this evening.

1865. March.

**Wednesday, 8th.—**

No news to-day. Remained on board all day. The river is still very high.

**Thursday, 9th.—**

Gen. Bragg whipped the enemy at Kinston, North Carolina, capturing 1500 prisoners, and killing and wounding many, this good news reached us to-day. The tide of war has at last commenced to turn in our favour. Remained on board all day.

**Friday, 10th.—**

This day has been set apart by the President for fasting and prayer. Remained all day, on board; but I am sorry to say that we did not fast and pray on our ship.

**Saturday, 11th.—**

Clear and beautiful. Last night, while one of the boats of this ship was doing picket duty in charge of a Passed Midshipman and a Midshipman, twelve of the crew (all but one) mutinied, disarmed the officers, and took possession of the boat, and landed on



the North Side in the Enemy's line, and deserted from the boat with their arms and accoutrements, the two officers and one man barely escaping with the boat, the Yankee pickets having opened fire on them. Two of my Marine Guard, Prv't McGregor and Musician Baines, were in the boat and actively concerned in the mutiny, and deserted to the enemy with their arms and accoutrements. News reached us to-day that Gen. Hampton had surprised and defeated Gen. Kilpatrick.

**Sunday, 12th.—**

Clear and beautiful. Took a walk along the (north Side) lines of our army with Captain Dunnington and a friend of his. The lines are very close to each other and we could see the pickets and sentinels of the enemy very plainly with the naked eye. The pickets of the two armies are in easy musket range of each other. We had a glass with us, and had an excellent view of the Yankee lines and fortifications, particularly of Fort Harrison, which seems to be a very strong fort. We could see negro pickets in front of Fort Harrison. We came back by Gen. Custis Lee's Head-Quarters, and after a few agreeable moments spent there returned to the ship. It is reported to-day that a column of Yankee Raiders is within a few miles of Richmond. Made an official report of the desertion of the two marines on the 10 instant to Col. Beall and Captain Wilson.

**Monday, 13th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news of victory to cheer our anxious hearts to-day. The South is being sorely tried, and if she is not found wanting in the balance, the dark clouds of adversity will soon clear away from her horizon and the bright sun of victory will shine out resplendently cheering the Southern heart with its gladdening rays. Visited my friends at Drewry's Bluff to-day, and returned to the ship in the evening.

**Tuesday, 14th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news to-day. Drilled a company of sailors and marines on shore to-day. Lieutenant Cameron visited us yesterday evening and spent the night with us.

**Wednesday, 15th.—**

Cloudy and pleasant. No news to-day. Drilled the sailors and marines, on the "fantail" in the manual of arms. Two steamers

FALL ISSUE, 1940

loaded with returned prisoners passed our ship to-day. They seemed to be in excellent spirits.

**Thursday, 16th.—**

Cloudy and windy most of the day. A party of ladies from Richmond visited our ship to-day and spent the day with us. Three of the ladies were Miss Carltons, and the other a Miss Ratcliff. Privates Payne and Parrish of my guard who deserted while on liberty at Drewry's Bluff, on the 11th instant, were returned under arrest to-day. They were arrested in Henrico County, some distance from Richmond. A very important and earnest message was sent by our President to Congress a few days ago, eloquently urging more prompt and decided action in raising men and supplies for the Army, and recommending the repeal of the "Writ of Habeas Corpus." The message is rather severe on Congress, and is quite distasteful to some of the members. Mr. Boccock, Speaker of the House told Surgeon Carrington of our ship that "it was the most outrageous document ever sent to a Congress."

1865. March.

**Friday, 17th.—**

Clear and beautiful. Remained on ship all day. No news of importance.

**Saturday, 18th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news of importance. Wrote to Col. Bush Jones to-day. A party of very pretty ladies visited on ship from Richmond to-day. They dined on board the Richmond and returned to the city in the evening.

**Sunday, 19th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news to-day. Made a short visit to Drewry's Bluff in the morning. Lieutenants Benton and Gregory of the Navy dined with us to-day. I sailed with Lieutenant Benton on the "Tallahassee."

**Monday, 20th.—**

Clear and beautiful. Dispatch from Gen. Johnston, announcing that he had routed Gen. Sherman at Bentonville (20 miles South East of Raleigh.) capturing three guns. Drilled sailors and marines on shore this morning.

**Tuesday, 21st.—**

Clear in the morning and clody in the evening. Congress ad-

journed last Saturday. H. S. Foot of Tenn. who deserted the Confederacy is now in London. Rained this evening. No letters from "home" in a long time. Am now reading "Catholic Christian Instructed", "Rienzi Last of Tribunes", and "Spectator".

**Wednesday, 22d.**

Clear and very windy. No news to-day.

**Thursday, 23rd.—**

Clear and very windy.

**Friday, 24th.—**

Clear and windy. Went to Drewry's Bluff to-day.

**Saturday, 25th.—**

Cloudy and cool. Heavy fighting on Hatcher's Run today. Mr. Connelly, a member of the English Parliament on a visit to this country, visited Admiral Semmes to-day. He said that it was his honest opinion "that, if the South gained a decided success within the next two months England and France would recognize her independence." He seems to sympathize deeply with us.

**Sunday, 26th.—**

Clear and cool. We captured several hundred prisoners at Hatcher's Run yesterday. Remained on board ship all day, Lieutenant Karn, a one armed naval officer and passed midshipman Hamilton, from Drewry's Bluff, took dinner with us to-day.

**Monday, 27th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news to-day. A large party of young ladies from Richmond visited the Squadron and spent the day. They dined on the "Virginia and "Richmond." We all took a walk along our lines on the North Side in front of Fort Harrison. There were several very pretty and interesting ladies in the party. Among them the most beautiful were: Miss Morris, Miss Fontaine, Miss Liles, Miss Thomas, Miss Munford, Miss Price, Miss Palmer and the three Misses Carlton, and Miss Wortham.

**Tuesday, 28th.—**

Clear and beautiful. No news to-day. Went down the river along our lines and batteries on the South Side to Battery Garnett with Capt. Dunnington. Dined with Capt. Bradford at Battery Brooke. Returned to the ship at 8 P. M.

**Wednesday, 29th.—**

Clear and pleasant, Cloudy in the afternoon. No news to-day. Drilled ship's company in Infantry drill on shore to-day. Troubled with a slight sore throat for the last two or three days.

**Thursday, 30th.—**

Clear and pleasant. No news to-day. Remained on board ship all day, making out my quarterly returns.

## POEMS

(The following poems were written by Alabama authors. "The Low Country", by Mary B. Ward, won first prize in the Elberta Clark Walker Memorial Contest for a nature poem written in 1937. Four hundred other poems from forty-five states and five foreign countries were in the contest which had been continued over a period of ten years. "In Peace and Loveliness", by Mrs. Anne Southerne Tardy was awarded a prize in a national poetry center contest. "All Summer Long" by Kathleen Sutton, appeared first in "*Columbia*", published at New Haven, Conn. "Singing and Decoration" by Nan Connell Richardson, was first printed in the Birmingham News. "Counsel With a Wounded Heart", by Louise Crenshaw Ray, a sonnet, has been published and republished several times in American magazines, including *North American Review*, and in the author's own volume of poems entitled "Secret Shoes".)

**The Low Country**

Like placid earth my quiet thoughts contain  
 Bits of old bloom and odors clear and sweet,  
 That ploughing brings to light and in my brain  
 Each Spring come little voices to entreat:  
     "Speak of the cypresses that dream  
     Above a lazy, crawling stream;  
     Speak from your heart, let all men see  
     Glory like immortality  
     In a blossom-clad magnolia tree."  
 I think of gleaming, bright-winged bugs that fly  
 Through groves where trees are gray-draped silences;  
 And of great dragonflies whose colors vie  
 The rainbow, and my heart says, "Tell of these . .  
     "And tell of cabins small and low,  
     Where honeysuckle likes to grow;  
     Tell of the water hyacinths too,  
     Of pink and white and lupin-blue  
     That covers up a black bayou."  
 And now it seems I smell the low, moist air  
 Caressing, quivering through every breeze  
 Of awesome twilight rolling in from where  
 Swamp noises come with ghostly harmonies.  
     "Tell," cry my voices, "of the whole  
     Landscape that beckons to the soul,  
     When unreal moonlight brings increase  
     Of beauty till the heart must cease,  
     Or find a song to bring release."

Then comes a song to me wistful with tears,  
 A low song floating through the cotton land,  
 Surviving like the oaks of hoary years,  
 A song that hurts me like a reprimand:

    "Ah wants to go home, oh Lawd, oh Lawd,  
         Ah wants to go home, go home;  
     Mah heart am troubled, oh Lawd, oh Lawd,  
         Ah wants to go home, go home,  
         Ah wants to go home.

Mary B. Ward.

\* \* \* \* \*

### In Peace and Loveliness

We have the world in one small garden close,  
 Where nations dwell in peace.

Tulips from Holland, China hollyhocks,  
 And asters, in their gaudy colored frocks  
 Flourish in gracious amity,  
 Therein a life-time lease.

Old England dwells within the primrose hedge  
 That goldly seeks the gate,  
 The queenly rose, with radiant bloom unfurled,  
 Brings messages from halfway round the world,  
 With no intent to arbitrate.

Brave gardens of Scotch heather, fern and yew,  
 For those of careful, sober mind,  
 Passionate pansies lift imploring heads,  
 Japan her iris-purpled fragrance spreads.  
 For he whose fate has proved unkind,  
 Grows weeping bride and fever-few.

Sun-splashed marigolds from glamorous France  
 Gild all the darkening days,  
 Bermuda lilies, with sweet-scented breath  
 Chant paeans of bright victory to death.  
 Lilacs from Persia tread a wild wind-dance,  
 And African gladiolas crowd the ways.

We have the world in one small garden close,  
 To bring us beauty and to calm and bless,  
 Ah, that all nations so might find repose,  
 And peace, and loveliness!

Anne Southerne Tardy.

**Painted Rock at Sunrise**

(Guntersville, Ala.)

Out of the dawn the punctual morning sun,  
 A golden rose on a bush of tinted cloud,  
 Reflects its flaming, crimson glow with proud  
 Indifference to another day begun.  
 The eastern sky shows deepening red, and sends  
 A fiery rocket through the cloud which ends  
 A misty mantling on the dark waves spun—  
 A sparkling burst of rubies on the river  
 With pyrotechnic brilliancy a-quiver.  
 At last the full-blown beauty of Dawn's rose,  
 No brighter than the rock on which it glows.  
 Wild forests fare down to the painted ledge,  
 And friendly hills are folded close about:  
 The brooding presence of old memories,  
 The music of the unforgotten years  
 Is wafted on the river, in and out.  
 The breezes whisper songs of joy and tears  
 Among the harp-strings of the aging trees,  
 Songs of impassioned loves and hopes long gone,  
 Burn with a rekindled flame by painted rock  
 In bright renaissance of an April dawn.

Anne Southerne Tardy.

\* \* \* \* \*

**All Summer Long**

All summer long the lovely things will grow:  
 Roses and larkspur and wild eglantine,  
 While safely hidden in the leafy vine  
 The thrush has nested. Bees rove to and fro;  
 Grasses and moss cushion adventurous feet  
 Discovering paths of earthy fragrance. Now  
 Beauty has pledged our faith once more, the bough  
 Is bent with promised fruit, and life is sweet.  
 Then Lord be thanked for happy, singing days  
 When hearts grow full with love and yield to laughter;  
 And Lord be thanked for misty dawns when rafter  
 And hearth are more than beauty, and the ways  
 Of peace so clear, inevitable and true,  
 The mind forgets the evils men can do.

Kathleen Sutton.

### Singing And Decoration

They sang of gates that stood open, of the stillness of the midnight, and of that blessed time when there will be no shadows—and looking out at the quiet graveyard, the world seemed suddenly distant and unimportant as peace spread her wings across the little country meetinghouse.

The women came to the organ one by one, singing singly or in groups, and their expressions were the same, as if they saw only the very distant.

A tiny girl in a crocheted dress amused herself by swinging on a scarred old bench, and an adventurous boy leaned far out an open window and helped himself to green peaches from an anemic tree that leaned weakly against the church.

Old men in brand-new overalls stood about the doorways, while serious-eyed young bucks looked on from the back of the house or came and went at will.

One looked vainly for the old time country girl, the kind we used to think of as being "tacky", but the mail order catalog and the local bus has made her type extinct.

Work-worn women with great knots of hair refreshed fat, kicking babies at sagging breasts.

A man rose from the midst of the assembly that filled the altar space and announced that he was saved just one year ago in this very church, at this very altar. The women sang again and a look of happiness erased their look of distance.

The unlettered, local preacher, a man of presence and fine dignity spoke of what "eye hath not seen nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him." Old women with dim eyes and scrawny hands that rested tiredly on black swiss laps smiled and gazed out of the open windows where shadows lay aslant the fragrant, flower-decked graves, as a little breeze ruffled the crepe paper blossomy wreaths which leaned against the headstones, or rested above some long still heart. Then was a voice heard—uncultured, but rich and deep—"The grace of our Savior, Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen."

Nan Connell Richardson.



**Counsel With a Wounded Heart**

What if the gold was heavy with alloy?  
You found it precious for awhile, its giving  
Seemed lordly in your eyes; it brought you joy  
And glorified the ritual of living.  
What if illusion was a panderer  
Who rendered you impervious to reason?  
For such a darkness, think no ill of her  
Or call her artifice a name like treason.

O wounded heart, be grateful that you had  
A single coin to spend, a single hour  
When earth and heaven combined to make you mad,  
A god, no miracle beyond your power!  
By reckoning your treasure you will find  
Fate has been liberal and wisdom, blind.

Louise Crenshaw Ray.

\* \* \* \* \*

**Golden Dross**

I shall not mind again the dull  
Gray days that come between  
The winter's prismic glory  
And spring's exquisite green;  
For you, my dear, have scattered gold  
Upon the bleakest hill;  
The earth your small, pale hands caressed,  
Now yields a daffodil:  
A fragile cup of topaz dew  
Held to my lips with thoughts of you.

Lucille Key Thompson.

**Lament For a Cardinal**

He never knew the joy of spring—  
This creature of untimely doom;  
He'd never had a chance to sing  
Of nature bursting into bloom.

He only saw the winter showers;  
He never knew the joy of spring,  
For he was child of autumn's flowers  
And earth had ceased her burgeoning.

How speedily his brilliant wing  
Had flashed beneath inclement skies;  
He never knew the joy of spring  
And all the beauty it implies.

Now he is gone—his song unspent—  
The message he had planned to bring;  
My heart cries out in deep lament—  
He never knew the joy of spring.

Louise Leyden.

\* \* \* \* \*

**Cheaha Mountain**

Upon this wild and craggy height,  
Symbol of eternal power,  
Courageous pine and laurel strive  
Dauntlessly to come to flower.

Man has built a winding pathway  
Which was very deftly laid,  
And on the crest of Cheaha  
A citadel was wisely made.

Here one may pluck a dazzling star  
Or catch the moon at pleasure,  
Gathering from the low-swung sky  
A jewel for his treasure.

Louise Leyden.

**April**

April is a soft, new rug,  
Knit by unseen hands;  
Spreading itself upon the ground  
And covering threadbare lands.

April is a necklace, too,  
Sapphires linked with jade,  
Circling Earth's exquisite throat—  
A bond by wisdom made.

April is a little child  
Wearing a wholesome guise;  
She looks upon a bright, green world  
And smiles through tear-filled eyes.

Louise Leyden.

## BOOK REVIEWS

*Foundation Stone* by Lella Warren. Alfred A. Knopp. \$3.00.

Lella Warren's *Foundation Stone* is not only a novel of peculiar interest for Alabamians, but a novel of peculiar interest in the history of Southern literature. Laid near Clayton, a locale with which Miss Warren's family has been familiar for several generations, it deals with the history of Alabama from the days of the frontier through the tragic era of Reconstruction. These pioneer days of Alabama have been long forsaken by the novelist for the more glamorous times of those whom Miss Warren calls "The Cotton Snobs". In fact, Baldwin's *Flush Times in Alabama* and Longstreet's *Georgia Scenes* are perhaps the only well known books of fiction to deal with the roaring decades in the South before the birth of the cotton millionaires; and no Southern writer of fiction has heretofore seriously considered the rich material that William Gilmore Simms introduced—the struggles of the early settlers with the Southern Indians. When Miss Warren presents such scenes as the Indian Chokho's screeching refusal to pass the turnip greens to Indian-cheating Guy, or the collapse of Miss Gracey's ball through the preference of the male guests to return to a wolf hunt, or Alabama's hysterical reception of her baptism of stars, she recalls the grotesque vigor of Baldwin's classic and makes one hope that other writers of fiction will follow her lead in working this rich mine of early Alabama history.

Written from point of view of Yarbrough Whetstone and his wife Gerda, the novel actually concerns itself with the loves and hates of four generations. Its structure is apparent in the headings of the seven books: "The Home Place," "Pioneering," "The Land Yields," "The Cotton Snobs," "Cotton Militant," "The Land Scarred, Rock Wall."

At the death of William Whetstone, his son Yarbrough becomes head of the family. He and his wife Gerda make the decision of leaving their exhausted South Carolina plantation for the new lands in Alabama, that El Dorado of the cotton planter. Black and white, young and old, they travel together. Members of the Whetstone family become pioneers, clearing forests, living in log houses, building their own school, and eating the simplest of food. They build well, led by Yarbrough with his impetuosity and daring and Gerda with her Dutch calm and vitality. Under

the elemental conditions of the new country some of the numerous family degenerate, naturally enough. Miss Gracey, the erstwhile South Carolina belle, dwindles into a beautiful and neurotic angel, beating her wings in the insensate waste. One of Yarbrough's own sons, flown with insolence and power, develops into a monstrous sadist. But others, freed from standards of civilization, attain their full stature. Yarbrough and Gerda do. Yarbrough's brother-in-law Guy, loosed from the etiquette which has made him a gentlemanly carbon copy back in South Carolina, becomes one of the outstanding citizens of the new State—in spite of his Indian wife and unusual trading practises. But regardless of individual eccentricities the Whetstone family is strong. It remains strong, because it stays together. At the very end of the story, Gerda, in speaking to her daughter Lucinda, compares the family to the Rock Wall, the foundation stone of the Whetstone estate. "It takes five wide solid steps to pass through the thickness of the wall," she says. "They mount solidly, and it holds the land firm around our house. Your father, Yarbrough, built it strongly, to hold back any gully-wash that might threaten the family. To keep it unharmed."

In addition to a well knit story and much carefully collected information, *Foundation Stone* has characters that leave an impression. Oddly enough, this seems to be a somewhat unusual accomplishment among contemporary novelists, many of whom have fallen into the quagmire of the stream-of-consciousness method. Miss Warren's method in places is reactionary to the point of being almost Dickensian. She frequently supplements subjective or anecdotal description by attaching a specific mannerism to a specific character. Thus, Chokho with her grinding stones, Emma Will with her fishing pole, Ven with his bottle, Gran with his iconoclasm and his pipe—minor characters like these—stand out as well as the more subtly drawn principals. With one or two exceptions Miss Warren has refrained from portraying the Negroes in detail. They serve as a Greek chorus to give point to comedy or tragedy.

The soundness of structure in *Foundation Stone* makes it remarkable as a first novel. As a fictionalized account of a little known period of Southern history it is a valuable contribution both in its own right and in the possible influence it may have on other writers.

—Emily Sinclair Calcott.

*The Loyalists in North Carolina during the Revolution* by Robert O. DeMond: Duke University Press. \$3.00.

The fighting in the South during the Revolutionary War has always been known as a fratricidal war between neighbors. There were almost as many men drawn from North and South Carolina for the use of the British government as for the Continental (which fact explains, incidentally the use of the regular troops in the South). Except for the inefficiency of the British government and Clinton's antagonism for Cornwallis, the Southern Tories might have been drawn into a formidable army with the army of Lord Cornwallis as a nucleus.

Furthermore it is well known that drastic laws were enacted by the various states against those who had aided and abetted the cause of the British government. But such laws were not supposed to operate against any person (landowner or otherwise) who had not actively used his person or influence for the advantage of the British cause. These laws approximated those passed previously by the English government, particularly those levelled against the Scots after the rebellion of 1745.

With this as a general background, Dr. DeMond draws a detailed foreground in his *The Loyalists in North Carolina during the Revolution*. He has studied intensively records from Canada, England, and Colonial and Revolutionary North Carolina. The book deals with raids, murders, and assassinations of opposing families and settlements, rather than with major engagements or important battles. It shows, moreover, that many injustices were done in the American courts against any one who was outright a Revolutionary and who was forced into court on charges brought by so-called Patriots. Numbers of Tories, deprived of their property by the North Carolina courts and ignored by English courts of claims, lost everything—except, of course, those persons who were fortunate enough to receive land grants made in Canada during the emergency.

The book throws no new light upon history, perhaps, but it does fill in many minute and interesting details. Family names, county feuds, details of destruction of property, of court trials, of confiscations, descriptions of parcels of land—all these minutiae of history appear in profusion and apparently with great accuracy.

The volume is a valuable reference book for those concerned with details of Southern history (it explains, in addition to Revolutionary matters, such things as the reason for the heavily Scottish population of certain parts of Florida) or with those interested in matters pertaining to genealogy.

—Emily Sinclair Calcott.

*Gullah: Negro Life in the Carolina Sea Islands.* By Mason Crum, 351 pp. Durham, N.C. Duke University Press. \$3.50.

Professor Crum has succeeded in writing about a region and a people not only as one who knows and loves them from years of personal acquaintance, but also as a scholar who will not permit sentiment to color facts. Convinced that better relations between the two races of the South rest upon "the solid foundation of knowledge and the appraisal of facts," he has drawn upon the history, geography, economics, music, art, and customs of this little-known section in writing what he terms an introduction to the social history of the Gullah Negroes. Motivated by his concern for human relations and his boyhood desire to pay off a debt to the kindly black folk who helped to rear him, Dr. Crum made this careful study and presented his findings. In so doing he has performed a distinct service to the student of racial problems in general, and to the white and Negro races of the South in particular.

For the benefit of his uninitiated reader the author hastens to explain in the preface of his book that the term Gullah, applied to the Negroes living along the coasts of South Carolina and Georgia, is "almost certainly a corruption of the African Gola, or Gora, names of African tribes living in Liberia, east of the city of Monrovia." Brought as slaves to the rice and cotton plantations of the Carolina low country, these primitive black people passed on remnants of a culture which persists in the speech, music, customs, and beliefs of their descendants today, a social phenomenon made possible by the isolation provided by the geography of the region and by the events of the past century.

In the first four chapters the author introduces the reader to the locale with descriptions that produce a nostalgia for its sequestered waterways and the "gentle peace which has settled over the land." But with persistent regard for facts, he will indulge in looking backward only at the lavender and old lace of these

islands. He also tells without flinching of the mosquito infested holes of water beside newly made concrete highways, of cut over timber lands, of indolent Negro youth with its ever present flea bitten dogs in front of the cross-roads store, and always with understanding of how these things came to be and with sympathy that these things are as they are.

To this reviewer the most fascinating portion of the book is that given to the description of the Gullahs themselves, their unique dialect with its abundance of meaning and extreme economy of words, their charmingly courteous manners, their moving spirituals, and their native beliefs and primitive superstitions. The latter half of the book which deals with the plantation missions, the rice community, the hardships of slavery, and the effects of the War between the States upon this section, is written in a less interesting manner than the first half, but supplies the reader with valuable source materials which are basic to an understanding of the passing of a social and economic order which influenced and was influenced by the Gullah Negroes.

—Claire Kearsse Grauel.

*Body Servant* by Edith Tatum. Banner Press. Emory University, Atlanta. \$1.00.

During the War Between the States many of the more wealthy planters had body servants who followed them to the very field of battle. These slaves had enjoyed the confidence of their masters and were aware of no environment so good. Their lot was above that of the other slaves and they evidently sensed a good fortune which bred loyalty.

In her short story, *Body Servant*, Edith Tatum has presented a sincere portrait of the relations existing between a slave and his master.

Johnny followed his master and the men in gray but he never could understand anything about battles. "Dar sho mus' be sump'n on top er dat yonder hill Mar's Ed'ard an' dem boys wants mighty bad," he said to himself as he watched charge after charge. "An' I reckon dem low-down . . . Yankees don't want 'em ter have it, jes' fer meanness. . . . Whyn't dem Yankees let 'em have



dat top er der hill ef dey wants it?" Johnny had been accustomed to his young master having his own way and resented any act which thwarted Edward's purpose.

The Negro had a sound sense of material values. When he saw a blue-clad figure lying on the ground he stopped and carefully observed the well-shod Yankee feet. "Dat sho is er good pair er shoes. . They'd jest about fit Mars Ed'ard. His shoes ain't nothin' but rags, an' he say dey gwine be some big fightin' tomorrow after dis skirmish." One has every reason to believe that Mars Ed'ard wore those shoes.

Edward was as loyal to the Confederacy as Johnny was to him: After being severely wounded he joined the Marine Corps and went aboard the Privateer *Tallahassee*. His faithful servant could not follow him there but returned home to await his master's coming.

In those awful days of 1865 Edward returned home, ill-clad and penniless. His best friend was the faithful Johnny who gave him good clothes bought with greenbacks taken from the Yankee dead. "Waal, yer see, Mars Ed'ard, I bought dem clos all yo' size. I kinder 'spicioned how it was gwine er be."

—Emmett Kilpatrick.

## GENEALOGICAL DEPARTMENT

### QUERIES

(Space will be given in this Department of the Quarterly for genealogical queries. Any one having information desired please communicate with the inquirer.)

Joseph Jackson, born 1769, died March 31, 1861, married Delilah Cooper, and resided in Greene County, Ala.

Mrs. Virgil Browne, 1-7 West 3rd St., Oklahoma City, Okla.

William Mace Lewis, sometimes referred to as Gen. Mace Lewis, who lived at Moulton, Lawrence County, in 1832, and of the firm of Coopwood, Lewis and Company.

Meriwether L. Lewis, 511 Boscobel St., Nashville, Tenn.

Stephen Mays and first wife, Lucinda Rainey, lived in Greene County. She died about 1840 while he died about 1856. He married second a Miss Williamson, of Greensboro. Stephen Mays had a son L. Lewellyn Mathew Mays, born February 26, 1831, in Edgefield, S.C.; graduated in medicine, Louisville, Ky., married in Brandon, Miss., to Harriet Fore.

Mrs. Mrs. Sallie Strother Hollingsworth, Edgefield, S. C.

Direct descendant of John Inge, a Revolutionary soldier. Any information acceptable.

Mrs. W. O. Caviness, 12 East Berry St., Greencastle, Indiana.

Matilda Catherine Howell (Price), lived in Lauderdale County, August 31, 1827. Who were her parents?

Miss Edwina Miller, 930 East Fortification, Jackson, Miss.

Bennet Howell and wife, Charlotte, moved to near Hamburg, about 1820. Their son, James Howell, married Martha Weaver. He was born December 3, 1823, died March 3, 1871. She was born June 18, 1828, died October 20, 1880. They lived in Selma and after his death, Martha (Weaver) Howell, moved to Macon, Miss. Mrs. Maria Patterson, Airy View, 1339 Arabella St., New Orleans, La.

James Witherington and Mary King, daughter of James and Katherine (Coleman) King, were married January 15, 1828, in Southern Alabama. James Witherington was born September 19, 1805. Any information about the Kings or Witheringtons.

Mrs. Lela Fletcher Kidwell, 1822 West Noble, Guthrie, Oklahoma.

John Rhodes and Mary Ingram had a son, Bryant Rhodes, born May 23, 1794, married 1836, Eliza Avery, born May 15, 1797, died 1841. Their son John Henry Rhodes, born January 27, 1817, died July 24, 1839, married Eliza Willis, born January 16, 1815, and their son James Warner Rhodes was born about 1864, at Cuba, Ala., and died January 1, 1922, at Memphis, Tenn. Any information desirable.

Mrs. Marie S. Browder, 1415 Isabella Ave., Houston, Texas.

Benjamin Franklin Pickens, who settled in Clarke County, about 1820.

Mrs. Cheri Pickens Ulbricht, 1911 Hunter Ave., Mobile, Ala.

Patrick Norris died in S.C. In 1835 his wife, M. Norris died in Alabama. In 1862 they had three children living in Alabama. Patrick Norris had a cousin, John Norris, aged over 80, who married his cousin, Rachel Norris, and they were living in Alabama in 1860.

Mrs. M. C. Orvin, 977 King St., Charleston, S.C.

Henry Wadsworth Hilliard. Any information acceptable.

Mrs. J. W. Lawler, 337 School St., Clarkedale, Miss.

# THE ALABAMA HISTORICAL QUARTERLY

MARIE BANKHEAD OWEN, Editor  
EMMETT KILPATRICK, Co-Editor



Published by the  
STATE DEPARTMENT  
OF  
ARCHIVES AND HISTORY

Price \$2.00 annually; single copies, 50c.

---

VOL. 2

NO. 4

---

WINTER ISSUE  
1940

WETUMPKA PRINTING CO.  
Printers and Publishers  
Wetumpka, Ala.  
1941

	Page
Alas, Poor Yorick—Renwick C. Kennedy .....	405
The Cajans at Home—Laura Frances Murphy .....	416
William Parish Chilton—Chief Justice Lucien D. Gardner .....	428
Journal of James Tait for the year 1813— Edited by Peter A. Brannon .....	431
Canaan Baptist Church, Jefferson County— Bess Stout Lambert .....	441
Martin Marshall Book: Herb Medicine— Edited by Weymouth T. Jordan .....	443
Letter from Jefferson Davis to General Beauregard .....	460
Original Anecdotes about Napoleon Bonaparte .....	463
Diary of Captain Edward Crenshaw, C.S.A. ....	465
Poems—	
March of the Toltecs—Bert Henderson .....	483
Dirge Out of Memory—Shirley Dillon Waite .....	485
Night Gossip—L. Jane Moses .....	485
In Dreamless Sleep—Shirley Dillon Waite .....	486
Unto The Hills—Lucile Key Thompson .....	486
Book Reviews .....	486
Genealogical Department Queries .....	491
Later History of Madison County—Thomas Jones Taylor .....	493

## ALAS, POOR YORICK

*By Renwick C. Kennedy*

(Mr. Kennedy's articles in the Spring and Fall Issues of the Quarterly "The Poets of Fish Creek" and "Alabama Black Belt," attracted such wide spread attention that the editors of the magazine requested further contributions from his pen. "Alas, Poor Yorick", appearing herewith is the result of that request. Mr. Kennedy is pastor of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church in Camden, Alabama, and as stated in the former issues referred to, is contributor to a number of national magazines. These particular articles have to do with "folk ways" and historians of the future will find them of great value.)

In little Southern towns a funeral is an upheaval. It is an occasion. If the deceased were an important citizen his demise causes as much excitement, and pleasure, as a political rally or a revival meeting. It brings the community together in genial public assembly. It stimulates gossip. It stirs up politics. It helps business. It breaks the monotony of village life. It is a public spectacle, vastly entertaining to the citizens. It is a kind of catharsis. And a good deal of whiskey is drunk.

Two generalizations about Southern small-town funerals may be safely made at the outset.

They are usually dull, confused, inartistic performances.

The people enjoy them very much.

This discussion is only concerned with the folk-practices of Southern white people in burying their dead. No doubt the customs in other sections of the nation are as bad, probably worse.

Birth, marriage and death may or may not be the most important events of a human life. A good argument could be made that the three are mere incidentals, and, save in the case of marriage, necessary details. The really important things of a life may have no direct connection with any one of the three.

Still, folk-ways are basically wise and it is significant that every society from the most primitive to the most effete has an established, smoothly-functioning machinery to handle its births, marriages and deaths. In other matters the individual must shift and devise for himself. In these three the state, the church, the law, the professions, the arts, the sciences, the superstitions and

witchcrafts of his community provide astounding rituals to see him through.

In little Southern towns it is as though a death pressed a button to bring into instant motion a complex, community-wide machine. Besides regional peculiarities, which will be noted, there are the usual facilities. There is an undertaker to sell the casket, embalm and dress the body, arrange the service and inter the dead. There is a cemetery association to sell or assign a lot. There are practised grave diggers, as philosophical and callous as those whom Hamlet interrupted. There is the church. Its ministers in any desired numbers are waiting and willing to function. There are friends and relatives and neighbors to mourn, and usually a few enemies to rejoice. There is a medical official to write a death certificate and make a report to the state's department of vital statistics. There are courts and lawyers to dispose of the deceased's estate, if any. There are newspapers to publish an account of the death and the funeral. There are florists to provide flowers. There are little printed booklets containing passages of Scripture and consoling mediations, usually in rhyme, to be handed out. Even though the deceased be a pauper and can have none of the refinements, he nonetheless gets buried in the earth in a coffin.

It is a bootless occupation to worry about one's funeral, for one will get buried. The human race buries its dead, even those whom it first kills. It buries them with elaborate ritual, with eclat and sadistic pleasure. It buries them with strange enjoyment and perverse satisfaction. Usually it buries them with atrocious manners and in enormously bad taste.

A funeral should be a subtle, unobtrusive work of art. It should be simple and dignified. It should afford comfort to the bereaved and perhaps edification to the spectators. Marking the end of a human life, which despite the cattle theory of European dictators is still probably the most important thing in the world, it should above all have dignity. Its tiniest detail should be carefully planned. Its total impact should bring some exaltation to the human spirit, some mood of quietness and peace, some awareness of the unseen and eternal forces, call them what you will. These effects should be found in some measure not only by those who hold the Christian doctrine of another life, but by



all who believe that man is a spirit who can aspire and suffer and sacrifice and love.

Some funerals do produce such thoughts and feelings in those who attend. Some funerals are works of art, created jointly by undertaker and minister.

Others are as good as a circus. When a funeral becomes a circus it gets out of its proper field and cannot be an artistic creation. It is then as ill-conceived as a dignified funeral staged for amusement in a circus side-show.

The death and burial of Jonathan Smith, 73, Presbyterian, property owner, bank director, leading citizen and former mayor of Yaupon, man of some wealth, occurred one Thursday afternoon in that deep-South small town.

By 6:00 P. M. old Jonathan was embalmed and neatly dressed in a black suit, white shirt and black tie, and was lying in state in the living room of the family home.

News of the death spread quickly over the town, and in an incredibly brief time the neighbors began to appear at the door of the Smith residence.

The funeral call is not merely an expression of sympathy, in the South, and probably not elsewhere in the nation. It is correct form. It is a social gesture, and the caller wants full credit for it. He likes at least to be seen by a member of the family, and prefers to speak to one of them. Probably nothing in the world can be done about the neighbors calling, and perhaps nothing should be done. But their tactics do turn the family home into a public place at a very difficult time. The trouble is not that some of the neighbors call, but that all of them call, in packs.

Until midnight they came in a continual stream that reached its peak around 8:00 o'clock. They were greeted at the door by a relative who acted as host, and were showed into the living room where there were chairs. At times there were as many as 25 people in the room.

Each newcomer strode self-consciously in, sidled up to the open casket, gazed thoughtfully for a minute or two at old Jonathan's contented countenance, and then took a chair. One might

remain as long as he wished and few were in a hurry to leave. Probably the average call lasted an hour, though there were some who became engrossed in the conversations going on and remained several hours. One takes time off to visit with his neighbors at the time of a death, in the home of the deceased. It is a rare and happy privilege for which ordinarily one does not have time.

And so the room buzzed with conversation, subdued words about the cotton crop, or the local baseball team, or whispered words about the latest community scandal, and now and then still more softly whispered words about the purple passages of old Jonathan's life, and his general rascality. Occasionally someone forgot himself and laughed aloud. Little groups of men and other little groups of women and a few mixed groups formed. Some of them wandered out into the hall, upon the porch, onto the lawn. Many good stories were told. Business deals were made. Choice items of gossip were exchanged. A bit of flirtation went on. Some whiskey was drunk.

Important visitors were not content with viewing the remains and exchanging gossip for an hour or so in the living room. They demanded to see the family. Until a late hour a stream of these people passed through the long hall to the back bed room where the family, appropriately tearful, lolled about in varying stages of sorrow upon beds and chairs.

To the uninitiated it might seem the height of rudeness that this worrisome procession of visitors should intrude upon the family's sorrow. But it was a time-honored custom. The family expected it, would have felt neglected and hurt without it, and no doubt enjoyed it.

Another Southern custom, this one entirely delightful, appeared at its best at Jonathan's death. Food began to arrive at the Smith home, good food and large quantities of it. There were cakes, some of them baked since Jonathan died, plates of sliced ham and fried chicken, dishes of various salads, desserts and sandwiches. The food came not from a delicatessen but from the generous homes of neighbors.

The idea back of the custom is quite simple and quite reasonable. There has been a death in the home. There are visitors, relatives and others, as well as the family, who must eat.

The household is upset. No one feels like cooking, not even the cook. Therefore kind-hearted neighbors send plates of food. Probably the practise is even more deeply rooted. It is no doubt a survival of the old world custom of funeral feasts.

Along with the food two quart bottles and a half dozen pints of whiskey also showed up. The donors sent them quietly to the back door where a Negro servant received them and placed them in the butler's pantry upon a table with glasses. Male guests and callers were invited back, through the night, for a drink. However the courtesy was used with discretion and was only offered to a few. Unfortunately this gracious funeral custom of the Old South has about become extinct.

During the night six volunteer friends of the family sat up with the corpse. They drank coffee and ate a great deal of the food that had been sent. They smoked and talked and consumed two quarts of whiskey. They had a very good time, and got pretty drunk.

The following morning the stream of callers resumed. Until the hour of the funeral at 2:00 P. M. the Smith home suffered an invasion of the general public. Many came who never under normal circumstances visited the Smiths. Again the important people demanded to see the family and were cheerfully admitted to the back-bedroom. During the morning much more food was received.

The family's minister was present at the death and remained all of Thursday afternoon. Before he left he discussed with the widow and the children their wishes about the funeral.

They wanted it to be held at the church, for Jonathan had been a devout Presbyterian. Too, he had lived in the community a long time and had many friends. More people could hear the service at the church than at the home. The widow wanted the Baptist minister to assist for she had formerly, fifty years ago, been a Baptist. The eldest son played golf with the Episcopalian rector and asked that he have a part in the service. That left only the Methodist minister, and the family felt that he might be offended if left out. After all, they had many friends in the Methodist Church. And so it was every minister in town was drawn into the service.

At 1:40 on Friday afternoon the funeral procession left the home for the church, the four ministers leading in one automobile, the pall bearers following, then the hearse, the family and finally the spectators.

There was some confusion at the church, not much that you could put your finger upon but just a general aimlessness due solely to unplanned procedure. The undertaker had left all details to the exigencies and inspiration of the moment, holding the theory that nature will take its course even in a funeral ritual. Consequently no detail was smoothly executed, but proceeded by nods and whispers and awkward pauses.

There were only four flagrant gaucheries. Solemn faced, self-important women, recruited from the waiting audience in the church, tripped up and down the church aisles carrying wreaths of flowers from the door to the pulpit rostrum, making a great commotion, and enjoying themselves immensely.

Seats had not been reserved for the pallbearers at the front.

The pulpit had been so densely banked with flowers by the eager women that some wreaths had to be removed before the ministers could enter.

There were only three chairs in the pulpit for the four ministers.

The undertaker and his assistant worked out each of these problems as it arose.

The mechanical details at last forced into place, the ministers proceeded with the service. Their effort was not by any excess of charitable judgment an unobtrusive work of art. Rather it was a hodgepodge of Scripture readings, prayers, songs and personal remarks. With four ministers participating unity of theme and mood became impossible. For the Presbyterian minister, who presided, the service had become a tricky juggling act, a matter of parcelling out the parts among the three assisting brethren, the imponderables with which he dealt being the prestige and feelings of each, the relationships of each of the family, and the relative importance of the congregations each represented. The same problem faced him with the committal rites at the grave. On his part at least there was very careful planning.

One might feel that the burial of old Jonathan was barbaric. Perhaps it was,—such a tremendous activity over the quite simple matter of interring a dead body. One might think the total rigamarole a harrowing ordeal for the family. But not so. Beyond the distress of their natural sorrow, they found nothing untoward about the funeral. They later spoke of the sweet and beautiful church service, referring to the unspeakably bad four minister medley of comfort and exhortation.

The burial of Jonathan Smith occurs every day in little towns over the South. In the larger towns and cities practises are somewhat better. There are fewer gaping, sympathizing, busy-body neighbors who, with the kindest of intentions, intrude. It is not necessary to invite an entire squad of ministers to participate. Personal remarks about the deceased are usually omitted. Yet, while the funeral etiquette of the cities is an improvement, city funerals are seldom subtle, unobtrusive works of art, and they are certainly much less enjoyable occasions. They are usually depersonalized, stream-lined rituals, designed for speed and cold-blooded efficiency. Their single purpose is simply to inter the dead body with as little bother and as quickly as possible.

Somewhere between the community-wide orgy and the frigid formality there is a proper and adequate funeral service.

The key men are, of course, the undertaker and the minister. Either of them may ruin a funeral. Both of them often joyously collaborate to make of the final rites an amusing farce. Undertakers who refuse to plan a service in detail, who leave the minister and the pall bearers and the family to their own simple discretions, who are merely truck drivers and hired hands to move the coffin about, are hopeless, and the world will be much better off when they become the victims of their own trade.

However it is the minister more often than the undertaker who turns a funeral into a joke. Sometimes it is because he knows no better. Often it is because he makes personal capital of burying the dead.

A funeral is a minister's Great Chance. It is an opportunity to give aid and sympathy and comfort to a distressed family, and to intrench himself in its affections. But it also is a chance at publicity for himself. So far as the family itself is concerned

the minister is on an easy spot. He could read the Bill of Rights or a passage from Nietzsche, and the family would probably thank him and say that his service was beautiful. Therefore, since the family is in a state of mind that renders it uncritical, the officious publicity-seeking minister addresses himself principally to the spectators. There are many among them who never hear him except at funerals. A funeral is the chance of a life-time for him and he makes the most of it. He spreads himself before the public in a manner that is high, wide and handsome. If his own taste and manners are deficient his funerals are *gaucherie* at its worst.

Let such a minister have charge of a funeral and he is happy. He enjoys it. He makes his supreme effort. Forgetting the deceased he fancies himself the leading man in the play. He pours out every drop of pathos, every vowel of rhetorical bombast, and every pontifical absurdity that he can in any way connect with the service. He gives himself away, revealing his own cheapness, but he never knows it. God may forgive such ministers upon the grounds that they know no better, or because a funeral intoxicates them. It seems unlikely, however, God being an artist, that He can ever forget their sheer, stupid crudity. And it is practically certain that God will never forgive them for the doggerel poetry they quote.

Yet many Southern people, including some who ought to know better, like such funerals, conducted by such ministers.

When such a man is not in charge of a funeral, the deceased being a member of some other church, he will often take steps to worm himself into the service as an assistant. It flatters him to be called upon by a family outside his own congregation. It is not difficult to ease himself into the service. It can often be accomplished merely by visiting the home and hanging around the family in a solicitous manner for an hour or so.

There are too many ministers of this type. Often they are good men, but a funeral with its opportunities is more than they can withstand. The temptation to make of the service a publicity and propaganda occasion gets them. The same temptation is there for all ministers. A funeral audience, more often than not composed of non-intellectuals and always in a bathetic mood, is putty in the hands of a gifted speaker who understands his crowd. Yet there are ministers of all ranks who refuse to make

personal capital of it, just as there are others of all ranks who attempt to cash in.

But the fault is not always with the minister or the undertaker. Frequently the family itself does the dirty work. The family often asks for personal remarks when the minister prefers to omit them. The family sometimes demands inappropriate hymns, naming them, when the minister wants no music at all. The family often comes up with fantastic requests for which the minister gets the blame. And it is almost always the family that asks for additional ministers to take part, occasionally as many as six.

One minister can make of a funeral a simple, dignified, creative work of religious art, if he knows how. Two can do it, though it is more difficult; and impossible if one of them inclines to hog the service. When there are more than two it is simply a matter of finding enough parts to go around. The service is invariably aimless and messy.

In the little Southern towns it usually requires all resident ministers to bury a prominent citizen. It also frequently requires all of them to bury a liquor-head who never attended the church of any of them. The middle class usually manages to get by with one or two ministers and consequently has more decent funerals. But too many Southern people have a tendency to want the whole works in their funerals, all the ministers available, all the customs, every ancient tradition that is still respectable, plenty of pall bearers both active and honorary, and a vast quantity of sheer pompous solemnity. They don't like funerals to be too brief. They want the "dust to dust, ashes to ashes, earth to earth" committal, though neither knowing nor caring whether it be the Episcopal ritual. They want hymns and flowers. They like personal remarks, tender and touching. They prefer church services. They want it all, spread on thick, and they care not if it also be spread with a heavy hand. They want the works. They usually get the works.

Even so, some of the old burial customs of the South have about passed away.

There are a few communities where it is still correct to send around to every home a printed, black-bordered announcement,

threaded with black ribbon. You come to the door and read it. The servant then carries it on to the next house. A variation is to place the announcement, which gives information of the death and the hour of the funeral, in stores and other public places.

Now and then the primitive and inexcusable custom of opening the casket during the church service is still practised. The congregation is invited to file by and view the remains. The family comes last. Mothers bring their children with them and hold them up to peer into the face of the dead. Terrible scenes occur where the casket is opened. Fortunately this feature of burial is nearly extinct.

Another tradition that has about disappeared is the habit of grave-side remarks. Neighbors and friends, in fact all who so desired were invited to step up and speak. Now and then an enemy of the deceased availed himself of the privilege, but more often county politicians seized the occasion to win the family's vote. There are communities where the practise still occurs, usually in the case of a prominent death.

It is unimportant whether the service is held at the home, the church, the funeral home or the grave-side. The important requirements, if you want a decent funeral in the South, or for that matter anywhere, are to employ an undertaker who knows how to plan and direct it, and to secure the service of one minister who is honorable enough not to run away with the occasion for his own purposes. It also is well to ask him to omit personal remarks, "Crossing The Bar", which has been too much over-worked, and all rhyming poems.

If you are a Catholic or an Episcopalian you need have no worry. Your service will be read from a book or recited from memory. The ritual in the one case will be in Latin, and in the other though in English will be in good taste and dignified language. If you belong to the rank and file of Protestantism in the Southern states the type of funeral you will have is upon the lap of the gods.

But whether it be simple and dignified, or whether it be a three ring circus, your neighbors and friends will enjoy it. Death is a complete and perfect and decisive thing. Nothing is more complete and perfect and decisive. Too, it is spectacular how-



ever quietly it comes. It jolts the community, breaking the monotony of its life. It effects a change upon the local scene. It gets you out of the way, opening up your job, or your estate for someone else. It complicates the lives of those you leave behind you. It solves problems, and creates other. Also, there is in everyone at least a bit of sadism.

Therefore your funeral will be enjoyed by all but the few who loved you. The pleasure will not be malicious nor exultant. It will be merely and excusably human.

## THE CAJANS AT HOME

*By Laura Frances Murphy*

Occupying the pine and oak woods of Mobile County in southern Alabama are a group of people of mixed racial blood known in that section as Indian Cajans. No scientific racial studies have been made, and but little authentic history of the group is available.

It is evident that the Alabama Cajans are a mixture of a number of races and nationalities: English, American Indian, German, French, Italian, Mexican, Negro, and Russian. The name "Cajan" is probably a misnomer as the group is connected only remotely with the Acadians of historical fame; however, it has been brought over probably from Louisiana and Mississippi and is now in general use in south Alabama. In the absence of a more accurate term "Cajan" is used in this account to designate the people of mixed blood in Mobile County who are classed as neither white, red, nor black, but constitute a mongrel race. These people have no typical physical characteristics. In one family there may be the true blonde with all the physical characteristics of the white race, and also the dark brunette who shows close kinship to the Mexican or the Indian. Few of the Cajans in Mobile County show decided relationship to the black race, and the Cajans themselves resent the connecting of their ancestry with the Negro in any way.

A conservative estimate of the Cajan population of the county would number the group between eighteen hundred and two thousand, divided between settlements and neighborhoods as follows:

Shady Grove Settlement, west of Calvert.....	500
Byrd Settlement, between Mount Vernon and Citronelle .....	700
Tom Lars Byrd Neighborhood .....	300
Tassie Byrd Neighborhood .....	200
Book Byrd Neighborhood .....	200
Scattered groups at Movico, Chastang, Creola, Mobile .....	600 to 800

The Census Bureau of the Federal Government has never made a report of the Cajans as a racial group and the above figures have been gathered by personal research.

The homes of the woods are typical of the pioneer days of the old South.<sup>1</sup> The living quarters commonly designated as "the house" are usually separate from the kitchen where there are a fireplace and a stove. In the larger homes the kitchen may be partitioned from the dining room, but more often cooking and eating are done in the same room. A few couples have recognized the desirability and convenience of building the kitchen connected with the rest of the house. Building materials are logs or undressed lumber. A few homes have been built or remodeled with finished planks. Nails are saved carefully for use at such times as they may be needed after a house is built, and scrap lumber is never thrown away. Even the wealthy families often live in houses built by ancestors several generations ago. A paling fence with wooden gates is always considered the most attractive enclosure that could be used for the yard. "Brush brooms" made from gallberry bushes and "pine tops" taken from pine trees are used to clean the yards. Almost every home has at least a few flowers, and several women are known for raising large, colorful beds of hardy annuals; these are usually in the middle of a clean swept, hard yard, devoid of grass.

There are no separate living rooms in the modern sense, for all the rooms are living rooms. The "best room" in a house of the middle class usually has one or more beds, several chairs with "tidies" on the backs, and a small table. There may be a talking machine or an organ. There are often large crayon portraits of

1. Hamilton, Peter J., *Colonial Mobile*, Second Edition, 1910, p. 390.

members of the family, usually deceased, enlarged from old photographs or deguerotypes by a travelling photographer. The beds and the floors are immaculately clean. The windows may have curtains but are not likely to have shades.

There are no bathrooms. Tin wash tubs and tin or granite wash pans are in general use. Upon arising a person is expected to "wash", that is, to bathe face and hands in cool water that has just been brought from spring, pump, or well for that purpose. Before and after each meal the members of the family and their guests go to the gallery where they wash their hands. Allover baths are taken after dark to insure privacy.

One family in Byrd Settlement has electric lights from a Delco plant, and several families use good kerosene lamps; however, such methods of lighting are not in general use. "Fat pine" sticks or "lighters" furnish torch light for cooking and eating at night and for most social gatherings in the home. Knives and forks are not used to a great extent. Spoons, with two or three knives, are usually found in a home of moderate means; and no family has a complete set of silver. Several families own forty-eight piece sets of dishes which they reserve for "company use".

Cajans have several food combinations that Hamilton believes to be of Indian-French-English origin. "Indian dishes like succotash and gumbo filé" are common.<sup>1</sup> Filé is a powdered form of sassafras. The most widely used combinations are: rice and black-eye peas; ripe tomatoes, Irish potatoes, and lima beans; chicken and rice; green black-eye peas and okra; green tomatoes and okra. Gopher (land turtle) meat is a delicacy in some places, as are green turtle, squirrel, and wild turkey. Goat and mutton are two of the most popular meats among the groups financially able to afford them. The use of goat for barbeque reminds a southern traveller of the barbequed and dried "cabrito" (goat meat) in the diet of the Mexican in the Gulf Coast region of south Texas.

Vegetables commonly grown in the gardens of the old South are raised here. A few fruits: peaches, pears, pomegranates, and persimmons are raised. Dewberries and blackberries grow wild.

---

1. Hamilton, *op. cit.*, p. 184.

Mayhaws, scuppernongs, and muscadines likewise grow wild, and scuppernongs are often cultivated in a home garden. Very little is known about modern methods in agriculture or in preserving foods; hence, gardens rarely reach the point of best possible production, and almost no food is canned. There is but little production and consumption of milk and other dairy products. Lard and lard substitutes are given preference over butter for seasoning or table use. Sea foods, cabbage, eggs, and citrus fruits are additional delicacies to the regular meal of salt pork, hot bread, molasses, and coffee. A guest's breakfast might consist of baked sweet potatoes, boiled cabbage, molasses, meat, biscuit, and coffee rolls.

Ice cream is a rare treat. It is inconvenient for anyone to get ice, and ice cream is made only on holidays and other special occasions. There is one ice cream freezer in the Shady Grove Settlement and there are four or five in the Byrd Settlement. On one occasion the public school teacher arrived at a home just as the family were giving up as a failure an attempt to freeze a gallon of ice cream. They had decided, after turning the handle for an hour, with no visible results, that the mixture was not freezing because of an insufficient quantity of sugar. The teacher added a cup of salt to the ice that was in the freezer, and the cream began to freeze almost immediately. The family were delighted over this remarkable culinary skill thus displayed by their teacher.

Dripped coffee is the universal drink of the woods. Green coffee is purchased at a store, then it is parched and ground at home only as it is used to insure strength. No home is without its fireplace and drip pot for coffee. A few younger couples make coffee on a stove, but the average native prefers setting the pot in a bed of coals in the fireplace. Dripped coffee is very strong and is served without cream and sugar. It is not served during a meal but always before the meal, and frequently, after.

Upon awaking in the morning, a Cajan expects his coffee to be served immediately. Whenever a person comes to a home, some member of the family is bound by social custom to offer him a cup of coffee. If the drink is not offered him, it is not discourteous for him to ask for it. Regardless of the time of day or of the number of times coffee has already been served, it is not hospitable to permit an adult visitor to leave without first offering him hot coffee.

Cajans have great respect for old age. Every child is taught to be courteous to older people and when a guest enters his home, his responsibility is keenly felt. He takes around a chair for the guest to use as the latter goes back and forth from the house to the kitchen. If the guest is an old man or an old woman the child used "Uncle" or "Aunt" as terms of respect, and he feels honored to have his visitor ask him to draw a bucket of cool water from the old board well or to bring in some lighter for a better fire.

A host or a member of his family who does not insist on a guest's staying for a meal is considered ill-bred. Likewise, anyone at the home at bedtime is always asked to spend the night. No doubt this custom prevails because of the distance that often separates a man from his home at nightfall, when he is travelling on horse or on foot. Beds can always be made down on the floors to accommodate the extra persons, and if the guests be old in years, the children promptly give up their bed without a murmur of protest.

Arriving at a home out in the woods, a visitor stops at the gate nearest the front door of the dwelling house and calls, "Hello!". An older member of the family comes to the door or out on the porch and answers, "Hello". The following conversation may then take place on the gallery or in the house :

Visitor—"Howdy, How're you?"

Host—"Not much, How're you?"

Visitor—"Not much."

Host—"How're your folks?"

Visitor—"They're pretty good, I believe. Are you all well?"

Host—"Yes, I believe so."

When the visitor takes leave, he says, "Well, you'd better come go home with me."

Host—"No, I don't reckon I can hardly today. You'd as well stay longer."

Visitor—"No, I don't reckon I can. My folks will be looking for me. Let Johnnie (one of the host's children) go home with me."

Host—"No, I don't reckon he can go—not today. I'll let him come sometime. You never have brought Willie over to stay with us none yet."

Visitor—"Well, I will bring Willie. Do let Johnnie go."

Host—"Well, I guess he can go if he wants to. When are you coming back?"

Visitor—"We'll try to get around about Sunday and bring your boy back. Better come go, too."

Host—"No, I don't reckon I can. I'll be looking for you Sunday."

Visitor—"All right; if the Lord's willing and nothing don't happen. Good-day."

Host (and family)—"Good-bye!"

The first time two white women came to Byrd Settlement to teach an opportunity school for adults, they were entertained in the home of the settlement leader. There the first night of their arrival, they were made welcome in the crowded, "best" room of the home by the host, the hostess, eight young men, seven young women, and three children. Some sat on chairs that were too few for the number desiring seats, others on the bed that would later be occupied by the teachers. Several young men stood in the doorways which were really the only comfortable spots, since the pine lighter fire which was serving for lighting purposes on that June night, was burning exceptionally well. The teachers were given the only rocking chairs and were seated directly in front of the fire in order for everyone to get a good view of the guests. Each young man and each girl, then the father and the mother, took his turn at displaying his skill at the organ. They all played by ear and the entire repertoire numbered three or four hymns. Each who could write then autographed a sheet of paper; great interest was shown in the teachers' handwriting.

At eleven o'clock the wooden water bucket with the family dipper was passed around as one of the necessary preparations for retiring. Those who had been dipping snuff or chewing tobacco washed out their mouths at this time and everybody took a drink of cool water. A bucket of fresh water was put in a central location so that it would be available if needed in the night. The

guests were then left to retire in the room in which they had been entertained; instructions were given to keep all doors closed in order to prevent disturbance by the boys' hunting dog. As there were only two small windows in the room and the fire and the crowd had made the room very stuffy, instructions were disobeyed and a door was left partly open. The host left several matches to be used as needed. Each one was utilized before the night was over, in putting out the cat, chasing a rat out of the guests' hat box, examining the size of chinchies, and finally putting out the dog that came in as expected. At daybreak the teachers were greeted by the three small children of the household, resplendent in their Sunday clothes and greased hair, gazing into the two strange faces over the foot of the bed. Coffee was soon served and the children were sent out while the guests dressed to go to a typical Cajan breakfast.

A Cajan meal is served very informally and anyone in the home is welcomed at the family board. All food is placed on the table and the older members of the family and the guests are supposed to eat first. The host or the hostess invites everybody to "sit up", which means that everyone who is sitting on a chair must bring his chair to the table. Grace is said by a member of the family, usually a man, and everyone is urged to "help himself". If there are not enough chairs and benches, the older boys may squat beside the table while they eat. Different members of the group will "borrow" the one or two knives that are being used by the guest or the host.

It is not considered polite to take bread with the fingers, and a fork is used to convey a piece from the service plate to the individual's plate. One spoon may be used in three or four different dishes: meat, beans, okra, rice.

Young men and boys are often embarrassed to eat in a strange home. A young man who is courting on Sunday may not eat anything from the time he leaves home Sunday morning until he returns Monday morning. The writer has heard numerous adolescent boys declare that they would go without food all day rather than eat before women of another settlement. It sometimes takes school boys several months to become accustomed to eating before the teacher.



Such boys are urged especially to eat, and if they will not do so, the older girls usually save some food to serve them with the boys of the household after the main meal. Everyone at the table is exhorted to "make out your dinner"—or breakfast or supper. A guest is expected to "try" everything; and the cooks feel that something is wrong with their cooking if a guest does not eat heartily. It is customary to serve no beverage during a meal, although in a few homes the girls give water or milk to a teacher or a minister, since they have learned in school that white people drink during the course of the meal. As soon as everyone leaves the table, the water bucket is brought in or the family go to it on the gallery for fresh water. The guest is offered water to drink and water in which to wash his hands.

Health conditions in the woods are similar to those found in many of the ill sections of the South today. Ignorance and superstition cause people to hold to old practices of self-medication which are far more detrimental than beneficial to health. There is a serious lack of health education and the number of ailments caused by nutritional deficiencies is steadily on the increase. Almost no attention is given persons with defective eyes and ears; nor do the teeth receive any special care unless an extraction is necessary as the last resort in severe pain.

Venereal disease is alarmingly on the increase. Several native men are consulted for treatment, rather than a licensed physician, and herb mixtures are prescribed and administered generously. Although this situation is known by several practicing physicians in nearby villages, they do not have the illegal practice stopped. Consequently, scores of women and children are now suffering some effects of disease, yet at present they are helpless in securing medical treatment. Such diseases are not spoken of in hushed tones, as is often the case in modern communities, and it is not difficult to find a victim in a large percentage of homes.

The social status of Cajan women and the superstition by which many of their actions are guided, do not make for physically healthy womanhood. Married women are frequently victims of venereal disease. Bright's Disease claims young mothers who know nothing of the importance of diet. A visitor in any Cajan settlement must be impressed by the large number of orphans who are being reared by various relatives. Babies who must be thus

cared for are fed by any one of a number of preparations. It is a common sight to see a Cajan woman feeding a baby full strength sweetened condensed milk with a spoon.

Most Cajans are undernourished. Hookworm, pellagra, malaria, and colds are chronic complaints. The men, perhaps because of their active life in the woods, seem to have more resistance to colds than do the women; however, diseases of the heart and malaria are common even with them. There has never been an epidemic of any disease in malignant form to sweep the woods. The people attribute this to the fact that they live great distances apart, and each family usually has a distinct water supply.

The majority of people never know the advice or the care of a licensed physician. The expense involved in bringing a physician eight or ten miles into the woods is too much for the average family. Persons critically ill with pneumonia or acute appendicitis are sometimes carried in an open car thirty or forty miles to a doctor. In the history of this section there has been one physician who knew practically all of the people and who knew the roads in the woods as well as the natives. This physician was for many years the outstanding helper for Mobile County Cajans in rural medical work. He did much to bring about the improved care that licensed native midwives now give patients. However, some of the crude methods used by these midwives in obstetrical work are still to be deplored, such as putting the patient on the floor before the delivery of her child, building a fire in the patient's room even in hot summer weather, etc. It is rare for a woman to have an attending physician in childbirth.

The Public Health Service has never employed a full-time worker for Cajans, and the general staff have always felt it a loss of valuable time to hunt Cajan families in the woods when there were many people waiting to be served in the city of Mobile. Consequently, the work of the public health nurses among Cajans was until recently more of emergency relief than the education in health so much needed.

Until 1932 the public health service employed at least three field workers, one of whom was interested in maternity work; one was interested in tuberculosis cases; and one in general case work. No clinics for tuberculosis were ever held for Cajans, and

the majority know nothing of going to Mobile for treatment or examination. The nurse in charge of pre-natal work has always shown more interest than any other nurse in the physical welfare of Cajans, and since the establishment of a program of social work at the Methodist Community House she has been giving valuable assistance in cases to whom she is directed through the Community House. Women feel honored that this nurse shows interest in their welfare, and a young woman may feel slighted if the nurse calls on a neighbor first. Real educational work is being accomplished by the maternity nurse in replacing "old wives' tales" with progressive methods. Strict cleanliness of midwives is required; diet lists and feeding schedules are given and results checked; and all dangerous delivery cases are advised to go to the city hospital in Mobile.

The public school nurses visit the schools occasionally and vaccinate for smallpox. No physical examinations have ever been given the school children. About sixty children and their parents have been given inoculations against typhoid fever and diphtheria. When the nurses first began to visit the settlements about eight years ago the children were often so frightened that they ran into the woods and had to be hunted. One school nurse was surprised to see several of the youngsters whom she was to vaccinate jump out of a window and disappear just before it came their time in line. Since then, the blue uniforms of the nurses have ceased to frighten Cajans in most neighborhoods, and the children are glad to welcome a nurse to the school. Fortunately, Cajan parents have never shown any opposition to vaccination of their children.

The Cajans of Mobile and adjoining counties speak English with an accent suggestive of French and German influence. Expressions used and the archaic meanings often given modern words point to the possibility that the speech of this section is the speech of the old South. The average person's vocabulary is very limited, and although he does speak English, it is difficult for him to engage in conversation with outsiders.

It is not uncommon to find the use of a peculiar adjective formed from verbs, as: "the workingest people". Ancient syllabic plurals are in general use among the people of Shady Grove Settlement, as, "nestes" for nests, "ghosties" for ghosts, "posties" for posts. An abundance of pleonasms is always found: "I done

done it", "in this day and time". Corrupt forms of the verb are employed generally among the older people in all settlements and among the children of Shady Grove Settlement: "gwine" for going, "seed" for saw, "dooz" for does. The strong preterit with a dialectical change of the vowel is found in "brung", "drap", "holp", "whup". The weak preterit supplants the proper one: "knowed", "riz". As with the southern highlander, these are not mere blunders of individual illiterates, but usages common throughout (the section) and hence real dialect.<sup>1</sup>

Common English words are often given unusual meanings: "bright" for white, "smart" for industrious, "pine straws" for pine needles, "proud" for glad, "sail" for sailboat, "ashamed" for embarrassed, "a sight" for much, "carry" for accompany, "chunk" for throw, "wash" for bathe, "solid" for certainly, "love" for like, "bread" for flour, "heaps" for much. Some of these terms and expressions are used also by the southern mountaineers and even by the old settlers of the lowlands of the South.

To the Cajan, peanuts are "penders"; a woodpecker, a "peckerwood"; a chicken hen is a "widdie", and all little chicks "little widdies". So general is the use of these terms that the writer has known numbers of school children to write "hen" and to pronounce the word "widdie". The old verb "tote" is in use in all settlements. An envelopoe is "backed" instead of addressed. Common descriptive terms are "womanish" or "manish"; feisty. A boy is "talking to" a young woman and "courting" or "sparking" in general.

Words and expressions are often intensified, as "biscuit-bread, man-person, women-folks, widow woman, church-house. "One more time" means an unusually enjoyable experience. Frequently employed assertions include: "I call it", "I swear to God", "I declare before gracious alive", "I'm really going", "If its not so, you can plow me"; "That's so, and I know it". Quaint idioms are found in every group: "I 'low to go", "for why?", "she's aimin' to", "I've laid off", "he done me dirt", "he struck a trot for home", "'taint powerful long", "I don't reckon", "nary a one", "not nary a soul", "Ink pen", or "Ink pencil" means a fountain pen.

1. Campbell, John C., *The Southern Highlander and His Home*, 1921, p. 359.

A "tooth brush" is a small twig from an oak or a gall berry bush. One end is split so that it makes a brush. Some words are often used in the plural, as, "cabbages", "menses", "folkses", "baking powders", "face powders".

"Evening" begins at noon. "Afternoon" is not in common use. "Today 'twas a week ago" or "Thursday 'twill be a year ago" are measures of time. "Soon" means early—I'm going to get up soon in the morning.

French and Creole words have in some instances found their way into general use. The old "galerie" is now gallery and is used altogether instead of porch. "Bayou" and "joque" are familiar words—"Paul Bayou", "Chick as awjoque". "Filé" is used instead of sassafras.

## WILLIAM PARISH CHILTON

(Sketches of the Chief Justices of the Alabama Supreme Court by Lucien D. Gardner, the present Chief Justice, will appear regularly in the Quarterly, the series having been initiated by the late Chief Justice, John C. Anderson, throughout Volume I.)

William P. Chilton was born August 10, 1810 near Elizabethtown in Adair County, Kentucky. He was the son of a Baptist Minister, Rev. Thomas John Chilton and Margaret Bledsoe Chilton.

Of the early life and education of William P. Chilton little is known but we may assume that he was truly a student, for at the age of seventeen he was teaching school. When he was eighteen he moved to Athens, Tennessee and there began the study of law under Judge J. Meigs of the Supreme Court of Tennessee. A year later he was admitted to the Bar of Tennessee. He married Miss Mary Catherine Morgan and without money and without influence or friends, in 1834, he emigrated to Alabama. Alabama, his adopted state, became his home, and as someone has said: "once in Alabama, he fully identified himself with all of her interests, fought her battles as his own and sleeps in her bosom."

When he first came to Alabama he settled in Mardisville, at that time the location of the United States Land Office, but shortly thereafter moved to Talladega where he practiced law until 1846. At that time, among a frontier population, in a nascent condition, strong will, wise intellect, and steady principles were required for leadership. Chilton had these needed qualifications. He then moved to Tuskegee and practiced his profession there until 1849.

William P. Chilton began his public career in 1839 as a member of the Alabama House of Representatives. He was active in the Presidential canvass of 1840 and 1844, and supported General Harrison and Mr. Clay. In 1843 he ran for congress as the Whig candidate but was defeated by General Felix McConnell, a Democrat. In 1847 he ran for and was elected Associate Justice of the Supreme Court to succeed Justice Ormond. He served in this capacity until December 6, 1852, when upon the resignation of Chief Justice Dargan, he succeeded to the office of Chief Justice and remained in this office until January 2, 1856.

When reading the opinions of Chief Justice Chilton much of the character of the man appears. His writings speak his ability—his decisions reflect his passion for justice. Probably a truer test of his character and ability is recorded in the words of Hon. John W. Sanford in speaking to resolutions offered before the Supreme Court at the time of Judge Chilton's death.

"In that office he increased his reputation and enlarged the circle of his friends. He believed with Lord Bacon that judges should not be 'hard headed' but 'strong hearted' and 'ought to be more learned than witty, more reverend than plausible, more advised than confident. Above all things, integrity is their portion and proper virtue'. Hence, during the eight years he was Justice and Chief Justice of this Court, he was laborious, painstaking and conscientious in the discharge of his duties. His opinions were carefully prepared, are well sustained by precedent, and are clearly expressed. He was patient in hearing arguments, that he might well be advised."

Judge Chilton's attitude upon the bench indicated his judicial temperament, ever holding his mind in even balance until all sides were heard and carefully considered. He was broad minded and fair, displaying utmost respect for the opposing opinions of his associates on the Court. All of these qualities added to his stature as a true jurist.

In 1859 he was elected Senator from Macon County, and took a leading part in the measures of that period. The political events of that period—state and national—were of the most exciting character. Judge Chilton was recognized as an able debater and his acknowledged abilities and ripe experience made him a principal figure in any deliberative body of which he was a member. In 1861 Judge Chilton was a member of the Confederate Provisional Congress, and was re-elected in 1863. He was connected officially with the Confederate Government from its inception at Montgomery in 1861 until the surrender of its army in 1865. While opposed to secession as being unwise, as soon as it was a fact, he went into the Confederacy with all his soul, took part in the inauguration of Jefferson Davis, escorting Mr. Davis to the capitol on that occasion, and stood by the Confederacy to the bitter end. After the war, he devoted himself entirely to his profession. He lived in Montgomery during the latter years of his life.

Judge Chilton was married twice. First to Mary Catherine Morgan and later to her sister Elvira Frances Morgan. Judge

Chilton was survived by ten of his twelve children, and some of his descendants are now residents of Montgomery. He was a leader in the Baptist Church and at the time of his death was serving as Grand Master of the Masonic Grand Lodge of Alabama. Four years after his death the County of Chilton was named in his honor.

It is only just to say, that Judge Chilton throughout a long career in his profession and politics always distinguished himself for honor and kindness. Many young men were aided and brought forward by him to public usefulness, whose merit might otherwise have been overlooked.

The people of Alabama still enjoy the legacy of this noble character.



## JOURNAL OF JAMES A. TAIT FOR THE YEAR 1813.\*

(Diary entries from the 25th of August 1813 to the 25th of March 1815).

*Edited by Peter A. Brannon*

1771

James A. Tait was born at Cokesbury College, Maryland, September 8, 1871. He died on his plantation at Dry Forks, Wilcox County, Alabama, February 10, 1855. Mr. Tait came to the Alabama territory about two years after his service against the Indians. Judge Charles Tait, his father, one time Senator from Georgia and recently appointed Federal Judge in the new District, followed his son to the Lower Alabama country. Judge Tait as well as Doctor William W. Bibb, the Junior Senator from Georgia, both failed of reelection when the question of payment for representation in Congress came up. Both the former Georgians received Federal appointments. Doctor Bibb was the first and only Territorial Governor of Alabama.

The manuscript collections of the Alabama Department of Archives and History contain a considerable correspondence of Judge Tait as well as the plantation records of James Tait. There is also in the Department quite a few relics of the family. Judge Tait was a patron of the Philadelphia Academy of Sciences. The Tait family of Wilcox County were extensive planters holding large bodies of land in the Alabama River Valley. There are many descendants living in that country today.

The Journal exactly as set-out by James Tait, a Private soldier follows:

\* The original Journal of James Tait is a handmade, paper covered, little volume ruled so that the date of each changing incident appears to the right. Besides an interesting account of his experiences he has injected Indian words, some short sentences and common expressions. The volume was presented to the Alabama Department of Archives and History by Mrs. R. Spencer, September 28, 1901.

## Journal

By Jas. A. Tait

for the year 1813.

Capt. Smith's company, of which I am one, met on Wednesday at Elbert C. House, and started on a military expedition against the Creek Indians.

Left home on horseback the 27th overtook our company one mile from Greensborough, walked 9 miles first day after leaving our horses 16 miles from Lexington. I walked 20 miles the second day. The farthest I ever walked in one day on a journey, and slept at Eatonton, a few miles ahead of the com. On Monday night encamped 15 miles from Eatonton in a most indifferent tent, without any detriment tho.

Thursday night slept in Clinton, in the Church, on a very narrow bench without the ill luck of tumbling off once.

Arrived at the Oakmulgee camp ground about 3 o'clock on Wednesday after the company had marched for 7 days through very rainy weather; being very warm also. As soon as we reached the place of Westington we struck up a miserable shelter, which was put to a severe test, by a hard rain descending upon it the very instant of its erection. It could not defend us. We got a disagreeable, tho not a perfect wetting. We made gradual improvements. This little army has been badly provided with victuals since it encamped. Much and just complaint has arisen; I hope we shall be taken more care of in this way for the future. There has been considerable bustle about an election for a Col. commandant of this regiment. If there should be an election, it would cause great delay, and trouble; it is said we should return to our counties to vote. This would never do. How the affairs will terminate I do not know. I write this on the 3rd.

Capt. Cunningham with his company of 111 men, and 50 horse, moved off to Hawkins' on the Flint River,<sup>1</sup> on Monday 6th.

Harris's regiment drew their arms, at the fort on Tuesday the 7th.

General Floyd & suit paid his first respects to our regiment on Thursday the 9th. He was dressed in a blue frock coat, with very splendid epaulets and rich gold lace. He is a man, of statue, about the middle size, of a dark complexion and formed for strength, appearing to possess the capacity, so necessary for a commander, of enduring much fatigue. He was received by the regiment, in the usual stile, with their arms presented, drums beating and fifes playing; being conducted in by the adjutant. He walked between the two battalions being about 40 paces apart, with his head inclined to the left, and looking altogether to the right battalion. Adjutant Gen. Newman is with us occasionally. I expect that he is the most able, or skillful, commander in the southern country; very nimble in the field, possessing great presence of mind, and delivering his orders with great precision, accuracy, and distinctness. Jenkins and Harris's regiments are said to be composed, the former of about 17 hundred men, the latter of about 9 hundred, infantry besides about 5 hundred of cavalry. When we shall march against the Indians is not known, probably in 5 or 6 weeks. Matters are not yet well organized. Officers in the contracting or victualing department must give better proofs of their activity and management, or perhaps we should not in 3 months, move to the object of the expedition. Orders were issued this morning prohibiting of prophane swearing &c. under penalty of the guard houses; alias imprisonment.

10th Sept. 1813

J. A. Tait.

---

<sup>1</sup>*Hawkins' on the Flint River.*

This refers to Colonel Benjamin Hawkins' residence in the present Crawford County, Georgia on Flint River, this being the site of the United States Indian Agency among the Creeks. Colonel Hawkins, a native of North Carolina, attended Princeton, was a staff officer in the American Revolution, was a senator from North Carolina, and was the United States Agent among the Creeks from 1798 to 1816 having had an appointment under George Washington as a Commissioner to the Indians prior to that time. The site was on the Federal Road which went that way from Milledgeville to Fort Hawkins, the present Macon, Georgia, thence by Fort Mitchell and into the Indian country.

Two men from Porters' and four from Clevelands' deserted yesterday morning 9th. The first unhappy instances of the kind.

Stood as one of the picket guard second times in the night from 5 to 7 o'clock, from 11 to 1, from 5 to 7 in the morning of the 13th being number 19, second relief. The guards were distributed into 3 reliefs, of 20 men, each standing 3 hours in 29. Our two countersigns were, ——— and hard times. The cotton very appropos.

Moved to the lower encampment, situated on the right bank of boggy branch in the piny woods. An express reached camp from the Agency, bringing news that the Garrison of Fort Mims had been cut off by the Indians. Melancholy news. 17th.

The Artillery company returned to Milledgeville. 17th. The *poah* (corn) fields upon the Oakmulge, are said to have produced 75 bushels per acre. 15 barrels. Col. Harris proposed to make me his clerk: I declined for the reasons, first it was entirely unexpected, 2nd I had reconciled it to my mind to serve my country as a dutiful citizen in arms, estimating it honorable to fight for one's country, pro patria puguine aut nois; 3rd I had formed attachments to my mess; and not caring for any favor that Col. Harris could bestow.

A private in Capt. Heath's company died last night. The first sad instance of the kind, which has occurred in this encampment.

The first frost at Camp Hope on the 12th.

Another death of one Paxon the 18th.

Took a joyfull farewell of the sweet waters of boggy branch on the 29th at about one o'clock.

Arrived at the Agency on the evening of the 1st after a tire-some day's march through the woods on the right flank commanded by Major Jones. Waded Flint river next morning like a soldier and encamped on the plain of Fort Lawrence. The next 3rd day marched into the Fort as garrison and took the place of Capt. Merriwether. Five good companies, at least are requisite to defend the fort in case of attack by a formidable force. The fort is 180 feet square, 2 block houses, 2 hospitals, 2 store houses for provisions, etc.

The army marched from Ft. Lawrence on 18th for Coweta, leaving a garrison composed of the companies of Caps. Smith & Ware and about 250 sick men. The diseases with which the army has been afflicted have their origin in bad colds, thence in violent headaches, fevers, debility and death. The course of F. Lawrence from Ft. Hawkins is South 70 degrees west, distance 30 miles. From F. Lawrence to Chitta Hooche 58 miles, from thence to the Ottise town about the same distance the last town about 25 miles above the junction of the Coosa and Tallapoosa and situated on the latter river. The town called Oakfuskee about 20 miles above Ottesee on the same river. The Coweta and Cusseta towns are on the banks of the Chitta Hooche<sup>2</sup> 7 miles apart, the former above.

Some particulars of the battle on the Tallipoosa,<sup>3</sup> fought on

<sup>2</sup>Chitta Hoochee is the "Chattahoochee" River.

Ottissa is the Indian town generally designated "Ottassee", a location half a mile southwest from the mouth of Calebee Creek in the present Macon County, Alabama.

Oakfuskee is the site of the old British port, Fort Okfuski, opposite the influx of Sandy Creek (from the West) into the Tallapoosa River. The distance is considerably more than twenty miles above Ottassee. The location is in Tallapoosa County about twelve miles west of Dadeville.

The Coweta and Cusseta towns are in Russell County, Alabama and Stewart County, Georgia respectively. Coweta was two miles northeast of Fort Mitchell. Cusseta was in the present Fort Benning military reservation just south of Upatoy Creek. This was the largest town in the Lower Nation in population. The Federal Road crossed here. A trail branched up to Coweta town which was not on the main Federal Road as cut in 1811.

<sup>3</sup>The "Battle on the Tallapoosa" is a reference to the battle of Ottassee, which took place south of the mouth of Calebee Creek and a little northwest of Shorter Station on the Western of Alabama Railway. Aboriginal evidences would indicate that this is a very old settlement site. A considerable mound is still there. William Bartram, the celebrated American naturalist, was at this place during Christmas week of 1777, and notes in his journal the only totem pole ever referred to in the southern States. The town house here was one hundred feet in diameter according to his records, and archaeological investigations several years ago showed that the posts of this building are still in place underground. Colonel Benjamin Hawkins, United States Agent for Indian Affairs South of the Ohio, spent Christmas day, 1796 in the home of James Bailey at this place. Dixon Bailey and his brother Richard, sons of this man, were educated in Philadelphia. One of them was under the tutelage of the Quakers and the other one sponsored by the United States government. Elizabeth, who became Mrs. Fisher, learned to read and write in one of the families in the Tensas Country on the lower Alabama.

the 29th Nov. under the command of Gen. Floyd on our part. After three days march, the army, (18 hundred strong, including 500 Indians, besides 8 hundred infantry, 200 cavalry, 200 riflemen and an Artillery company of 100 men); encamped on the right of the 28th within 8 miles of the Ottesee town the place of battle. The next morning it marched so soon as to exhibit itself to the surprised and astonished Indians, about half way between day break and sunrise; at this period the contest commenced. Then, for the first time, we heard to resound on the remote banks of the Tallapoosa the dreadful noise of contending armies, never before did the limpid waters receive the tinge of human blood. The battle lasted 2 and a half or 3 hours. 9 of our men were slain on the fields, some say 100, some 200 and some 300 of the enemy. They retired behind the bank of the river and as they were shot rolled into the stream, and were also derived into it to prevent the efforts of the scalping knife. Some were killed in swimming across. It is supposed that between 1500 and 2000 of the enemy were engaged. 3 of our wounded died after the conflict. Capts. King, Little and Morise (Sic.) were wounded. The brave Adjutant Gen. Newman and our brave and respected Gen. Floyd, the latter having his knee pan broken, the former slightly in the leg. There were 18 rounds of canon fired shattering their miserable huts to pieces. The enemy stuck close to their houses before this, through holes which were cut, firing upon us. When the big guns were let loose, they left their huts and scampered like so many wild ants, some -arts of their conduct were truly strange, several of them remained in their houses quite passive during the battle, suffering themselves to be slain without resistance. Whether was this the effects' of prophetic influence? There were but few of them who were not in a state of complete nudity. Whether from necessity or choice I cannot pretend to say. Why from the former? for where are their dressed dear skins. Why from the latter? for it was very cold. Two of their kings shared the fatal portion of many of their subjects. The old Tallisee king mounted a horse from whence he encouraged his warriors by frequent waivings of his war club, himself firing upon us, at intervals with his rifle. Being discovered by Capt. Thomas, of the artillery, a cannon was directed towards him—charged with grape shot, one of which took effect in the neck of the brave old king; the club no longer felt the grasp of its war like possessor. Parker is said to have killed 3 or 4 of the enemy . Old Major Montgomery slew

one and aided in the slaughter. The victory, in my opinion, was mercy was relieved, mercy was asked by some of the poor devils, but none shown.

Two hundred of our men at Coweta were on the sick list. Dec. 7th.

The common calculation, as to the number of warriors in the Creek nation, falls very short of the real number. It is ascertained that there are at least 9000 fighting men 3400 men of the friendly party reported themselves to Gen. Floyd the other day. The common estimate has been 5 or 6000. Fort Mims<sup>4</sup> was situated on this side of the Alabama near its mouth.

Abandoned Fort Lawrence to Capt. Twigg's company on the 11th Jan. and arrived at Fort Mitchell on the sixth day from the day of march, part of the time was disagreeable on account of the rain.

Marched for the Tallapoosa on the 17th

Arrived at fort Hull<sup>5</sup> on the 20th

---

<sup>4</sup>Fort Mims was located just south of the Cut-Off, on the Alabama River. The site is in the present Baldwin County. It was a stockaded post erected around the home of Sam Mims, and was garrisoned on August 30, 1813, when the massacre took place, by several companies of local militia, and some regulars, and some Mississippi volunteers all under the command of Major Daniel Beasley.

The massacre on that occasion was prompted by William Weatherford but he did not take part. Nearly five hundred white settlers, including men, women, and children, and some negroes were killed and most of the bodies were burned. This site has had an interesting association with Alabama history. On Boatyard Lake two miles away was Pierce's school and gin. They dated as early as 1803. After the massacre and when Mrs. Mims, who was not present at the time of the uprising, had gone back there to live, she was visited by Mrs. Andrew Jackson who notes this fact in letters written from Montpelier, the home of David Tate some twelve miles northeast.

<sup>5</sup>Fort Hull was located on the Federal Road four and one half miles southeast of the present Tuskegee and there is today at that place a negro church and school known as the Fort Hull School. It is on the Russell plantation. The stockaded mound post was garrisoned for some time in 1813-14 by a company of militia from Putnam County, Georgia under Captain John Broadnax and a company from Franklin County under Lieutenant Adaroin. Captain Twiggs of the United States Army, later the celebrated General of the name, was in command.

After four days work on this fort it being in a good state and fit for defense against any enemy that might be expected to assault it, the army marched on towards its destination, Toochebathe old fields on Tuesday the 25th. Marched about 3 miles that day; just before we encamped, our leaders by their movements and by the evolutions of the columns instilled into us a belief that we were here to have battle. My regiment was on the left, and my company on the left of that but one. When the line was formed our front had fallen upon a swamp, here we fully expected to hear the rifles of the Red Clubs. The friendly by Indians on our left flank, having the same anticipations, blacked themselves, their faces, at some burnt lightwood stumps and logs. This is their way, in order to exhibit to their enemies an ugly an appearance as possible. As it turned out we were all agreeably disappointed, it was all show. This though was induced to inspire our commanders with some confidence in us. It had no bad effect. Next morning, it being the 26th we struck up the line of march early. Moved on about a mile and a half, struck off to the right into the woods, marched a mile, halted, faced about, (the Genl. having resolved to send back the wagons by which we were retarded) and marched back about 3/7ths of a mile to the ground on which we encamped. At this camp the next morning the 27th we were attacked by the enemy, before day about one half hour; the battle raged for about 3/4th of an hour when we charged upon them, drove them off, and killed several. Capt. Hamilton's troops of horse slew 15 in the charge. Our loss was 17 in killed and 132 in wounded. The number slain on the part of the enemy was ascertained to be about 50. The camp was too small, the men being two deep in line when drawn up to our camp. At the time of attack we had to draw in behind our fires, which made the lines still closer. If the camp had been fortified, to do which we had ample time, we should not have had 20 men in killed and wounded. We were on the battle ground six days in an entrenched camp. Thence moved down to Fort Hull on the 1st day of Feb. Thence on our return march for home on the 16th Feb. We reached the Oakmulge on the 26th. Thence were conveyed to Milledgeville and not discharged until the 7th March I speak now of our regiment. The other was not discharged perhaps until the 15th.

The friendly Indians, who were with us, exercised great barbarity upon the bodies of our enemies slain, on the morning after



the battle. They ripped them open, cut their heads to pieces, took out the heart of one, which was borne along in savage triumph by the perpetrators; and strange to tell, cut off the private parts of others. What bestial conduct!

One dead Indian was hoisted upon a dead horse and as he would tumble off, the savage spectators would cry out "Whiskey too much."

The men began to be quite sickly at Ft. Hull on account of the exposure at Camp Defiance.<sup>9</sup> Dirty clothes, frequent night alarms jumping up in the cold and standing in the ditch for some time in consequence, and had water together with loss of sleep and getting wet as we were going down to the fort, are the causes of the sickness which prevailed; for we must always account for these things. There were three men in our company who behaved dishonorably, as it was said, B. Blackwell, Burley Andrew and Jesse Nash. I am sorry for this, there are men of this cast tho in all armies, it is natural, all men are not alike. Tot homines, tot sententiae et facultates. The charges against Col. Smith were 1st for disposing of public stores, powder, ball and blankets, 2nd ungentlemanly conduct in making the soldiers butcher beeves and appropriating the hides to his own use. 3rd granting a license to non-commissioned officers to retail spirituous liquors in Fort Lawrence. He was dismissed the service a few days before we left the advanced post; the charges having been substantiated. I have written

---

<sup>9</sup>Inasmuch as there is not a reference to the army crossing the Tallapoosa River, the site of this place must be near the mouth of Calebee Creek and adjacent to the old town site. General Thomas Woodward says that the battle of Calebee was fought a short distance from the present Union Methodist Church. The reader should see references to these points in Woodward's *Reminiscences*, where a full account of both the battle of Otossee and Calebee may be seen. Near Tysonville between Cuba and Calebee Creeks and on the South side (East), of the Tallapoosa, during the high waters of the river in 1919, a large number of burials were washed out, and these were accompanied by buttons. This might indicate that a number of Indian soldiers killed in the fight were buried there.

these last notes this 21st day of March 1814 at home depending upon the correctness of my memory as to the facts stated.<sup>7</sup>

Jas. A. Tait.

---

<sup>7</sup>Floyd's night fight on Calebee occurred quoting Woodward on the march West from Fort Hull and North of what was then known as the Federal Road from Milledgeville in Georgia to Fort Stephens in the Mississippi Territory. After the fight the Georgia army returned to Fort Mitchell, and most of them went home. From Fort Mitchell Colonel Homer V. Milton, of the Third United States Infantry, who had been left in command at Fort Hull, proceeded west to a point opposite Tuckabahchi Old Fields and, erected in January, 1814 Fort Decatur on a high bluff of the Tallapoosa River near a place now known as Milledge. The location is where the Western of Alabama Railway runs very near the River. The embankments and earthworks of Fort Decatur are today as intact as when thrown up. The site is marked with a boulder which has been superimposed with a tablet, erected by the Alabama Anthropological Society, and dedicated with auspicious exercises participated in officially by the States of Georgia and North Carolina. Fort Decatur was erected by troops of the Seventh North Carolina volunteers. President James Madison sent former Governor John Sevier, a veteran of the American Revolution and the hero of King's Mountain, to Fort Decatur in the Summer of 1815 as the boundary line commissioner to run the line between the Creek Nation and the Mississippi Territory in accordance with the Treaty of Fort Jackson. General Sevier died the day after his arrival and his remains were at this place until they were exhumed and carried back to Knoxville in 1888.

Other Georgians who participated in the engagement at Calebee included Captain William Butler, a native of Virginia, but who had served in the Georgia Legislature, and Captain James Saffold, who commanded a company of artillery connected with the outfit of Major William McIntosh. The Saffold family has been long prominent in Alabama State history. Captain William Butler was killed in an Indian uprising in 1818 within the territory of a present day Alabama County which bears his name.

## CANAAN BAPTIST CHURCH

### Oldest Church in Jefferson County

*By*

*Bess Stout Lambert*

Old Canaan Baptist church, founded September 5, 1818, may well be called the mother church of the Baptist denomination in Jefferson County. This church was located near old Jonesboro when it was first organized. It has been moved many times since. The congregation has had its ups and downs but it still has a fine congregation, a well- organized Sunday school and all the departments of Christian service are alive and flourishing.

This church was organized sixty-eight years before the founding of Bessemer and for a long time was located just inside Cedar Hill Cemetery in Bessemer. Many of the first graves in Bessemer were located in the church yard.

Brothers Speer and Duncan were the first deacons. The church in that sparsely settled country had less than thirty members. Reverend John Henry was the first pastor. He was called May second, 1819, and served until June 22, 1822. Then Reverend Hosea Holcomb served from July, 1822, until December 3, 1834. During his term as pastor the membership increased and the church was extended.

Members got permission to start new churches at Rock Creek, Elyton and Rupee Valley. Then a helping hand was given to Rhuhama and a little later a new church was begun near Thomas Spring in September, 1825. There were a number of Negro slaves who were received as members and a few Indians.

In March, 1827, Canaan was received into the Mount Zion Baptist Association. Then in 1833 Canaan withdrew to help sister churches for a new association. The church was served from 1837 to 1847 by two pastors, Reverend Willie Burrus and Reverend John Lansing.

It is interesting to note that the first missionary funds were collected in 1847. This was the year that the membership dwindled from 105 to just 29.

When H. G. Smith became pastor in 1850 the church was moved to Shades Creek. James P. Massey was the first treasurer of Canaan Church. The church history records show that the pioneers were even as humanity is now for the early members were disciplined for such sins as: dishonesty, dancing, lying, profanity, drunkenness, adultery, fornication and failure to attend church.

The new church building at Morgan was dedicated in May, 1906 when W. S. Harrison was pastor. In 1910, Lacey's Chapel was organized with Mr. and Mrs. Vester Gables, Mr. and Mrs. W. J. Sims and Mary Nolan.

The early roster bears the names of Drennan, Calfee, Moses, Pearson, Hogg, McMath, Buck, Janes, Davis, Garrett, Rolin, Mackcock, Wood, Harwood, and Hathcock.

This wonderful church, which started with fewer than 30 members in 1818, still carries on. Strange things have come to pass, wars, floods, disasters of many sorts and degrees. But still its spires waft the prayers of the goodly up into the blue ether and seem as fingers pointing the way to . . . GOD.

**MARTIN MARSHALL'S BOOK: HERB MEDICINE\***

(Continued from *The Alabama Historical Quarterly*, Fall Issue, 1940)

*Edited by Weymouth T. Jordan<sup>1</sup>*

**Fever Weed, or fever Grass—**

Take one handful of this grass, Boil it slow and constant in one quart of water until one third is evaporated—Then take out the grass and cool the tea—Give one half pint every Ten minutes until it pukes, drink water, it works sufficiently—After the medicine has operated there is no danger in taking common diet—Drink Soup or geel (?) plentifully with little salt to make it palatable.

**Agrimony—**

Grows on high land from one to two feet high—blossoms in July on long spikes—Yellow.

In tea it forms a good drink in fevers. The juice of this plant, or a strong infusion of the roots, two handfulls to a quart of boiling water, and sweetened with honey, is an excellent medicine in the Jaundice, Scurvy, & habitual diarrhea or looseness—

Dose of the infusion, half a pint; of the juice a wineglassfull three times a day. The herb has been ap(p)lied externally to fresh wounds; and is said to be good to prevent mortification—

**Black Alder—**

The bark is tonic, and accordingly is used in substance or in strong decoction, like the Peruvian bark in intermittents, & other cases of debility, as Dropsy, Jaundice, Gangrene, etc. The inner bark in poultice externally, with the deco(c)tion internally, is celebrated as of admirable use in arresting the progress of mortification.

---

\* Research for this study was made possible through a grant-in-aid of the Social Science Research Council.

1. See the editor's "Martin Marshall's Book: Introduction," *The Alabama Historical Quarterly* (Summer Issue, 1940), 158-168, for his description of the material being used in this series of articles. See also his "Martin Marshall's Book: Household Hints," in *ibid.* (Fall Issue, 1940), 318-330.

**Angelica.**

Every part of this useful vegetable partakes of its aromatic virtues, but especially the root, which in the form of powder, tincture of tea, is useful in flatulent colics—Conjoined with Dogwood bark, or any other tonic, it may, like the Peruvian bark, be employed with advantage in intermittent and low stages of fever—

The dose, one teaspoonful, in substance, of the former, to two of the latter.

It may also be employed in the form of a strong decoction, in doses of a gill, or in cold phlegmatic habits, in tincture, either alone, or with dogwood berries, century, lemon peel, or any other article of the bitter & tonic class.

A strong decoction of the root, combined with red oak bark, a large handful of each to a pint of boiling water, makes an admirable gargle for relaxed and spongy, and ulcerated sore throats.

**Arrow root—**

A table spoonful make(s) a pint of the finest jelly in nature, which afford(s) the most nutritious food in acute diseases for children.

To persons labouring under bowel complaints, as diarrhea and dysentery, it is of itself a remedy. The jelly is made in the following manner—To a table spoonful of the powdered root, add as much cold water as will make it into a thin paste, then pour on boiling water through the spout of a kettle, stir(r)ing it at the same time briskly, till it becomes a clear jelly; after which season it with sugar & nutmeg, & to render it still more palatable, a little wine or lemon juice may be added. But to children, blending it with new milk is best.

**Bayberry.**

Called also Dwarf Candelberry Myrtle, grows in low grounds to the height of two or three-feet, and numerous green berries, of which tallow is made—the leaves are of a deep green. The bark of the root has been considered a good remedy for the jaundice. The powder of it, in doses of 20 or 30 grains, has been employed as a mild emetic. The inner bark, in poultice, ap(p)lied morning & evening to scrophulous swellings, and drinking a teacupful of a strong infusion of the leaves, is said to have wrought surprising cures in a few weeks.

**Bearberry,**

Bears whortleberry—wild cranberry. Is a low evergreen shrub, somewhat resembling the myrtle. The leaves have a bitter astringent taste, & unquestionably possess greater medical virtues, especially in relieving the irritation of the stone, gravel, & old cases of gonnorrhea, menstrual discharges, also catarrhs and consumptions.

The Dose—half a pint twice or thrice a day of a decoction made of the leaves, a handfull to a pint, or a teaspoonful in substance, two or three times a day.

**Benne.**

The leaves by infusion afford an excellent mucilaginous drink, which is used with advantage in dysentery, diarrhea, and . . . Colics in infant.

**Dewberry**

The roots are famous as an astringent. Two handfulls of the clear roots in three pints of milk or water boiled to a quart, and given in doses of a tea cupful every two or three hours, has often cured obstinate diarrhea and dysentery, when the best medicines of the shop had failed—

**Button Snakeroot—**

This root is a powerful sudorific; but in cases of gangrene and foul ulcers, is perhaps superior to any thing yet discovered. The mode of applying it, is in the form of poultice, by boiling it soft. The root boiled in sweet milk, is said to be a good remedy against the bite of a snake.

**Burdock.**

The juice of the fresh leaves, or an infusion or decoction of the roots, operates greatly on the bowells, sweetens the blood, promotes sweat & urine, and is esteemed serviceable in scorbutic, rheumatic, and venereal disorders. The juice is given in doses of of a wine glassful, and the decoction half a pint three times a day.

**Calimus, or sweet flag—**

The root possesses stomachic virtues, and is frequently grated in water, & given to children for flatulent colics, free of fever. It is sometimes used as an ingredient with dogwood, cherry bark, centuary etc. in morning bitters, as a prevention of the ague in low marshy Situations.

**Caraway.**

A choice aromatic—grows kindly in our gardens. The seeds assist digestion, strengthen the stomach, & are serviceable in flatulent colics.

The dose of the seeds in powder, from one to two tea spoonfuls to adults.

**Centuary.**

Is a fine stomachic bitter

**Cammomile.**

Is good in complaints of the stomach arising from debility. In form of fomentation & poultice, it is serviceable in discussing hard tumors.

**Cherry Tree.**

The bark of the wild cherry tree is an excellent tonic. It may be employed either in powder or decoction in the same doses as peruvian bark. A strong infusion of it in sound cider is said to be useful in the jaundice. A decoction of the bark will be found a good wash to ill conditioned ulcers

Red Chickweed, is a specific in the hydrophobia, or bite of a mad dog. The dose for an adult is a small tablespoonfull of the dried leaves in powder. For beasts the dose is much larger. Also called red pimpernel.

**Cinquefoil.**

The whole of the plant, particularly the root, in the form of decoction, a handful to a quart of water, or milk, boiled slowly, & sweetened with loaf sugar, is recommended for dysentery and bowel complaints—The dose for adults is a teacupful three or four times a day, and one third or half the quantity for children—

**Comprey.**

A handful of the roots boiled in milk, & given in doses of a teacupful three or four times a day, is a popular remedy for dysentery, bowel complaints, & the flour albus or whites. It is also beneficial as a diet drink in venereal disease, or in cases attended with a burning heat in making water.



**Coriander.**

The seeds are warm, & . . . pleasant flavour, & in doses from a tea, to a table spoonful, have been found useful in cases of indigestion, and flatulence.

When mixed with Lenna, they more effectually correct the odour & taste of the infusion, than any other aromatic. They also form an excellent addition to ingredients for bitters.

**Devils Bit.**

The root of this plant is a very pungent bitter, & is employed as a tonic, either in the form of tincture or infusion. In this last form it has also been employed as a vermifuge.

**Dill.**

Flourishes in our gardens, producing seeds delightfully aromatic, which, in doses of one to two teaspoonfuls, are excellent to remove flatulent colics, and assist digestion.

**Dogwood.**

The bark of this famous tree possesses tonic powers, which gives it control over intermittents, gangrene, & all diseases proceeding from debility. Like the peruvian bark, but in somewhat larger doses, it may be used in substance or decoction, infusion or tincture, either alone or conjoined with snakeroot, or some of the aromatics. But the shape in which it will be found most agreeable, is that of an extract, which is easily prepared by boiling the bark, straining it, & then evaporating it very slowly to the consistence of honey. To prevent the fatal effects of burning it, the vessel in which it is evaporated, should be of the wide mouth sort, placed in a large pot of water, and often stir(r)ed toward the close of the operation. The dose is from half to a whole teaspoonful, three or four times a day—

The beautiful red berries of dogwood, combined with lemon peel, snake root, calimus, or any other warm aromatic seeds, form a fine bitter against the common fall complaints.

**Elder, Common.**

Grows to the height of a small tree, in hedges, and along the borders of meadows: the young shoots are full of pith, and the old stalks empty; flowers in July, & the berries of a blackish purple colour when ripe.

The expressed juice of the elder berries put into a plate, or wide mouth vessel, & evaporated in the sun to the state of extract, in doses from a tea to a table spoonful, acts as a good asperient medicine.

A tea made of the leaves, a large handful to a quart of boiling water, & taken freely, removes a costive habit, promotes perspiration, & thus proves useful in eruptions of the skin, St. Anthony's fire, colds, dropsies, and all obstructions of the viscera.

The inner green bark, steeped in wine a large handful to a pint, or made into a strong decoction, purges gently, in doses of a gill—repeat if necessary. The flours (*sic*) form a good tea in fevers, and the flours (*sic*), leaves, or inner bark stewed with lard, form a good ointment for burns.

#### **Elicampane.**

Grows three or four feet high, flours (*sic*) large and yellow, in July & August; and the root when dry, has an agreeable aromatic smell, and in a decoction sweetened with honey, or in the form of syrup, or a teaspoonful of the powdered root, is recommended for promoting expectoration in the asthma & coughs. The fresh root, in ointment, or strong decoction, is said to cure the Itch.

A syrup made of equal parts of Elicampane root & hoarhound leaves, with honey; a teaspoonful three times a day, is said to have cured a cough, when the patient was supposed to be in consumption—

#### **Carrot, wild—**

The wild carrot grows two or three feet high in meadows and pastures, and flowers in July. The seeds have an agreeable aromatic smell and in a slight degree, a warm pungent taste.

Half a handful of the leaves or seeds infused in a pint of warm water, and taken in doses of a teacupful every hour or two, gives relief in suppression of urine, and is also serviceable in promoting the menses—

The roots of the Carrot cultivated in our Gardens, beaten to a pulp, form an excellent application to cancerous & other ill conditioned sores—

An infusion of these roots has also been found useful in gravel complaints.

**Elm. Slippery—**

A teaspoonful of the inner bark in powder to a pint of boiling water, forms a rich jelly, which is good in diarrhea and dysentery—With the addition of a little sugar, lemon juice, or nutmeg, it might be used as a substitute for arrowroot, or sago—

**Featherfew, or Feverfew.**

It is frequently cultivated in gardens. A handful of the leaves & tops infused in a quart of water and given in doses of a tea cupful three or four times a day, is useful to promote the menses, to Strengthen the stomach, to raise the spirits, and to promote perspiration in colds and fevers—

**Fennel. . Sweet—**

A tea spoonful of the seeds with a little sugar & Spirits, is remedy in flatulent colics—To children afflicted with colic, an infusion of the Seeds sweetened is highly serviceable.

**Fig Tree.**

A decoction of figs makes an excellent gargle for cleansing the throat or mouth, and the fruit, externally applied to tumors, or gum biles, is good to promote suppuration. When unripe, figs, as well as the whole tree, yield an acrid milky juice, which externally applied is a mild caustic, and is used to remove warts, ring and tetter worms—

**Flaxseed.**

Possess great medicinal virtues. In infusion, tea, or syrup with honey—Useful for coughs, colds, diseases of the breast and lungs—Ochra possesses similar virtues—

**Garlic, Common.**

Is highly stimulating, & therefore used to persons of cold phlegmatic constitution.

**Butterfly weed, or Pleurisy Root—**

The Flowers are of a bright orange colour and appear in June and July: The root is spindle or carrot shaped, of a light brownish colour on the outside, white within—Good in violent colds and pleurisies. No medicine is better calculated . . . to produce general and plentiful perspiration without heating the body—

A teacupfull of a strong tea made of the root may be taken every 15 or 20 minutes, in violent cases, until a free perspiration is raised, after which, a sufficient quantity Should be given at intervals as the case may require to keep a gentle perspiration. Of the root finely powdered, from  $\frac{1}{3}$  to  $\frac{1}{2}$  a teaspoonful in a cup of warm water, may be given every two hours, to keep up a gentle perspiration—The powder of the dried root should be kept for use when needed—

### **Heart Snake root—**

Commonly called heart leaves, well-known—The juice of the root and leaf pounded together in dose of a tablespoonful for an adult, is an active and safe emetic.

Hops in form of fomentation & poultice serve as a most valuable application to ill-conditioned ulcers, or painful cancerous sores.

### **Horse radish.**

It has long been known to be a powerful antiscorbatic, & when taken freely, it stimulates the nervous system, promotes urine, & perspiration, and is thereby usefully employed in palsy, dropsy, scurvy, & chronic rheumatism. The root should be cut into small pieces, without bruising, & swallowed in the dose of a table spoonful without chewing, once or twice a day, or it may be steeped in wine, & taken in doses of a small wine glassful.

In form of sugar, it is said to be excellent in hoarseness, or in the decline of violent colds and pleurisies whether externally or internally employed it proves a stimulant; hence it has been found serviceable by chewing it in palsy of the tongue, & applied in paralytic complaints to affected parts. It is said, the root steeped in vinegar, will remove freckles of the face; if so, it deserves to be tried in cases of Ring & tetter worm.

### **Hyssop,**

Is cultivated in our gardens. An infusion of the leaves, Sweetened with honey, or in honey, or in the form of syrup, is useful in humorous asthma, coughs, & other disorders of the breast and lungs, accompanied with inflammatory symptoms. A tea of the Hyssop is frequently taken to promote perspiration and Sweat—

**Ice plant.**

Grows in the woods to the height, of . . . six inches, and becomes white in September; . . . the stalk & leaves are like frozen jelly, and when handled, dissolves as ice. The root pulverized, in doses of a half or teaspoonful, in the morning, is said to be a good remedy for children troubled with the fits. Adults may take it in much larger doses.

**Indian physic, or American Ipecacuanha.**

Grows about two to three feet high, in low woods and meadows. The root, which is the part made use of, is said to be a safe and efficacious Emetic. It is said to be equal, if not superior (to) the imported Ipecacuanha. In the dose of thirty to forty grains in powder for an adult, it (is) one of the most safe and certain emetics. In broken doses of five or six grains, every two hours, it is equally valuable as a sudorific. It may also be given in infusion, a handful to a pint of boiling water, of which a small teacupfull may be taken every fifteen or twenty minutes, until it promotes vomiting—

A pamphlet was written on the virtues of this plant, by Colo. Bird, of Virginia—

**Indian Turnip.**

Grows in meadows and swamps, six or eight inches high, purple stalks, leaves three in number, roundish, or heart shaped, and berries of a bright scarlet colour. It is a very acrid plant. An ointment prepared by simmering the fresh root in hog's lard, and one eighth part wax, is said to be a good application in the scald head. It is said that the recent root, boiled in milk, has been advantageously employed in cases of consumption. It is also recommended in the asthma, & (w)hooping cough, in the form of conserve, made of a pound of the peeled root pounded finely in a mortar, with three pounds of loaf sugar; dose, a teaspoonful twice or thrice a day.

**Mandrake, or May apple.**

Grows in low grounds, one to two feet high, leaves generally three, broad at the base, and terminating in a sharp point; flowers yellow; the fruit resembling a lime, or small yellow apple, which is much admired by some. The root is an excellent purgative, and may be taken in doses from ten to thirty grains in substance, or

double the quantity infused in a gill of water—Equal parts of the juice and molasses may be mixed, and a table spoonful taken every hour or two until it operates.

The best time for gathering the mandrake root, is in autumn when the leaves have turned yellow. Dry it in the shade, & powder it for use.

#### **Marsh Mallow—**

Grows in marshes & wet places. The leaves have a soft woolly surface feelinly (*sic*) like velvet. The flowers are of a white or pale flesh colour, and appear in August. Every part of the marsh mallow, & especially the root, when boiled, yields a copious mucilage; on account of which it is employed in emolient cataplasms or poultices, for softening & maturing hard tumors. It is likewise of eminent service in the form of infusion, in asthma, ho(a)rse-ness, dysentery and gravel.

Mistleto(e), is found on several kinds of trees. That which grows on the oak is said to have cured epilepsy or fits. It is directed that the mistleto(e) be separated from the oak, about the last of November, gradually dried, & when pulverized, confined in a bottle well corked; to be given in doses of a tea spoonful three or four times a day, gradually increasing the dose according to its effects—

#### **Milk, or Silk weed—**

Grows on sandy ground, about three feet high; the Stalks square; leaves oval and milky; flowers yellow, which terminate in a pod resembling a cucumber, filled with down, which when ripe, is blown away.

A handful of the root boiled . . . slowly in a quart of water for half an hour & given in doses of a gill or more three or four times a day, is reputed to be an effectual remedy in the cure of dropsy, & serviceable in catarrhs, scrophulous & rheumatic diseases, & gravel complaints—

#### **Mcuth root, or Golden thread.**

Is found in swamps. The stems erect & naked; the leaves grow by threes (at the) termination of the stems; the white solitary blossoms appear in May; the roots are thread shaped, & of a bright yellow colour, & possess considerable astringency & bitterness.

The root is employed as a remedy for the thrush & cancerous sores in the mouths of children.

**Mullen.**

The leaves, a handful to a quart of milk, is (*sic*) a common remedy in bowel complaints.

In form of fomentation or poultice, it is employed to relieve the piles, & other painful swellings; and in a dry & pulverized state, to destroy fungous or proud flesh.

**Onions.**

Possess similar virtues with the garlic, only in a less degree. The disagreeable smell which they impart to the breath may be effectively obviated by eating a few leave(s) of parsley immediately after the onions. Onions are justly reputed an efficacious remedy in suppression of urine, in dropsies, & in abcess of the liver, when freely eaten.

**Peach Tree.**

Both the flowers and leaves are excellent cathartics, & ought to be preserved by every family. A teaspoonful of a strong infusion, sweetened, and taken every hour or two, will operate mildly on the bowells, without griping as Sennadoes. Of the syrup prepared by boiling slowly the juice of the leaves, with nearly an equal quantity of molasses, honey, or sugar, a table spoonful to children, & a wine glassful to adults, will prove a mild laxative medicine. A decoction, prepared by boiling a handful of the dried leaves in a squart of water to a pint and a half, and taken in doses of a teacupful every two or three hours, is reputed, upon respectable authority, to have proved an effectual remedy in many cases of affections of the kidneys or gravel complaints, as also in cases of voiding blood by urine, which has resisted the usual remedies.

**Pennyroyal**

An infusion, a handful to a quart of boiling water, a teacupful the dose three times a day, has long been esteemed in hy(s)teric complaints, and obstruction of the menses.

**Peppermint.**

Is an excellent stomachic in flatulent colics, languors, hysteric cases, and vomiting. The usual modes of administering it, are

infusion, the distilled water, and the essential oil. This last, united with rectified Spirits of wine, forms the essence of peppermint, is highly esteemed. In nausea, cholera morbus, obstinate vomiting & griping, peppermint, infused in spirit, and applied as hot as can be endured to the stomach & bowels, will be found a most valuable remedy.

**Pepper, Red or cayenne—**

Is beneficial in chronic rheumatism, flatulence violent pain or cramp of the stomach, gargle in putrid sore throats etc.—

**Pinkroot.**

Is deservedly esteemed a vermifuge. An infusion, a handful to a quart of boiling water, and one or two tea cupfuls night & morning, is the usual form & dose. With the addition of milk & sugar children will readily take it. It sometimes occasions disagreeable affections of the eyes; when this occurs, suspend the use of the medicine until these symptoms disappear, and then select from another parcel, or make tea of the tops only, as it is supposed the deleterious effects are in consequence of some other root being attached to it.

**Polypody.**

Grows at the roots of trees, and on the limbs—flourishes from June to October. An infusion of the leaves is a promoter of the menses, and will cause abortion, and should be used with caution. It is said that a powder of the leaves is a styptic; and when sprinkled on a fresh wound, will stop the bleeding—

**Pomegranate, Cultivated in our gardens.**

Its rind boiled in milk, & drank freely, or in powder, a tea-spoonful for a dose, three times a day, has been used with success in diarrheas, dysenteries, & other diseases requiring astringent medicine. The flowers possess the virtues of the rind, only in a less degree.

**Prickly Ash, & Prickly yellow wood.**

Possess the same virtues. Both species are covered with numerous prickles, whence the name. Both the bark & berry are of a hot acrid taste, and when chewed, powerfully promote spittle. It is used in this way to cure the toothache, as well as by putting some within the hollow. Also to cure the palsy of the tongue. A decoction, or infusion of the bark of the root, a small handful



to a quart of boiling water, in doses of half a pint three or four times a day, has been employed with great success in chronic rheumatism, paralytic affections, & venereal disease. There is no medicine which I have found so effectual in relieving nocturnal pains, and disposing venereal ulcers to heal, as the prickly ash in the above forms and doses.

A tincture, prepared by steeping half a pint of the berries, or a handful of the bark in a bottle of spirits, is much esteemed as a remedy in doses of a wine glassful in flatulent colics. It is sometimes employed in this form, in cold phlegmatic habits, afflicted with rheumatism—

#### **Pride of India, or China.**

A decoction made by boiling a large handful of the fresh bark of the root in three pints of water to nearly a quart, and given to children in doses from half to a whole wine glassful, sweetened, is an admirable vermifuge. The vessel in which it is boiled, must not be covered. In the year 1817, I had a negro child about six years & six months old, which appeared at the point of dying. I gave her the above decoction, and within twenty-four hours she discharged Two hundred and ninety-eight worms, from four to six inches: the child recovered, and has since then, generally enjoyed good health.

Samson Snake root, possesses in a very great degree tonic powers; it relieves in dyspepsia, or indigestion, and is useful in diarrhea or dysentery. Steep a handful of the roots in a bottle of spirits, and take half a wine glass diluted with water three time(s) a day—or boil of the roots in water, & take a wine glassful occasionally to promote perspiration. I have received much benefit from chewing and swallowing the root—It grows from six to twelve inches high, on dry land, & bears on the top two or three pale blue flowers; L(e)aves opposite, nearly round; the roots white, from four to eight inches long, from two to four or five to each stalk, and has an agreeable bitter taste—

#### **Sassafras.**

An infusion, or tea of the flowers, or bark of the root, has often been successfully given as a sweetener or purifier of the blood, in scorbutic, venereal, & cutaneous disorders, or where an acrimony of the fluids prevails. Conjoined with the bark of dog-

wood, Cherry tree, or oak, it is very useful in obstinate intermittents. The oil, externally applied in chronic rheumatism, and also in wens, has often proved salutary. The pith of the small twigs, in water, form a mucilage of excellent use for sore eyes, and as an injection in the incipient stage of gonorrhea. It also affords, when sweetened, with the addition of nutmeg, a palatable Jelly, useful in dysentery and febrile diseases—

### **Senna.**

It has long been employed as a purgative. To increase its effects on the bowels, manna, salts, or tamarinds are generally added. To correct its ill flavour, & prevent griping it should be joined with some aromatic, as coriander or fennel seed, ginger, etc. In the form of decoction, a handful to a pint of water, the dose is a teacupfull every hour or two, until it operates.

It may also be exhibited in form of tincture, to relieve flatu(lent) colics, four ounces of Senna to a quart of spirits, with an ounce of coriander seed, or ginger, and a wine glassful the dose.

### **Skunk Cabbage.**

Grows in swamps and meadows, & emits a disagreeable smell, nearly resembling that of a skunk or polecat, & from this, & its leaves resembling those of a cabbage, it has acquired its name. The roots dried & powdered, has proved of excellent use in asthmatic cases, & often afforded relief in this distressing disease, when other means were ineffectual. It should be exhibited during the paroxysm, & repeated as circumstances may require, in doses of 30 to 40 grains. It will be proper to persevere in the use of it for some time after the paroxysm has gone off, until the patient has perfectly recovered.

In one of the most violent asthmatic cases, two teaspoonfuls of the powdered root in spirits, procured immediate relief, & on repeating the trials with the same patient it afforded more lasting benefit than any other medicine. In numerous other instances of spasm, & also in chronic & acute rheumatism, & dropsy, in powder or decoction, it has performed important cures. The seeds possess the same virtue with the root—It has no stalk—

### **Tansy.**

This plant possesses a warm bitter taste, and may be used as a substitute for hops. An infusion of the leaves is recommended

for a weak stomach, hysteric complaints, and obstructed menses— It is said that the seeds are an excellent vermifuge, in doses from a struple to a drachm.

#### **Unicorn Root—**

Grows in flat pinewoods about eight or ten inches high; leaves partly spearshaped, lying on the ground, and are green all the winter. The flowers grow on the stalk nearly from the ground, which hang down at the top when fully blown; the root is whitish, full of small fibres, about the thickness of the end of the little finger, & crooked at the end.

The powdered root, in doses from a half to a tea spoonful, is said to afford relief in hysterics, and flatulent or wind colic. A large handful of the root steeped in a quart of spirits, in doses of a wine glassful three times a day, is highly esteemed by some as a valuable remedy in chronic rheumatism. The dose should be regulated so as to keep the body moderately laxative—

#### **Yarrow. Cultivated in our gardens—**

A handful of the tops of yarrow infused in a quart of boiling water, in doses of a teacupful three or four times a day, is reputed as a valuable medicine in dysentery, bloody urine, bleeding piles, & restraining immoderate flow of the menses. A table spoonful of the expressed juice taken twice a day, and the herb bruised, or in the form of poultice, is said to have cured a cancer of the breast. The green leaves pounded, and applied over a bruise, dissipates it in a few days.

#### **Sumach, Common, or white.**

The berries or seeds, when ripe, are red & very acid. An infusion of them, sweetened with honey, is a good gargle for the sore throat, & for cleansing the mouth in putrid fevers.

The bark of the root Sumach has been considered to be one of the best antiseptics produced by vegetation. Corroding ulcers, defying every common application, immediately began to heal by washing them with a strong decoction, and applying the boiled bark as a poultice. It is a very important material in decoction for hectic and scrofulous diseases. It constitutes one of the ingredients in the following remedy for the venereal disease.

Of the inner bark of pine, and slippery elm, and the bark of the root of sumach, take each one pound, boil them in a gallon of water to three quarts, drink half a pint three times a day; if costiveness is produced, a dose of salts may be used. If there be ulcers, they are to be washed with the decoction made warm. The detergent effects will appear in a very short time. Abstinence from too much stimulants will accelerate the cure.

This remedy is one of Heaven's best mercies to offending man, and instances can be produced of the effects of it, which would stagger credulity. Mercury and nitric acid, have failed, but this has never been known to fail when properly applied. It is, moreover, a fine application in dysenteric affections.

Boneset is sudorific, tonic, antiseptic, cathartic, emetic, stimulant, etc. It is an intense bitter tonic, possessing very active powers. In large doses, the warm decoction proves emetic, and a cold infusion acts as a powerful tonic. It is also said to act with much effect upon the skin, removing obstinate cutaneous diseases. Large doses of the cold infusion often operate as a cathartic.

It is likewise said to be an antidote to the bite of snakes; and an excellent remedy for bilious (*sic*) colic attended with obstinate constipation of the bowels. For this purpose, a tea cupful of the cold infusion must be given every half hour until it produces a cathartic effect.

The warm infusion acts as a sudorific, producing copious perspiration. It is also an excellent article for coughs; and is likewise used in hysterical complaints. In dropsical complaints it is employed as a diuretic. The leaves on the part of the plant which is used for medicinal purposes, of which the extract and syrup contain all the medicinal properties, and are least disagreeable to the taste.

#### **Rhubarb—**

That which is raised in our Gardens, if allowed to attain the age of Six, eight, or ten years, is said to be equally good or better than the imported.

## WINTER ISSUE, 1940

Rhubarb is a fine mild and tonic purge, very useful in bowel complaints, as it has a tendency to leave the bowels in a costive state; it should therefore never be used in costive habits. Dose from one to two teaspoons full.

A very elegant & pleasant medicine for children may be made by scorching or rather roasting, but not burning, pulverized rhubarb, and putting about one ounce to a pint of brandy, with enough essence of cinnamon to give it a good flavor, and then sweetening very sweet with loaf sugar. This, in a teaspoonful or larger doses, is a very valuable remedy for all bowel complaints.

### **Worm Seed. Jerusalem oak seed—**

Worm seed is one of the oldest and most common anthelmintics, especially in the lumbrice of children. On account of their essential oil, they are heating and stimulating. They are given to children to the extent of ten grains, or  $\frac{1}{2}$  a drachm, finely powdered, & stewed on bread & butter; or made into an electuary with honey or treach, or candied with sugar; or diffused through milk, & taken in the morning when the stomach is empty. After they have been used for some days, it is customary to give a cathartic; or they are combined from the beginning with rhubarb, Jalap, or calomel—The above dose is rather too small—

LETTER FROM JEFFERSON DAVIS TO GENERAL  
BEAUREGARD.

(The following letter from President Jefferson Davis, to General G. L. Beauregard, is of peculiar interest in that it shows a personal warmth and appreciation not always ascribed to Mr. Davis by writers. This rare letter is printed with the permission of the owner, Mr. Charles Dobbins, Editor of the Anniston Star.)

Richmond, Va.

Oct. 16, 1861

My dear Genl.

Enclosed you will find a letter and slip referred to in it, also another slip derived from a different and as supposed friendly source. You will be able better than myself to judge of the value or importance of the matter contained in these papers.

A man has been sent up to confer with Genl. Johnston and yourself in relation to the preparation of winter quarters and the employment of negroes in the construction of a line of intrenchment. The Secty of State commended him as a man of great capacity for such work.

I have thought often upon the questions of reorganization which were submitted to you and it has seemed to me that whether in view of disease, or the disappointment and suffering of a winter cantonement on a line of defence or of a battle to be fought in and near your position, that it was desirable to combine the troops by a new distribution with as little delay as practicable. Your army is composed of men of intelligence and future expectations.

They will be stimulated to extraordinary effort when so organized that the fame of their state will be in their keeping and that each will feel that his immediate commander will desire to exalt rather diminish his services. You pointed me to the fact that you had observed that rule in the case of the La. Ga. troops, and you will not fail to perceive that others find in the fact a reason for the like disposal of them. In the hour of sickness and

the tedium of waiting for spring men from the same region will best console and relieve each other. The maintenance of our cause rests on the sentiment of the people; letters from the camps complaining of inequality and harshness in the treatment of the men have already dulled the enthusiasm which filled our ranks with men who by birth, fortune, education and social position were the equals of any officer in the land. The spirit of our military law is manifested in the fact that the State organization was limited to the Regiment (.). The Vols. come in sufficient numbers to have Brigadiers but have only Colonels. It was not then intended 'tis the necessary conclusion, that those troops should be under the "immediate" command of officers above the grade of Colonel. The spirit of the law thus indicates that Brigades should be larger than customary the General being the remote commander of the individuals. Charged with the care, the direction, the preservation of the men rather than the internal police; he has time to visit hospitals, to inquire into supplies, to supervise where others must execute, and the men come to regard him when so habitually seen as the friend of the individual, but they also know him in another capacity and there removed, as it were placed on a pedestal, he seems the power that moves and controls the mass. This is not an ideal, but a sketch of Taylor when Genl. of the little army many of whom would no sooner have questioned his decisions or have shrunk from him in the hour of danger than if he had been their Father. The other point was the necessity for unity in the army of the Potomac. The embarrassment was felt and the sentiment of commanders appreciated, but rivalry running into jealousy is the unavoidable attendant of difference in the discipline, the usage and the supplies of Camps. How much more so must it be when corps are associated together with the inevitable diversity resulting from control by different minds and in which a reference is made to distinct antecedents which have never disappeared by a visible transition from the existence under independent heads. I have had applications made to me for transfers from one corps to another and among the reasons given was that the sick of one were permitted to go to hospital when under like circumstances they were in the other confined to their encampment.

Mr. Benjamin informed me that you had expressed the wish, in the event of your corps being made an undivided portion of the

army, to be relieved and sent to New Orleans. If I had thought you could be dispensed with it would have given me pleasure long since to have relieved the solicitude of the people of New Orleans by sending you there, but I cannot anticipate the time when it would seem to me proper to withdraw you from the position with which you are so intimately acquainted and for which you have shown yourself so eminently qualified. Nor have I felt that to another could be transferred the moral power you have over the troops you have commanded. My appreciation of you as a soldier and my regard for you as a man cannot permit me willingly to wound your sensibility or to diminish your sphere of usefulness.

Very truly your friend

Jefferson Davis

Genl. G. L. Beauregard.

(Eight-page letter owned by Charles G. Dobbins, Anniston, Ala.)



## ORIGINAL ANECDOTES ABOUT NAPOLEON BONAPARTE

*From Mobile Commercial Register, 1831*

(The following brief reprint from the Commercial Register (Mobile) of February 19, 1831, concludes the interview of Col. Nicholas Raoul, concerning Napoleon Bonaparte, under whom he served in the French army and who on the downfall of Napoleon came to Alabama with the Vine and Olive Colony, which settled Demopolis.)

COL. RAOUL.

Saturday morning Feb. 19, 1831.

Col. Raoul.—The extract in this morning's paper from the "Journal of an Officer," will be interesting to many of our readers, on account particularly of the individual who there figures prominently as the devoted friend and ardent admirer of Napoleon, whose regard and confidence he appears to have enjoyed, and whose fortunes he shared in the days of his adversity, as well as prosperity. As the author of the Journal expresses much interest for the welfare of his friend, we will add a brief history of him since they parted in Italy. Col. Raoul embarked, as the writer correctly understood, from Marseilles and arrived at New Orleans in the year 1818; and in 1819, he joined the distinguished French emigrants at Demopolis, in Alabama. In 1822 or 1823, he removed to Mobile, and resided here several years in reduced circumstances. In the Spring of 1825, he embarked from this Port on board a Columbian vessel bound for Carthagena, with the hope of obtaining military employment under the government of Columbia.

On his arrival at Carthagena, we were informed the state of political affairs in that Country, presented little prospect of success in the object of his visit, and he was induced by his friends to proceed to Central America, where the aid of an officer of his military experience was much required to conduct their troubled

affairs to a prosperous termination. Col. Raoul accordingly departed without even visiting Bogota, and in Central America he met with a flattering reception. He was immediately employed by the Government with a very handsome income but in a very short time after, in one of their intestine commotions, he was rather unaccountably found at the Head of what were termed the **Insurgent** forces against the Government, and actually approached within a few miles of the City of Guatemala, Here he felt a victim to treachery and was betrayed with his whole army into the hands of his enemies. He was thrown into prison, but finally set at liberty under an injunction to retire to private life, or leave the country, as late as the past summer, we understood he was residing in Guatemala, in slender pecuniary circumstances.

Colonel Raoul was the son of a Field Marshal in the Reign of Louis XVI and was educated in the Polytechnic School at Paris. He enjoyed the high respect of his countrymen here. We were personally acquainted with him, and know much of his history from himself. He is a man of polished manners, affable and intelligent, and bore the reputation of a finished Scholar.

Under the recent change of circumstances in his native country, it is not improbable that honors and distinction await his return.

## DIARY OF CAPTAIN EDWARD CRENSHAW OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES ARMY

(This issue of the Quarterly carries the final part of the diary of  
Captain Crenshaw.)

### Friday, 31st.

Clear and pleasant. No news to-day. Remained on board ship all day. Finished my quarterly returns to-day, and forwarded them.

### Saturday, April 1st.—

Clear and pleasant. Went to Richmond to day, and returned in the evening. No news to-day.

1865.

April,

### Sunday 2d.

Clear and beautiful. Heavy fighting around Petersburg. Capt. Holmes of the Marines and Lieuts. Gardner and Gregory of the Navy spent the day with us. In the evening we visited Capt. Butt of the "Nansemond." While we were on the "Nansemond," the Admiral signalled for the fleet to get under weigh and follow the motions of the flag ship. We returned on board the "Virginia," and found that Gen. Lee had met with a serious reverse and that Richmond was to be evacuated. We steamed up to the obstructions at Drewry's Bluff and anchored in them.

### Monday 3rd.—

Blew up and sunk the fleet (except the wooden gunboats) in the obstructions at Drewry's Bluff last night. The blowing up of the "Virginia" was the most magnificent sight I ever saw. We steamed to Richmond in the wooden gunboats and reached the city a little after sunrise, landed on the Manchester side (South side) and set fire to the wooden gunboats. We found all the government buildings, workshops, arsenals &c., and all the bridges in flames. The last of our troops had just passed through. The arsenals were burning, the magazines exploding, and shell bursting and flying through the air, and Richmond presented a sad and terrible sight, though a grand and sublime one. We marched to the Danville Depot, and gathering up some old cars and locomotives that had been left behind, we 'fired up' with pailings and

fence rails, and started for Danville a few minutes after 8 A. M. carrying with us besides our own command several hundred sick soldiers and straglers. Our locomotives being old and worn out we made very slow time. We reached Amelia Court House a few hours before sunset. We saw a good many straglers on the way. While we were taking on wood and water at Amelia Court House a few stragling cavalymen came rushing in in a great scare, crying "Yankees," "Yankees." Our men all got their arms ready, and the stragling soldiers on the train jumped off and ran into the woods. But no Yankees appeared, and soon about 100 Yankee prisoners under guards came down the road. We travelled all day and all night. All along the road we were told that Yankee Cavalry was within a few miles, but we saw no Yankees and met with no difficulty. My Sergeant of Marines deserted to day.

**Tuesday 4th.—**

We travelled all day. Met with no accident. Reached Danville in the night. Remained on the cars all night. All the officers were required to stand guard around the cars to keep our men together.

**Wednesday 5th—**

Admiral Semmes' command were organized into a brigade and put into the army. We were placed in charge of the batteries opposite Danville, on the North Side of the River Dan.

**Thursday 6th.—**

Slept in our new camp last night. No news from Gen. Lee yet. The President and Cabinet are in Danville. Every one seems to be very low-spirited.

**Friday, 7th.—**

Bad rumours from Gen. Lee. Rumours of a defeat to his army.

**Saturday 8th.—**

Captain Dennington with whom I am tenting is quite sick to day. No positive information from Gen. Lee. Our brigade has been organized into two regiments of five companies each. I am Adjutant of the 1st regiment and Lieut. Roberts of Marines is adjutant of the 2nd.

**Sunday 9th.—**

News came to-day that Gen. Lee had surrendered his whole army. The President and his cabinet are terribly demoralized. Every one seems to have given up completely.

1865.

April,

**Monday 10th.—**

I am very sick to day. The President and cabinet left Danville to-day.

**Tuesday 11th.—**

Many stragglers from Gen. Lee's army are passing through. No efforts whatever are being made to reorganize them. Was sent to the Hospital to-day.

**Wednesday, 12th.—**

We commenced falling back from Danville to day. Saw my brigade moving through the town from the Hospital window. Got one of the attendants to carry my baggage for me and walked down to the bridge and got into one of the ambulances of my brigade as they were crossing. I am very weak but the fever has left me, Capt. Dunnington is along and still quite sick.

**Thursday 13th.—**

We camped a few miles from Danville last night. Capt. Dunnington and I slept on the floor of a negro hut. The negro woman helped cook our rations for us. We were quite comfortable, considering that we were in a negro hut surrounded by negro children. We were sent to the Hospital in Greensborough to day. We reached Greensborough late in the evening the cars having travelled very slowly. We went to the Naval Store House and spreading our blankets on the floor spent the night along with several other Naval officers.

1865.

April,

**Friday 14th.—**

The President and Cabinet are in Greensborough and are terribly demoralized. They seem to have given up entirely and to be running for their lives. Gen. Johnston's army has evacuated Raleigh and is moving on this place and Charlotte. The Yankee Gen. Stoneman has cut the Rail Road between here and Charlotte. Saw Captain Tatnall, Lts. Graves and Thompson of the Marine Corps. They are stationed here.

**Saturday 15th.—**

Capt. Dunnington and I got an order from the Mallory yesterday to go wherever we pleased (or in other words to take care

of ourselves the best way we could) until we recovered and report to him at Charlotte or wherever the Government might be. All the Quartermaster's and Commissary Stores of the army and Navy are being distributed as they were in Danville. Another sign that our cause has now become hopeless. We staid with Lieut. Thomson in his room at a private house last night. We have been messing with the Marine mess since we came here. We are very kindly invited to-day by Dr. Dick (who was Chief Engineer of the Fredericksburg) to his mother's. She has a beautiful place, and we found her to be a very hospitable and kind old lady. She has two unmarried daughters living with her, the younger one being quite pretty. We got a barrel of flour and one of pork from the Navy Store house and sent them up to Mrs. Dick's. Mr. Dick's brother a lieutenant in Lee's army is also at home. We have a good comfortable room and I think we will soon recover now.

**Sunday 16th.—**

Gen. Johnston's army has commenced arriving, Admiral Semmes' brigade has not yet arrived from Danville, Capt. Dunnington has commenced to improve. I am still very weak. The President and Cabinet left for Charlotte on horse-back yesterday afternoon, except the Secre. of War who travels with the army. He was with Gen. Lee until he surrendered. Gen. Johnston's army is in very good condition, but I am afraid when they see the straglers from Gen. Lee's army and hear how our government is acting that they will become demoralized too. Capt. Dunnington and I intend to stay together until we get well and try to go through to Alabama together if the Government has broken up.

**Monday 17th.—**

Gen. Lee's youngest son Robert, my classmate at the University of Virginia, who escaped at the surrender of the army and came by way of Lynchburg reached here last Saturday and went to see the President and asked him what he must do. The President told him with tears in his eyes to go back to Virginia and give up. The stores are still being distributed. Saturday a part of Wheeler's Cavalry broke into some of the houses containing stores belonging to the Confederate States and the State of North Carolina, having run over the guard who were reserves, they were helping themselves when a detachment of Cook's and Lane's North Carolina gathering up deserters, were ordered up to disperse the cavalry. They fired on the cavalry killing and wounding several. The cavalry retreated threatening vengeance, but they did not

come back any more. Gov. Smith of Va. made a strong Southern speech Saturday counselling Guerilla warfare; but his speech was received with scarcely any demonstration of feeling at all. One drunken man got up a faint cheer.

**Tuesday 18th.—**

Many wild rumours afloat. Some say that Gen. Johnston is going to surrender his army. He has certainly gone out to have a meeting with Gen. Sherman. Every one seems to be impressed with the belief that the war is over. I am improving rapidly. Saw Dr. Carrington to day. We left him behind in Richmond, and he came out with Gen. Lee's army, and made his escape when it was surrendered.

**Wednesday 19th.—**

A most beautiful day. Read an Order from Gen. Johnston, saying that pending negotiations between the two governments the two armies would remain in 'statu quo', &c. Col. Holcombe of the 17th Ala. and Lt. McIntyre and Qr. Mr. Sergt. McClelland of the same regiment came to see me to day. Reliable information came to-day that President Lincoln had been killed and Mr. Seward and his son wounded in the theatre at Washington, supposed to be by some of Moseby's Men. I regret it very much and think it very unfortunate that it should have happened at this juncture. I am fully satisfied now that the war is about over. So after four years of bloodshed and sacrifice we are compelled to give up our high aspirations for a great and glorious Southern Confederacy, and will have to come back into the old Union. 'The ways of Providence are inscrutable' and I hope that it will prove for the best. Admiral Semmes' brigade has come up and is now encamped several miles from here. Several officers and many men deserted from the brigade on the march from Danville to this place. Two Lieutenants from our ship were among the number. We await coming events with anxious hearts.

**Thursday 20th.—**

No news to-day. I am still improving in health.

**Friday 21st.—**

No news to-day. Heard Gov. Vance and Gen. Walthall make short addresses this evening. They said that the war was over. Gov. Vance said that the Confederacy would yet be independent, and counselled the soldiers that when they were sent home to go home in a quiet and orderly manner and be good citizens &c. Their

speeches, though acknowledging that we had been compelled to give up and return into the Union, were rather encouraging than otherwise. They thought that we would come back into the Union and be just like we were before the war. I am afraid that they are rather too sanguine. I shall be very much surprised if we get such terms.

**Saturday 22d.**

Nothing new to-day. Every body expects to go home in ten days. I have been reading to day a very interesting life of Sir Humphry Davy. Since there is a prospect of peace, my mind has become very unsettled with regard to my plans for the future. I will first advise with my parents and friends and then hoping that kind Providence will direct me I will make my choice. Now when they are lost and gone I mourn bitterly over the mispent years of my youth. I am still young and if I will quit all my bad habits and worship God, He will aid me to become a great and noble man.

**Sunday 23rd.**

A beautiful day. No news of importance. Gen. Johnston made a speech last evening. He said that President Davis was trying to make a peace for us, and that the negotiations would be concluded in about 16 days &c.

**Monday 24th.—**

Clear and beautiful. Nothing reliable to day. We have concluded to go to Lexington to-morrow. Lieut. Thomson of Marines tried to persuade us to join his party and go through with him by land. He has a wagon and provisions in abundance, but as we did not know how things were going to turn out we could not accept his invitation, I have been reading for the last week — Heazlitt's Lectures on Poetry and a life of Sir Humphry Davy—and Addison's Spectator.

**Tuesday 25th.—**

Clear and beautiful. We went to the Depot at 9 A. M. and tried to go to Lexington, but after waiting until near 4 o'clock without being able to get off we returned. Gen. Sherman notified Gen. Johnston yesterday that hostilities would be resumed at 12 o'clock tomorrow. It is reported that Gen. Johnston went to meet Gen. Sherman this evening for the purpose of prolonging the armistice.



**April****Wednesday, 26th.**

An order has been issued for the army to commence falling back at 11 A. M. to day. Admiral Semmes moved his command into Greensboro' about 10 A. M. and as he passed Mrs. Dick's house, we joined him. We moved on nearly through town and were halted an hour or two in a beautiful grove. The remnant of my old regiment, the 17th Ala. was with us, under command of Lieut. Col. Holcombe. We received orders to go into camp in this grove that a further cessation of hostilities had been agreed upon. We selected a beautiful camp just beyond the suburbs of town and settled down quietly, anxiously awaiting the progress of events.

**Thursday, 27th.**

Gen. Johnston issued an order to day, announcing that an agreement had been entered into between himself and Gen. Sherman that the forces under his command were no longer to oppose the U. S. Armies, but were to be marched to their states and there disbanded, and to go to their homes, and there remain not to be disturbed in person or property, and that all public property would be turned over to officers appointed by Gen. Sherman to receive it &c. This step was considered necessary by the whole army. It being generally conceded that it was useless to protract the struggle any longer. Capt. Dunnington went to Lexington this evening to see his friend Mr. Scixas. Admiral Semmes has formed a party to go through to Ala. consisting of himself and son and two Marine Orderlies, Capt. Dunnington who is going to his brother's in Shelby County, Ala. Mr. Shippey who is going with Capt. Dunnington. Dr. Peck who lives in Greensborough, Ala., Capt. Wilson (with a servant) who will lead us in Geo to go to Florida, and myself. We have a good four horse wagon & four good mules, and plenty of provisions and forage, and will ride our own horses. We all got horses when we were organized into a brigade to serve with the army at Danville. Some of the horses were Gov't horses, and the Admiral pressed the others from private persons.

**April, Friday, 28.**

Remained in Camp all day. Nothing now. Saw Gen. Sherman's order announcing the agreement between himself and Gen. Johnston. It was a very conciliatory order.

**Saturday, 29th.**

Beautiful day. Gen. Sherman's officers and commissioners are expected in Greensboro' today. Went to the depot in the evening to hear the news and wonderful to tell the agent gave us a sack of corn to feed our horses with.

**Sunday, 30th.**

Gen. Sherman's officers are in Town. They are quartered in private houses throughout the city. Visited Mrs. Dick's family in the evening. Spent a few minutes very pleasantly with the young ladies.

**May. Monday 1st.**

We all received our parols to day. Our party left Greensborough at 2 P. M. and went to Jamestown, 11 miles & camped for the night.

**Tuesday, 2d.**

Went three miles beyond Lexington making 28 miles to day. Capt. Dunnington joins us at Lexington. Dined to day in company with Capt. Dunnington with Mr. Scixas at Lexington. Camped three miles beyond Lexington. Met a Dr. Dusenberry in Lexington, who was very kind and polite to us.

**Wednesday, 3rd.**

Took up our line of march at 6½ A. M. Crossed the Yadkin River on the Rail Road bridge. Passed through Salisbury where we stopped two or three hours to have some of our horses shod. While in Salisbury, I had a very severe chill and high fever. Had to ride in the wagon. Went 5 miles beyond Salisbury, and camped for the night, making 15 miles we travelled to day. Dr. Peck got me a nice bed in a widow Lady's house close to our camp.

**Thursday, 4th.**

Had a good night's rest, & feel considerably better. Started at 6¼ A. M. and went into camp at 4¼ P. M. on the roadside, having gone a distance of 27 miles. Rode on my horse all day, feeling quite well. Crossed the Catawba River at Beatty's Ford.

**May. Friday, 5th.**

Broke camp at 6:30 A.M. Capt. Dunnington, Midshipman Semmes, Boatswain Seymour, and myself stopped at a Blacksmith shop ½ mile beyond our camp for a couple of hours to have our horses shod. We had to ride briskly to overtake our party. I had a severe chill before we overtook the wagon, and was quite

sick. Our party had stopped for dinner at a beautiful little stream near an iron mill. We went on a few miles farther after dinner. I was quite sick all the evening. About  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles before we reached Lincolntown, our wagon turned over, the whole load falling on me mashing and smothering me some but frightening me much more. We patched up our wagon, and went on a few miles further to a good camping ground. Dr. Peck got me a good bed for the night in a house close by. Dr. Peck has been very kind and obliging to me since I have been sick. This part of North Carolina looks like portions of Alabama.

**Saturday, 6th.—**

I am a great deal better this morning. We sent our wagon into Lincolntown at day light this morning to have the broken wheels repaired. Our wagon returned in the evening. Dr. Peck went into town and got me some quinine. Gen. Hardee with a small party passed us this evening. His wife and daughter were with him.

**Sunday, 7th.—**

It was clear and beautiful part of the day, and the rest of the day was cloudy and gloomy. I slept in camp last night and rested very badly. We started this morning at 5:20 A.M. and passing through Lincolntown, marched 26 miles, going into camp at 3:20 P. M. We caught up with Gen. Hardee on the road. Missed my chill to day. Took a great deal of quinine last night and this morning. Felt badly all day. I have eat very little for the last two days. The Cavalry and infantry of Johnston's Army have commenced overtaking us.

**Monday, 8th.—**

Cloudy and pleasant. Started from Camp at 5:30 A. M. and passing through Shelby, crossed 1st 2d, and Main "Broad Rivers", —1st Broad R. on a bridge and fording the other two branches. We crossed Main Broad River at Island Ford, and camped on the South Bank at Mrs. Hick's two miles from the S. Carolina line, having marched 24 miles during the day. Rode in the wagon nearly all day. Felt very weak all day.

**Tuesday, 9th.**

Dr. Peck and I staid all night with Mrs. Hicks. We had an excellent supper and were treated very kindly for which Mrs. Hicks would not receive any remuneration. Broke camp at 5:40 P. M. Passed into South Carolina after a short ride. I begin to

feel much better since getting into South Carolina. The air and country seem better to me. Passed through Fingerville, where there is a cotton factory. The North branch of the Paclet River passes through this place. We crossed it on a large bridge. The country and inhabitants improve as we advance. I am gradually improving in strength and health. Our wagon broke down at 11:45 A. M. having gone a distance of 13 miles. We halted to have our wagon repaired and get dinner. Fingerville is 11 miles from Island Ford. So far the Roads in South Carolina have been very bad. Went into camp for the night as it took longer to mend our wagon than we expected.

**Wednesday 10th—**

Staid last night with Capt. Wilkins, a very clever and kind gentleman, living a quarter of a mile beyond our camp. Our party passed Capt. Wilkins' at 6 A.M. I remained behind one hour to get breakfast. Rode fast and overtook the wagon in a few hours. Crossed two branches of the Tiger River and passed through Gowansville. Camped on the Banks of Ennoree River at Cobble's Mill, having gone a distance of 27 miles during the day.

**Thursday, 11th.—**

Staid with Capt. Cobble last night. He is a kind and hospitable gentleman. Left Camp at 6 A. M. and reached Greenville at 11 A. M. where we remained until 1 P. M. having our wheels repaired. Crossed Ready River at Greenville, and still farther on the Saluda River. Went into Camp about ten miles from Greenville at Mr. Clyde's. Rained very hard in the evening. Cleared off however by sunset.

**Friday 12th—**

Staid with Mr. Clyde last night—a very kind gentleman and an old school mate of Dr. Peck's. Left camp at 6 A. M. Reached Pendleton at 1 P. M. A beautiful and delightful little village. The Admiral rode a mile or two in the country to see a friend of his. He left Capt. Dunnington in charge and told him to go on to Carnsville, Geo. and wait for him there. We will reach Carnsville to-morrow evening. We stopped in Pendleton about an hour for dinner and to rest our horses. I had a nice dinner at a Mr. Sloan's. Marched about 7 miles from town and crossed the Seneca River, and went into camp about 5 P. M. The country around Pendleton is rich and beautiful; the people are wealthy and aristocratic. It is by far the most desirable portion of South Carolina that we have seen. Marched 27 miles today.

**May—Saturday 13.**

Slept in Camp last night. Started from Camp at 6 P. M. Crossed Tugals River, the dividing line between South Carolina and Georgia. Went 12 miles into Georgia and went into camp having gone 25 miles to day. Passed through a small village called Fairplay to day. Midshipman Semmes had a chill to day.

**Sunday, 14.**

Beautiful day. Midshipman Semmes and I staid with a Mr. McFarlam last night. Started from Camp at 6:30 A.M. Passed through Carnesville, Geo. 32 miles from Athens, and went into camp about 4:30 P. M. having gone a distance of 25 miles. We passed through a very poor country to day. But this has been the case along our whole route with a few beautiful exceptions. The most beautiful country we passed through was that around Pendleton South Carolina. I am still weak from my recent illness but am slowly improving.

**May—Monday, 15.**

Slept in Camp last night. Stoneman's Raiders have been a few days ahead of us ever since we left Lincolntown North Carolina. They were in Athens when last heard from. They left Athens a few days ago. They have been robbing and plundering all along their march, even after the armistice and suspension of hostilities East of the Chattahoochee. They are principally Kentuckians and Tennesseans. We passed through Athens to day. Crossed the East and West Oconee. The East Branch runs through the East Edge of Athens, and the West Branch three miles from the West Side of the Town. Passed through Watkinsville, and camped for the night in the village of Farmington. We were treated very kindly by the people of the village. Midshipman Semmes and I staid all night with Mr. Anderson. We marched 25 miles to day. Mr. Shippey left us to day when we crossed the West Oconee, on his way to England, intending to go by Savannah & see his father.

**May—Tuesday 16.**

Beautiful day. Left camp at 5:45 A.M. Passed through the beautiful village of Madison 14 miles from Farmington, 7 miles from Madison my horse took sick with colic. Stopped at a house on the roadside and got her drenched. Had to lead her as far as Madison, when I caught up with the wagon. A gentleman in

Madison bled her in the mouth for me, and she soon got better, and being led a short distance was well enough to ride again. Marched 12 miles from Madison and went into camp near Little River. Marched 26 miles to day.

**Wednesday 17th—**

Started from camp about 6 A. M. Passed through Monticello and Shady Dale and camped for the night in sight of the village of Gladeville, at 4:40 P. M. having gone a distance of 25 miles. Commenced raining hard just as we went into camp and continued until after dark. An overseer on a plantation gave us comfortable quarters in an unoccupied house.

**May—Thursday 18.**

The clouds have cleared away and the sun is out to day. Left camp at 6:40 A. M. The roads are quite muddy. Passed through Gladeville and marched to the Ocmulgee River 7 miles, crossed on a flat boat ferried over by two U. S. Soldiers. Found a small guard of U. S. cavalry under charge of a sergeant on the West Bank of the River. They were quite polite & respectful towards us and did not interfere with us. The Admiral showed his parol to the sergeant, who said that was sufficient he did not wish to see any more of our parols. Passed through the camp of a U. S. Cavalry Regiment three miles from the river. Passed through the village of Forsyth ten miles from the river. Marched four miles beyond Forsyth and went into camp. There is a small guard of U. S. soldiers in Forsyth. Rained hard to day while we were crossing the Ocmulgee, and for a few miles beyond. The U. S. soldiers have not interfered with us yet. They are a part of Wilson's Cavalry.

**May—Friday, 19.**

Left camp at 6:20 A. M. I rode in the wagon all day, being too sore to ride on horse-back. Passed through the village of Thomaston and marched 4 miles West of it and went into camp, having gone 26 miles to day. We halted nearly two hours in the middle of the day to have our wagon wheel repaired. Marched until nearly 6 P. M. before we went into camp. For the first time we were unable to get any milk, butter, or eggs any where near our camp.

**Saturday, 20.**

Left camp about 6 A. M. Passed through the villages of Pleasant Hill & Bellview, and crossed several large creeks to day. We have been mistaken to be Yankees all day on account of the Admiral's Naval uniform and shoulder straps, it being a very bluish grey color and blue pants. Went into camp about 5 P. M. a short distance from Waverly Hall, having marched 26 miles to day. Camped close to a grave-yard in an old field. Several elegant residences are in sight, forming almost a village. Tried to get some butter milk &c, but the people all thought we were Yankees and would let us have scarcely anything. Wilson's Raiders acted very badly all along this road that we are now travelling.

**Sunday, 21.**

Beautiful day. Started at 6:15 A. M. Passed through Waverly Hall. Capt. Wilson (who was on the Alabama with Armiral Semmes) left us a few miles beyond this place on his way to his home in Florida. Crossed a very large creek called Mulberry Creek. Marched to within five miles of the Chattahoochee River and went into camp, having gone 27 miles to day. It has been very warm all day, and the road has been quite rough and hilly, most of the time. Passed a gay picnic party of ladies and gentlemen, some of the ladies were very beautiful and most of the gentlemen seemed to be Confederates just returned from the War.

**Monday 22.**

I staid with Judge Dixon last night. He lives a few miles from the Chattahoochee. He and his wife treated us very kindly. They sent to our camp all the milk and butter and eggs they had and some chickens and honey and would not take any pay for them. We insisted however upon making his lady a present of some coffee. Left camp at 7 A. M. Crossed the Chattahoochee at Collins' ferry about 9 A. M. I am once more upon the soil of Ala. But how different are the circumstances from those under which I expected to return to my native state. It is very humiliating to think of our present condition, and I will try and think and speak of it as little as possible. We crossed the Chattahoochee into Chambers County. Passed through Berlin, and Opelika 18 miles from Berlin. Marched 3 miles South West of Opelika and went into camp in Russell County.

**Tuesday, 23d.**

A Beautiful day. Capt. Dunnington and Marine Orderly Keen left us this morning, on their way to their present homes in North Alabama. I was quite unwell yesterday and last night. Left camp a little past 6 A. M. Passed through Auburn and Tuskegee and went into camp about 3 miles from Tuskegee.

**Wednesday 24th—**

Another beautiful day. Left camp about 6 A.M. Marched through a beautiful country. Passed a Yankee Infantry Brigade on its way to Tuskegee. Passed through Cross Keyes near which place my old regiment the 17th Ala. went into camp of instruction in 1861—which camp we left in Nov. '61 and went to Pensacola under Bragg. Dr. Peck and I stopped a couple of hours at Col. Conrad Webb's. We dined with the family and had quite a pleasant visit. Miss Josephine my old friend and guardian sweetheart was not at home much to my disappointment, but was in Atlanta, Geo. on a visit. Miss Sallie her sister has been married for some time to Dr. George Judkins, though I did not know it. All the family seemed glad to see me. We reached our camp within about 5½ miles from Montgomery, after dark having made about 32 miles to day.

**Thursday, 25th—**

A beautiful day. Left camp about 6 A. M. Marched into Montgomery about 8 A. M. Passed through Yankee camps close to Montgomery—were arrested by a Yankee sentinel and carried to Brigade Head Quarters. A staff officer came out to see us and said that the officer of the guard had exceeded his instructions, and he consequently gave orders to the sentinel to pass us on. We found Yankee troops camped all through the city. When I reached the city I went to Uncle John Elmore's to leave my baggage, and found that he was living at the old place in Autauga, and that other people were living in his Montgomery house. Left my baggage in their charge, and went out to Uncle Bolling Hall's. On the way I met him and cousin Vince Elmore and Frank Hall. The Yankees have nearly ruined Uncle Bolling. I went on to his house and found all my cousins glad to see me. Crenshaw had reached home from the army. Miss Anna Grigg was staying with Cousin Laura.

**Friday, 26th—**

A beautiful day. Remained at Uncle Bolling's all day. Crenshaw and I visited Mrs. Laura Holt, his aunt, at her country place



one mile from Uncle Bolling's in the evening. Bolling came home to night.

**Saturday, 27th—**

Will Holt came over to see us today. Miss Anna Grigg went home yesterday evening. Remained at Uncle Bolling's all day. Saw a grand review of Carr's Yankee Division close to Uncle Bolling's to day. They did not make as soldierly an appearance as our division used to make in the Southern army.

Another beautiful day. Went in to the Catholic Church to day but not being able to get a seat, left and went to the Methodist, and heard an excellent sermon. There is no news afloat to day, every thing is as quiet and still as a Sabbath day ought to be. It is a lovely and pleasant day in the extreme. All seems to be depressed at the condition of our unhappy country.

**Monday, 29th—**

Started home to day. Went as far as Sandy Ridge  $28\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Montgomery and stopped for the night with a Mr. Williamson, a friend of Pa's and a very clever gentleman, who treated me with extreme hospitality and kindness. After supper he took me to see Squire Perry another friend of Pa's, and Mrs. Williamson the widow of his brother, and a daughter of Mrs. C. Webb of Macon. Passed the evening very pleasantly.

**Tuesday 30th—**

Started early for home. Passed through Forts Deposit and Dale. Got in company with a young Mr. Lloyd one mile from Fort Deposit and travelled in company with him as far as Fort Dale. He assisted me materially by carrying some of my baggage. We stopped in the middle of the day and took dinner with old Mr. Danile the north side of Fort Dale. The old man had a son in my company in the 17th Ala. (Fred Daniel) who enlisted in prison in U. S. Army to fight the Indians. Reached home before sunset. Found all well and glad to see me.

**Wednesday, 31st—**

My relatives and friends commenced coming in to see me to day. Jimmy Jones came up to stay with me a few days. We went over to Dr. Herbert's to day. I am in general bad health, feeling quite weak and unwell.

**June, Thursday, 1st—**

Jimmy and I moved into Pa's office in the yard to day, so as to have more room and to be more to ourselves. We are well fixed and have very pleasant quarters. Remained at home all day. Cousins Eliza Stevens and Emily Waters & Tommy Crenshaw came to see us to day. Tom carried them over to Uncle Tom's.

**Friday 2d.**

There is to be a grand picnic at Powers' bridge to day. Jimmie and I were too unwell to attend. Cousin Jim Womack came down from Greenville to see me to day. Tom, Bragg & Tip came down to go to the picnic. The picnic broke up early and they all went to Dr. George Herbert's and danced. Phil Waters & Frank Coleman came to see me to day. They all went to the Picnic & dance. Tom Bragg came back and staid all night with me. Cousin Sallie Lewis passed by to day on her way to her plantation.

**Saturday 3rd—**

Another Picnic to day at Ashcraft's Mill. Ma, Cousin Jim and all of us went. I enjoyed myself very much, but came home before they broke up. All came to our house in the evening and we had a dance and did not quit until after 12 o'clock. All of the girls in the neighborhood were there. Nearly all of the boys and girls staid all night with us.

**Sunday, 4th—**

Tip and Tom went back to Greenville to day and Jimmy Jones went over to Dr. Herbert's. Uncle Ed came to see me to day. Aunt Lucinda spent the evening with us.

**Monday, 5th—**

I did not rest well last night. Pa. went to Mr. McGeehee's last Saturday (near Montgomery) after a mule he left there, and returned with it last night. When the Yankees went through our neighborhood they took all his mules, and left him nothing to plough with. For three weeks his crop had no ploughing and he could not yet any mules or horses anywhere, and all of his negroes were on the place, none having left and they had to be supported for the year at least. So that he walked to Montgomery and made a representation of the facts to the Yankee General A. J. Smith, and told him he would have to give him stock to make a crop with or he would have to turn all of his negroes away and let them take care of themselves. Gen. Smith gave him **six** broken

down horses & mules, one of which he gave to a Mr. Seals to help him bring them home. But these broken down animals after he had gotten them home and fed them plentifully a few weeks, mended wonderfully, and turned out to be first rate animals, and made him a good crop. Though they did not near replace the eight splendid mules the Yankees took from him. Cousin Jim and I went to Uncle Tom's to day. Saw all the home folks and Cousin India who was there on a visit. I suffered all day with neuralgia in my right lower jaw. We returned home in the evening.

**Tuesday, 6th—**

Had to take morphine to make me sleep last night. Being no better this morning, I went over to Dr. Herbert's, and had the tooth that occasioned the pain, pulled. Cousin Jim started round on a little business trip in the neighborhood to day.

**Wednesday, 7th—**

Remained at home all day. Cousin Gus came to see me and remained until bed time.

**Thursday, 8th—**

Remained at home all day. Cousin Jim stopped a little while, on his way to Greenville.

**Friday, 9th.**

Remained at home to day. No one came to see me to day.

**Saturday, 10th—**

Remained at home to day—No visitors.

**Sunday, 11th—**

Uncle Ed & Tom were with us to day, and Dr. Herbert & family, also spent the day with us.

**Monday, 12th—**

Uncle Lewis and Dr. Herbert were here to day. Pa. made a contract to day with his freedmen to work with him the balance of the year for the support of themselves and families. Uncle Lewis and Dr. Herbert, and Charles Lewis (freedman) witnessed the contract. Jim and Maria were the only two who showed any unwillingness to sign the contract and both of them had parents on the place who were totally unable to support themselves and had done no work for years.

**Tuesday, 13th—**

Remained at home all day—No visitors—

**Wednesday, 14th—**

Uncle Fred and Grandma had a meet of their freedmen to day, and made substantially the same contract that Pa. made with his. Tip Womack and Tom Bragg came down from Greenville yesterday and staid all night with me. Two gentlemen (Dr. Cluck and Mr. Fountain) from Monroe County going from Montgomery with stock staid with us last night.

**Thursday, 15th—**

Remained at home all day—No visitors.

**Friday, 16th—**

Tom Bragg went home this evening. Remained at home all day.

**Saturday, 17th—**

Visited Mrs. Gregory, and Cousins Billy Coleman & Billy Wade to day. All were at home. I spent the day very pleasantly.

**Sunday, 18th—**

Uncle Tom went to Montgomery last week and returned yesterday. The Superintendent of Freedmen approved his contract with his freedmen. It was similar to Pa's. I went to Uncle Lewis Womack's in the evening.

**Monday, 19th—**

Staid at Uncle Lewis' last night, and until after dinner to day—Cousin Gus and his little Louis came down from Greenville before dinner. I went to Cedar Creek to fish in the evening. Got caught in a hard rain—Stopped in one of Pa's cotton houses in the field—The rain was very much needed by the farmers, and saved their corn crops they say—

At this point I closed my daily diary—the tenor of my life being so calm and even that I had nothing of interest to narrate for some months or more—and I did not wish to write down day after day the already oft repeated phrase “staid at home to day.”

## POEMS

(The following poems were written by Alabama authors. "Unto The Hills," by Lucille Key Thompson, of Troy, has been awarded the first prize by the Alabama Poetry Society and was previously printed in "The Teacher." Other poems by Mr. Bert Henderson, of Montgomery, have appeared in former issues of the Quarterly. Poems by Shirley Dillon Waite, of Birmingham, and L. Jane Moses, of Anniston, have not previously appeared in this magazine.)

### March Of The Toltecs

#### A Factual Legend on the Early Settlement of Alabama

Many centuries ago there lived  
Upon the trackless plains of Mexico,  
A tribe of peaceful Indians, Toltecs;  
And as the meager records dimly show,  
They played unconscious parts in history,  
And proved the cornerstone on which was placed  
The structure of a great and noble state.  
Deep in the heart of Mexico was traced  
The first installment of our heritage.

The Toltecs were agrarians, the land  
They ably tilled gave ample sustenance,  
And all were prosperous until a band  
Of hostile tribes began to perpetrate  
Atrocities upon their settlement:  
To ravage fields and slaughter peaceful braves,  
And ultimately seeds of discontent  
Grew into fear, and so, when darkness came,  
They started on a memorable march,  
In search of other lands where they might claim  
Some measure of security. Again  
They formed a settlement and made their home.

They planted maize and carefully stored  
The surplus grain. But the desire to roam  
Made them again grow restless in their new  
Habitation. So the High Priest set  
A sensitive wand at the encampments edge,  
And called the tribe together. When they met  
They watched to see which way the wand would turn  
To point the way. And then the chief unrolled  
A folded blanket to release a white  
And tiny dog which, barking, ran with bold  
Assurance toward the northern edge of camp.  
The braves thought this an omen, felt their way  
Lay to the north, so once again they marched,  
Following their tiny leader, night and day.

Countless leagues they traveled, north, then east  
Across a river, now the Rio Grande;  
Then to the east again they came upon  
A river that no foot had ever spanned—  
Called it "Mish-o-sip-Kani," meaning  
"Greater than all else." Then with the dawn  
They held a council, voting they would cross.

And so they built a tiny raft, and on  
It placed their faithful guide, the tiny dog.  
They lashed this to a larger raft, but when  
The current caught them up the lashes fouled  
That bound the smaller raft. Before the men  
Could set their course again the dog was lost.  
Some thought this, too, an omen, and declined  
To march again, and on the farther bank  
Founded the Natchez tribe. But still to find  
Their ultimate destiny a faithful few  
Pushed on into a verdant, fertile land.  
And weary of their march and much impressed  
By such fertility, the last command  
Was given by the Priest. He stood beneath  
A tall majestic oak and breathed this phrase:  
"Alamamiu!" the meaning, "Here  
We plant our crops and spend our future days."

Bert Henderson.

### Dirge Out of Memory

I have seen eyes heavy with the grief  
 Of a forgotten generation,  
 And hearts wrung dry  
 With brief for a lost cause;  
 I have seen Greed bowing in supplication  
 At the War-Lord's shrine,  
 While brave men, weary from the long march,  
 Pause,  
 To buckle their sagging armor  
 And strengthen the thinning line.  
 I spoke with one in fear of torment  
 Who cast his sword aside—  
 Divested—in that moment—  
 Of all habiliments of pride.  
 I have walked through a wall of shadows  
 Black as a hangman's room,  
 As it wrapped its folds about a world  
 Sick with threatened doom,  
 While anguish stalked a battlefield  
 Riddled by shot and shell,  
 And thunder filled the distance  
 Like the final crash  
 Of hell!

Shirley Dillon Waite.

\* \* \* \* \*

### Night Gossip

The Moon while courting Night  
 Escapes to run,  
 Holds high his lips in broad eclipse  
 To blushing Sun.  
     And then tonight, he's dressed in white!  
     The Stars have nothing to say,  
     They know he flirts;  
     They only wag their pointed skirts  
     And turn away.

.....

I guess if I blew my candle light,  
 He'd come a'courting me tonight!

L. Jane Moses.

### In Dreamless Sleep

In dreamless sleep she lies so still—  
When vagrant shadows cross the sill  
    And softly touch her eyes and hair,  
    She does not stir or seem to care  
That this be either good or ill.

I know an April-petaled hill  
Abloom with golden daffodil—  
    Solt couch for one divinely fair  
    In dreamless sleep.

Bend down, O Sky, and watch until  
The stars come out and nights are chill;  
    O murmurous wind, blow gently there,  
    And feathered songster have a care—  
She waits the silent miracle,  
    In dreamless sleep.

Shirley Dillon Waite.

\* \* \* \* \*

### Unto The Hills

The mountains are like praying giants at night,  
When high above the pandemonium  
Of modern restlessness, the smoky light  
From furnace fires reveals their requiem.  
And, even as insatiate flames consume  
Their sacrifice, these kneeling giants remain  
Impervious alike to light and gloom.  
And thus may I, their dignity attain  
When altar flames burn low with lost desire,  
Remembering the sheltered pilgrimage  
To distant hills, where strength and peace inspire  
The beggared heart with humble heritage.  
Against the threat of ultimate despair,  
My heart shall be continually in prayer.

Lucille Key Thompson.



## BOOK REVIEWS

*Finland Forever* by Hudson Strode. Harcourt, Brace and Company. \$3.50.

Hudson Strode's *Finland Forever* is fierce in its partisanship and admiration for the heroic peoples of Finland. Its emphasis on spiritual values comes as a sort of "metaphysical shot in the arm" (to borrow a phrase Mr. Strode attributes to Sibelius) in an age that batters high heaven with such clichés as "realistic point of view," "wishful thinking" and "mechanized world." The book will find a deservedly large and enthusiastic audience.

*Finland Forever* contains brilliant and finely styled reporting: of geography, of economics, of arts, of Finnish history and ethnology. Episodes are fast-moving. Human-interest situations and stories of travel draw the reader rapidly forward. Much of the actual sociological content of the book is already familiar to many readers, for Finland's economy was an agriculturist's Utopia in many respects and, as such, widely publicized in the United States. But the dramatically human manner in which Mr. Strode presents his material makes it entirely new.

He presents all sorts and conditions of men, individuals and types. The American heroes Sibelius and Paavo Nurmi appear, surrounded respectively by photographers' light bulbs and deep layers of gloom. Universal figures like the patriarchal squire are also there, the well-to-do business man, the inn keeper, the ship's master, the tourist. And with each presentation the point is made perfectly clear that each citizen of Finland is burning with a patriotism that comes only with generations of social oppression finally crowned by an era of well being. The heroic *Kalevala* is taken as seriously in Finland as a Confederate sword in the South. But throughout the book, like a bell to toll one back to reality, runs the refrain "There will be no war." Although he landed in Finland only four months before the Red invasion and only two months before the destruction of Poland, Mr. Strode received constant reassurance. There would be no war, said the chambermaid at the Helsinki hotel. So said Brotherus of the Foreign Office and "the remarkable Miss Kuohi," inn keeper extraordinary. So

said the English and German tourists. Ominously, however, the building of the Mannerheim Line continued, with young men and women giving their vacations to build the fortification against hated Russia. Suddenly, war breaks.

"Finland Rebuilds" is the final chapter of the book. In it Mr. Strode keeps to the spiritual emphasis of his other chapters by describing the intrepidity of the Finnish character in rebuilding his country, so utterly demolished and so utterly without assurance of future inviolability. "'The game is not finished yet,' doggedly declared the old man of Huljava, though he had only two cards left, both deuces and neither of them a trump." That old man typifies all of Finland, according to Hudson Strode.

—Emily Calcott.

*Backtracking in Barbour County* by Anne Kendrick Walker. The Dietz Press. \$3.75.

Anne Kendrick Walker is fundamentally a person concerned with the tremendous trifles of living, nineteenth-century living in particular. This is not to say that *Backtracking in Barbour County* is a series of frothy essays. The book is a serious history of Barbour County from its beginnings to the present, and the author deals adequately with her subject. She has examined many documents in order to present such stirring Barbour events as the Indian conquests by John Lingard Hunter and William Wellborn; Henry Russell Shorter's tragic term as governor; the capture of Jefferson Davis by Wilson's Raiders; the bloody victory over Scalawag Kiels and his gang; the beginnings of Alabama's road system under Lieutenant-Governor Charles McDowell. Many important and dramatic events took place in Barbour County and the author writes of them with romantic enthusiasm.

But the quality that lends the book its peculiar charm is her anecdotal and often humorous style. This, added to her profound interest in the people she is writing about, makes *Backtracking* much more than just another county history. Miss Walker has not only examined less formal source books—letters, diaries, account books and such like—but has visited villages and homes and knows her numerous characters practically by their first names, not to mention those of their sisters and their cousins and their aunts. The reader learns at once geographical origins of a Barbour family,

the peculiar aptitudes of each member of the family and—sometimes and discreetly—which were happily married.

One learns too that Irwinton's Ante-Bellum Athenaeum subscribed to thirty-five magazines and newspapers, including the impeccable *British Review* and *Gentleman's Magazine* as well as the more giddy *Blackwood's*. That in Clio the Yankees placed a protective guard around the house of a woman who had waved a Masonic apron. That the *Eufaula Times and News* was delighted with Buffalo Bill's first local appearance and particularly pleased with the defined appearance of the cowgirls. That citizens of the same town counted it a real step toward progress when J. Konski, "a Polander", opened the first good barber shop on the ground floor of the Chewalla House. That Mrs. Davis's goldfish and Dr. Copeland's leaches froze solid in the big freeze of 1880, and that everybody was greatly relieved when the latter thawed out. That when Mrs. Flournoy asked the Bishop if he would have a little weak toddy for refreshment after his long trip, the Bishop looked her sternly in the eye and demanded why little and why weak.

Truly it is a "picturesque and lovable countryside" that Miss Walker guides the reader through and an equally picturesque and lovable race of people that she presents. The volume is enriched with many photographs of people and things—old maps, historic dwellings, churches, tombstones. The volume should prove of absorbing interest both to south Alabamians and to any general reader who is concerned with the bloom of life in the nineteenth century.

—Emily Calcott.

*Cottonmouth* by Julian Lee Rayford. Scribners. \$2.75.

This is a novel dealing with life in Mobile during recent times, as seen through the eyes of young Paul Brewster, artistic, sensitive son of a railroad engineer.

Paul's ambitious, restless mother, his five brothers and their Creole cook, Nanny, are a household of vigorous, well defined individuals who do not let their constant battle against poverty dull their sense of enjoyment of life. These Brewsters are a sturdy folk, ready to defend each other and always loyal to their family in spite of brotherly bickerings among themselves. Particularly appealing is Nanny, whose sole outlet for her affections lies in the

loving service she gives to Mrs. Brewster and the boys. She has an understanding and an appreciation of his nature which enable her to influence him, and her instructions in ethics are refreshing unconventional as well as salutary.

Mr. Rayford shows us pictures of other associates of Paul, each clearly and economically drawn, but his book is not primarily a story of characters. Mobile, rather than Paul himself, is its protagonist. The city is so familiar to him that he is able to give *Cottonmouth* a flavor and atmosphere that are unique, and after one has finished reading it a series of vivid sketches lingers in the mind—the tawny river running beside the town, nearby swamps teeming with animal and reptilian life, Mardi Gras parades, Sunday school parties, and many other characteristic events. There are tales of feuds between Paul's gang and negro delivery boys, of Creole superstitions, of sandlot ball games, of stolen rides to Montgomery and other places to see the home team play.

*Cottonmouth* is a novel without a love story, but it is not missed, because there are many other romantic adventures of adolescence in this saga of a youth's discovery of his world. Like most autobiographical fiction, it lacks a well constructed plot. There is also some confusion in chronological order. These faults, however, are counterbalanced by the skill with which the author portrays Mobile—"a town like the quick vanishing face at a window—a town not quickly grasped by the newcomer—a town asleep—but seething in dreams, and full of heroes—and great figures tramping its swamps—stealing down its River—passing over its Bay." Mr. Rayford with his artist's sense of significant detail has written a worth while first novel. He has revealed a fresh and vital talent, from which more may be expected in the future.

—Margaret Gillis Figh.

**GENEALOGICAL DEPARTMENT QUERIES**

Caswell Rice Clifton married, supposedly in Madison County, between 1839 and 1843, Elizabeth Mason Dancy. Marriage record and names of parents of both wanted. The latter's father is supposed to have been David Dancy. Miss Marybelle Delmar, Box 305, Raleigh, N. C.

Elizabeth Gayle and Dr. Jabez Wiggins Heustis were married in Dallas County. The license is dated November 3, 1825. In the obituary of her son, Dr. James F. Heustis, of Mobile, she is given as Elizabeth Swepson Gayle. Who were her parents? Mr. George H. Clark, 213 Clark Bldg., Birmingham.

Information about John Walker, Tandy Walker, William Hughes and Beverly Hughes, all of Lawrence, Limestone, Morgan and Madison Countys. Mrs. Grace T. Leshner, 1107 Fourteenth St., Modesto, Calif.

Information about Joseph Leach who left Alabama in 1830 and died in Connersville, Indiana, in 1840. Mrs. James M. Todd, Boothbay Harbor, Maine.

Grandfather Stephen Joseph Lester, born in Louisville, Ky., in 1811, moved to Alabama while a child. Two brothers, William H. and A. J. One sister, Sarah. Any information desired. Dr. W. S. Lester, Kentucky Wesleyan College, Winchester, Ky.

William Mace Lewis wrote from Moulton, Lawrence County, in 1832, that he was a member of the firm of Coopwood, Lewis and Company. He had a brother Robert at Moorseville. He also stated that he was to marry Laura Dent in November. Later letters refer to him as Gen. Mace Lewis. Meriwether L. Lewis, 511 Boscobel St., Nashville, Tenn.

Oliver Hopwell Crittenden married Mary Ida Baylis. His father, B. F. Crittenden married Elizabeth Owens, while his grandfather, L. B. Owens married either A. A. Weathers or Annie Hale. Information on this line desired. Mrs. Arthur Naylor, 417 Neches, Palestine, Texas.

Benjamin Franklin Price was born in 1816 and lived in Calhoun County. He married Merinah Clift in 1832. He had eleven sons and one daughter. They went to Texas in 1852, leaving only one son, Bluford Price, in Alabama. He died in a hospital in Richmond, Va., February 14, 1865. Names of descendants wanted. S. P. Price, Box 908, Vicksburg, Miss.

Ancestors of William Rufus Privett who lived in Alabama. Mrs. W. E. Brockbank, 413 East Center St., Spanish Trail, Utah.

Any information about the Revlett family in Alabama. Leonard Davis, Drakesboro, Ky.

## LATER HISTORY OF MADISON COUNTY

*By Thomas Jones Taylor*

(This installment concludes the History of Madison County, by Judge Taylor.)

### Chapter VIII.

#### Removal of the Indians.

Before entering into the history of New Madison, dating from the great land sales of 1830, I hope that an article upon our first neighbors, the original owners as far as we know of the beautiful valley of the Tennessee, will not be inappropriate. I refer to the Cherokees and Chickasaws, who while they did not actually occupy any of the county away from the river, yet by agreement as far into the past as tradition reaches made the line between the two nations to meet somewhere near the present Cherokee or New Madison line, and as I have already stated, Old Madison was a debatable ground that the government obtained by treaty with both nations. Our people came but little in contact with the Chickasaws after the year 1817. This tribe, once powerful and warlike, at the beginning of the century owned all the territory between the waters of the Ohio and the Tennessee and the Mississippi southward to the great bend of the Tennessee and South of the Tennessee from about Chickasaw Island to the Creek line, and thence westward to the Mississippi above Natchez. The treaty of 1817 gave the United States all their territory in Alabama, except Colbert's reservation and some smaller reservations on the Tennessee, and they soon afterwards removed beyond the limits of Alabama, so that in the year 1830 the Tennessee valley west of Madison county had been occupied by white settlers formed into counties, and was a flourishing portion of the state. In the year 1836 the remaining portion of this once flourishing tribe with the exception of a few scattering settlements in Mississippi, crossed the Mississippi and occupied their present domain. At first, they occupied that territory in common with the Choctaws, a nation of the same origin and speaking the same language, but the two

tribes finally separated into two distinct nations and both tribes have made great advance in civilization and prosperity.

When the English first came to the Carolinas the Cherokees were one of the most prosperous and powerful tribes on the continent. In the year 1730 just one century before the sale of their remaining lands in the State of Alabama, they acknowledged allegiance to and made a treaty of peace with the English. This treaty was often broken by both sides, and hostilities between the whites and Indians were frequent. The Cherokees occupied the Alleghany ridge and as far Eastward as the head waters of Flint and Savannah rivers, their territory including portions of Tennessee, the Carolinas, Georgia and Alabama, and their geographical position, in itself, gave them but little hope of permanent possession. The Cherokees were a superior race of aborigines, and before the beginning of the present century their sagacious leaders were looking westward for a land of promise. About the year 1800 three thousand of them went west of the Mississippi and formed the nucleus of the future nation on the head waters of the Washita. The Indians on the head waters of the Flint and Savannah made great advances in civilization and when Madison county was ceded some of them were large slave owners and extensive planters. Many white men had intermarred in the tribe and settled among them, schools had been established, and great interest was manifested in education. But the Indians among the mountains had an intense love for their native valleys and steadily opposed all projects for removal, and discountenanced all departures from the old hunting life of their fathers. Thus originated the two parties whose feuds afterwards resulted in the violent death of some of the wisest and best of their leaders.

In the year 1818 another large body of the tribe went west of the Mississippi, and the question of removal was continually agitated until their emigration was finally consummated in the year 1836. Soon after the settlement of Charleston, South Carolina, a large number of Scotch emigrants came to the state on account of religious persecution and political dissensions in the old country. Many of this colony became Indian traders and married Indian wives, and became influential men in their councils. Of this number, Alexander McGilvary, the great chief of the Creeks, became most famous, and he was in many respects the most remarkable man of the time. But many of less fame pushed their way towards



the bend of the Tennessee and came into Madison County with the early settlers, and located on the Indian side of the boundary line. Among these were Capt. John Woods, the Wilsons, Shephens, McDuffs, McNairys and McNuttys, who, from a desire to live among civilized people, came and settled in Madison and the adjoining counties on the reservation that still bear their names. Conalesky, an Indian Chief, also located in the county, and when he became civilized, he called himself John Challenge and lived for a long time on Challenge reservation in Sharp's Cove. When the Creek war of 1813 broke out the Creeks tried very hard to persuade the Cherokees to join in a coalition against the whites, but in vain. The Cherokees were too well acquainted with the power of the whites, and when they found the Creeks would not allow them to remain neutral they declared war against the Creeks and took part in Jackson's victorious campaign. By the treaty of 1818, that made the cession of their lands in New Madison, each Indian or half-breed who wished to remain within the limits of the ceded territory was allowed to retain one section of land with his house as near the center of the track (sic) as practicable, and reservations of this character were retained by the Indians and half-breeds already mentioned. But as the Indians gradually disappeared from our proximity these parties also became dissatisfied, and all of them in Madison county, holding these reservations, disposed of their lands by sale or relinquishment, and crossed the Mississippi with the remainder of the tribe in 1836. By treaty, the Indians also reserved a track twelve miles square, to be disposed of on the same terms as government lands, and the proceeds of sale to go to their educational fund. This track comprised all of New Madison south of Keel's Mountain, and also parts of Jackson and Marshall counties. There remains unsold about ten thousand acres of this land which belongs to the Cherokees, and is the last remnant of the vast and rich domain which they once possessed East of the Mississippi. The Cherokees moved southwardly until they all had gone South of the river, and occupied a small portion of north eastern Alabama.

The larger proportion of the tribe East of the Mississippi was concentrated in the State of Georgia. This portion of the tribe was divided into two factions, the party headed by Ross, who opposed removal, and the party of Ridge and Boudinot, who favored it, and their differences delayed the question for many years.

There had never been any great cordiality between these Indians and the Georgia people, and the Georgians were very anxious for their removal from their borders, and persecuted them with a great deal of unfriendly legislation. While the State declined to recognize their rights as citizens, yet it extended the laws of the State over their territory. While it claimed the right to try them in court, yet it denied them the right to testify, and their condition was becoming desperate. They sent a deputation to Washington, and while they received many expressions of sympathy from those in power, yet they were informed that the government had no power to right their wrongs. As a consequence removal became inevitable and even John Ross, the ablest and wisest of their leaders, was impelled by the circumstances to sign the treaty of removal. The government appropriated one million dollars for indemnity and expenses of removal and furnished each family with one year's subsistence in the new territory. We can but sympathize with their remnant of a brave and high spirited nation, who reluctantly bade final farewell to their native mountain home and turned their faces westward towards the level lands of Western Arkansas. How they must have missed the mountain crags and beautiful coves of the Tennessee!

In the year 1836 General Scott, with two thousand troops, was detailed to remove them, and on a beautiful morning of spring all Madison County was in motion to see the Indians. Hundreds of children born in the county had never seen an Indian, and in their line of travel from one end of the county to the other an eager throng awaited them. And presently the melancholy procession appeared. There were carriages and wagons of every kind, horses, mules, donkeys, and dogs, all turned into beasts of burden. Besides the numerous vehicles loaded with travellers, there was a long procession of men, women and children bearing all kinds of burdens peculiar to a household. When they came to Flint River above Brownsboro, they rested two or three days, and the place can still be pointed out where they buried some of their number who fell by the wayside. Of all processions that ever passed through our midst this was the most tragic, and I have heard many spectators aver that the expression of the silent sorrow of their heart, depicted in their movements and faces, haunted them for many months. They marched on towards the setting sun and the pageant was over, and when they crossed the Chickasaw

boundary, six miles West of Huntsville, they bid a final farewell to their ancient domain, and entered into a land of dangers.

There were many wealthy men and large slave-holders both among the Cherokees and Chickasaws, and both sides sympathized with the South. But after the war commenced the Ross party returned to its allegiance, while the Ridge party fought through the war in the Southern armies. Their country was subject to all the evils of partisan warfare and the tribe suffered severely. The war closed, their slaves were free, and while the government interposed in behalf of the Ridge party that adhered to the South, to prevent their banishment and the confiscation of their property, yet it compelled the Cherokees to cede to the general government about seven million acres of land, at the rate of four and a half cents an acre, which purchase money they gave them the alternative of seeing donated to their former slaves to citizenship, and the Indians took the latter alternative.

Having made this brief diversion, I now propose to take up the history of the settlement of New Madison from 1830, the year of the land sales.

## Chapter IX.

### New Madison.

The name of Old Madison, as used by our fathers, applied both to the original county formed in 1808 and to the southwest or Triana portion added from the Chickasaw nation in 1818. The Indians owned New Madison until 1819. Though it had been ceded a year or two before, yet it was not until 1818 that the United States entered formally into possession of the New Territory and surveyed out the Indian reservation and the twelve miles square line, and several years elapsed before even this was all accomplished. The history of the settlement of New Madison and the characteristics of the settlers differed as much from the settlement of Old Madison as the physical features of the two sections were dissimilar. A large proportion of the area of the old county consisted of level, fertile lands, offering an inviting field for the location of large plantations, while New Madison was broken, and there were but few locations suitable for the opening of extensive

farms. The ranges of mountains extending through it from north to south, with lateral ridges or spurs dividing a great portion of its area into valleys and coves, through which generally ran streams of pure water tributary to Flint river, made it eminently fitted in every respect for the location of small farms and these peculiar characteristics made it essentially a region settled by a white non-slaveholding population. During the settlement of Old Madison cotton commanded a high price, and farming with slave labor was highly remunerative, and the lands were sold at exorbitant rates. But cotton had steadily declined in value, and after the flush times and the wild speculation of 1818 and '19 a reaction had taken place and prices had steadily tended downward. A large proportion of the capital that had come into Old Madison had been invested in land at ruinous rates, and men who had invested extensively had lived to see their dreams of a golden future dissipated by the decline in price of their great staple, and many of them were involved in financial difficulties from which they were not extricated until federal legislation afforded them relief. There were a few men who had weathered the storm and were wise enough to foresee that if they could obtain the public lands at reasonably low rates in the future they would reap a golden harvest, and they organized into the ring of speculators against whom the body of actual settlers in the new county were pitted in purchasing their lands. Many small farmers came into the county at this time from Tennessee and Georgia prospecting for permanent homes, and there were a large number of old citizens of the county who, by thrift and industry, had accumulated a small capital that they wished to invest in permanent homes in the new territory. At the land sales of 1809 and 1818 persons of this class had been outbidden by speculators, and many of them had lost their homes because they were not able to pay the exorbitant prices paid for the land by the capitalists, and while from the conformation of the country and difference in its financial condition the evil would not have been so serious if New Madison had been put on the market in a more prosperous era, yet the tendency of federal legislation and of public opinion rendered it impossible that the early settlers on these lands should be treated with the injustice that deprived John Hunt and others of their homesteads at the sales of 1809. While no blame can attach to the early settlers who saw proper to bid high prices for valuable government lands, and while it was a great misfortune to many that they were too poor to

compete with the capitalists for lands they had settled and improved, yet the many cases of hardship it entailed were calculated to create a prejudice against the wealthy and array the poor against the rich.

Before the year 1829 the administration had been composed of men principally from the Atlantic coast, who although wise and patriotic yet were not so fully in sympathy with the masses as their successors. The tide of emigration south and west and the admission of many new and prosperous States in the Union placed the reins of government under the control of men who had lived and moved and prospered with the people of the new States, and the movement took the form and spirit that resulted in the wise legislation that has done so much to prevent monopoly in control of the public domain and to guarantee cheap homes to actual settlers. Thomas H. Benton was the first great champion of preemption in the halls of congress. From his election to the United States Senate he devoted his attention to effecting a change in the land laws, by which the actual settlers on the public domain could have the privilege of retaining his lands at the minimum price fixed by the government, and also to procure the passage of a law graduating the price of public lands, so that their price should be reduced in proportion to the time they had been on the market without a purchaser. The elevation of General Jackson to the presidency in the year 1829 placed a ruler in power who was in full sympathy with him, and soon after his inaugural General Jackson earnestly recommended the passage of the preemption law to congress, and the law was enacted.

In the year 1829 C. C. Clay was elected to congress from this district, and no man in congress worked more actively and zealously in pressing this law to its passage. He was recognized by the people of North Alabama as the uncompromising enemy of monopoly and the champion of the people, and his course in congress made him the most popular man of his period and placed at his command the highest offices that the people of his State could bestow.

The Cherokee cession made at different periods from the year 1819 to 1830 had placed the greater portions of the lands in North Alabama in the market, and the great land sales at Huntsville in the year 1830 was the most remarkable event of the time, and an

examination of the census reports from the year 1830 to 1840 will show a remarkable increase in our population during that decade. The old Cherokee line of 1809 was re-surveyed in the year 1819, and soon after the work of dividing the lands in New Madison into subdivisions was commenced on the Tennessee line. Capt. Joseph Rice, a pioneer of New Market, deceased but a few months ago, was probably the last survivor of the men who participated in this work. He was one of the surveying party in the capacity of chain carrier, and used to tell in his inimitable style many anecdotes of the trip. A little south east of New Market there is a remarkable deviation in the line, of which he gives the following explanation: Benjamin Clements in his survey, coming near a settler's house, sent to the occupant for a jug of buttermilk, which was somewhat curtly refused him, whereon he deflected his line and put the settler out of Old Madison into the unsurveyed territory, and it required some years' time and a special order from the general surveyor to straighten the line. At the present maps of Madison county do not show the old Cherokee line it is difficult to convey an idea of the form of the territory added to the county and sold at the land sales of 1840. From the State line to its extreme southern limit at the mouth of Paint Rock is about thirty-five miles, being the maximum extent of the county north and south. The east and west boundaries, the first following the dividing ridge between Flint and Paint Rock and the last being the old Cherokee line, while both tend nearly a south course, are very crooked, and there can scarcely be found any two points in the whole extent of the same width, the widest portion being from Ashburn's Ford, on Flint river, to Paint Rock, east of Mt. Nebo Church, being about twelve miles on an air line. The narrowest part, from the township corner east of Thos. P. Gurley's to the Old Madison line near site of the old Gurley mill, is about two miles wide, and from McNulty town to the State line the average is about eight miles, and it added to the county an area of about three hundred square miles.

At the time of the land sales the largest body of level fertile lands offered in New Madison was the lands around the present town of Gurleysville, where the lands known as Ashburne's Cove breaks the connection between the more northern range and Keel's Mountain, and leaves the latter entirely isolated and interposing a solid barrier between the northern and southern portion of New

Madison, around which we must skirt Flint on the western side or Paint Rock on the eastern by nearly equal routes to the southern portion of the new county. This level table land, but little broken by mountain spurs, extends from Hurricane Creek to Paint Rock, and includes in its limits the Gurley, Robertson, Clay and Coles plantation east of Gurleystown and partly in Jackson county, and the plantations skirting the northern base of Keel's Mountain west of Gurleystown to Flint river, at John W. Grayson's. South of Keel's Mountain there are many mountain spurs and detached ridges interspersed over an otherwise level country between the waters of Paint Rock and Flint, giving great diversity of soil, including the pine flats west of New Hope, the rich alluvial lands on the banks of the rivers, the black, fertile lands of the cedar ridges, and the dark clay soil of the Cedar Ridge and Paint Rock, once covered with magnificent poplar growth from which Poplar Ridge precinct derives its name. The northern portion of New Madison is mostly in the coves and valleys of Mountain Fork and Upper Hurricane, comprising some of the finest lands in many respects in the county. The region known as New Madison was formed by nature for the home of small farmers, and but little over half a century has elapsed since its permanent settlement. In no other portion of North Alabama has the population been more permanent or the original settlers as largely represented by their descendants on the homesteads of their fathers. A large number of these old pioneers have passed away in the memory of the present generation, and a few here and there still survive and live on their old homesteads purchased in 1830, and I propose before proceeding in the history of the county to devote one or more chapters to the memory of the pioneers of New Madison, who were here at the time of the land sales, and give their location.

## Chapter X.

### Land Sales of July, 1830.

The preemption law was enacted in May, 1830. This act gave to all parties who were in actual occupancy or who had cultivated or improved any public lands in the year 1829 the privilege of filing a preemption claim on their lands and obtaining a patent at the minimum price fixed on government lands. The act of 1820 had abolished the credit system in sale of public lands, and fixed

the minimum price at one dollar and twenty-five cents per acre, and reduced the minimum of quantity from one hundred and sixty acres down to eighty, except from fractions ranging over eighty acres and less than one hundred and sixty. This was a valuable concession to actual settlers wanting small homes, as each settler who could command one hundred dollars could secure his home. On lands on which there was no preemption the field was still open for speculators, and a stringent law had been enacted forbidding any one under penalty of imprisonment and a fine of one thousand dollars from offering any inducement to any one to refrain from bidding public lands and from agreeing for a consideration to refrain from bidding. Notwithstanding these regulations and from other causes, the greater part of these lands sold at low prices and were bought by actual occupants.

The lands offered for sale in 1830 embraced New Madison and also Jackson county and a portion of the present counties of DeKalb and Marshall. The first sale of public land for that year was in July, and embraced the upper portions of Jackson and New Madison. The second sale commenced on the first Monday in October, and at that time Huntsville was thronged with an eager crowd of purchasers, some of them speculators but the large body of them small farmers with the means to purchase a home, or here endeavoring to raise money for that purpose.—Prominent among capitalists buying lands on speculation were James McCartney, Wm. H. Moore, Richard W. Anderson, John Gilchrist and Terry Bradley, all of whom invested largely and realized handsome profits from their purchases. At the land sales of 1830, and in the course of a few months thereafter, a large number of old citizens of New Madison whose descendants still reside in the county, purchased homes. At the July sales many old citizens of the northern part of the county, who at the land sales of 1809 had bought lands on the old county line, made considerable purchases in the new territory. Isaac Criner, the pioneer farmer, with his brother Granville as partner, purchased, with other lands, the fine farm near where he built his first cabin, on which he lived for over half a century. The Walkers, Davises and Rices, whom he preceded but a few months, also made considerable additions to their already fertile and flourishing farms. While the Walker family in the Hickory Flat region was not so fully represented as at the present time, yet there were not less than three represented in the July land



sales, as we find the names of James and Samuel and William Walker among the purchasers of the beautiful region largely occupied to-day by the family. Moses Power and Sarah Williamson and Hawley Williamson and John Campbell, Robert and William Davis, Theo Pennington, John Green and James Moore are largely represented in our county. But the families of Thomas Dorgan, James Gillespie, James Carroll and Nancy McDougall no longer are numbered among citizens of Hickory Flat, neither do any of the Griggs or Wilkins family now live on lower Mountain Fork. Upper Mountain Fork, after passing the rich basin of land purchased by William Davis, was vacant until about the year 1832, when the greater proportion of the rich but narrow valley was taken up by Joseph Hudson, Wm. Clunn and William Petty, the former of whom has many descendants living in that region. Shortly afterwards come Abner Moore, now the patriarch of the valley who when long past his fourscore years was still able to clamber over his mountain lands and point out the old land marks of sixty years ago. I believe he is the last survivor of the old and vigorous race who opened these fertile valleys to cultivation.

George Tannehill Jones, whom I have frequently mentioned purchased a considerable portion of his large farm at the land sales, and Thomas and John Miller added large acres to their fine lands in the old county. John Howard and Baldwin Howard and Jacob Scisco located east of New Market near Grimmett's and Terry's, and Samuel Yarbrough at the old homestead. George Smith, who was an early settler from the Hiwassee valley and the pioneer merchant and principal owner of the present town of New Market, and who already ran one mile along the Indian line, squared his lands by purchase of a fraction east of the boundary.

About the head of Hurricane Wm. Baker purchased several hundred acres of land which formed the nucleus of the large plantation afterwards owned by him. In a few years a large settlement grew up around him, and during election times candidates frequently resorted thither to frolic and merry-makings so much in vogue at that time, and also to seek the influence of the old gentleman and Aunt Hannah Baker, his wife, a lady endowed with an unusual portion of good, strong common sense and a judgment on which it is said many of her voting neighbors were wont to rely in determining for whom their ballots should be cast. Uncle William Baker's neighbor and friend, Joseph Hamrick who like

him purchased his first home at the land sales and accumulated a large portion of this world's goods, was in some respects more fortunate than he. While the Baker name is now represented in the Hurricane region by Allison W. Baker alone, Joseph Hambrick left a large family of the name, many of whom of the third generation he lived to see attain the age of manhood. Col. J. M. Hambrick, the youngest son, was long a prominent man in the county, and is too well remembered by our people to require any notice on my part. The Rices, Baylesses and Braggs were among the earliest settlers, and were several of them in the war of 1812 under their kinsman, the gallant Captain James Hamilton. The older members of these families having already purchased at the land sales of 1809, purchased but little of the new lands, but the younger members of the families sought homes in the new purchase, and Thomas and Benjamin and Luna Bragg located near what is now known as Bragg's church, and no family in the county has preserved through three generations a better character for industry, sobriety and sound, practical common sense. Joseph Rice and Othneil Rice, the old representatives of a remarkable family both long past their fourscore years, have recently passed away, leaving many worthy representatives of the old name, foremost among whom in talent and purity of character is Dr. Francisco Rice, well and favorably known to a large portion of the citizens of our county.

Among the old citizens of New Market Dr. Geo. D. Norris and Isaac Cook have probably survived the entire generation who lived in that vicinity when they first located in that town. Dr. Norris has for near half a century practised his profession in that vicinity. A man of talent and culture and a close observer of men and manners, he is doubtless the best informed man on our early history in North Alabama. He is Past Grand Master of the Grand Masonic Lodge of the State of Alabama, and enjoys the honor of representing the Grand Lodge of England under a commission bearing the signature of the Prince of Wales, Grand Master of the Lodge of Great Britain.

From New Market southward to McNulty town the old Madison line ran on or near the mountain ridge dividing the waters of Hurricane and Flint. The long and narrow Hurricane valley, including the coves formed by the mountain ridges, included as fertile a body of land as can be found in North Alabama. These lands

were taken up in small tracts by a large body of settlers, some of whom still occupy these lands while others are largely represented by their posterity. Their number is so large that it is impossible to give all their names. South of Joseph Hambrich's and occupying lands east of New Market to Hurricane valley, I can name William Jackson, John and James Robinson, James and Levi Methvin and Eli Woodward, whose descendants have sought other homes. Eldridge Bailes and Robert Hall still live on their old homesteads. Joel and Jesse Stone, James Cochran, A. J. Fowler, Wm. Wells, George Howard, Abram Miller, Jno. W. Irby, the Braggs and Rogers are familiar names and largely represented in that part of the county. Out in Sharp's Cove, round a network of Indian reservations, purchased by James McCartney and extending up the cove as far as the soil was tillable, was congregated a colony of the Sharp family, who as purchasers at the land sales of 1830 furnish us the names of John, Joe, William, George, Leroy and Patsey Sharp, and also Henry Scott, whose wife belonged to the Sharp family, all living in a body on a area of fertile land in the cove.

Old McNulty-town was a place of considerable importance at this time. It was near the centre of McNultry's reservation, near Mrs. Mariah Giles' residence, on Hurricane and at one time there was a mill, a dry goods store and grocery at this point, and here Wm. Robinson, afterwards sheriff of the county and a man of wealth, commenced his successful career selling goods and groceries. Just below McNulty town, on Wilson's reservation, James McCartney built the present "Bone Homestead," the first brick house built in that part of the new county, and with the Indian reservations and adjoining small tracts purchased from the original owners located a plantation of two thousand acres. John Derrick owned the south half of Wilson's reservation, on which he lived for a long time.

In Killenworth's Cove and east of Maysville nearly all of the available lands were purchased at the land sales, and I believe that Caswell B. Derrick is the only survivor of the original purchasers. In this vicinity were settled in 1830 David Pockrus, Sampson Province, Vincent Derrick, Samuel and John and Jonathan Tipton, Robert Light and Richard Bowhannan, many of whom died on their original homesteads. The lands from the

Tennessee line down to Gurleysville were nearly all taken up at the land sales in July. The country from John Gurley's south to Paint Rock and Tennessee Rivers was offered for sale in October, 1830, and will be taken up in another chapter.

## Chapter XI.

### Land Sales of October, 1830—Gurleysville and Collier's.

From the point of the ridge forming the limit of Killingsworth Cove Hurricane Creek is deflected westwardly by the low cedar ridge known fifty years ago as Gurley's Mountain. Crossing the low gap commencing at the Steger place and ending at John Gurley's old homestead we come to the splendid body of land to which I have already alluded, reaching from Gurley's to Keel's Mountain and from the waters of Hurricane to those of Paint Rock, and divided nearly equally by the line of Madison and Jackson running due south on the range line. The greater number of the purchasers of these lands were among the earliest settlers in the county, and their names are on our records back to the extension of organic law into the county. The McBrooms and Criners were related, and Stephen McBroom came here with Joe and Isaac Criner and one or two others on an exploring tour about the year 1804, and they were the first white men of whom there is any authentic record who visited Mountain Fork and Hurricane valleys. At the time of the land sales these men, with the McCartneys, Rountrees, Reagans, Peeveys, Cromers, Stegers, Keels, Thomas M. King and others were old citizens of the county, living along the line of Old Madison, and in 1830 purchased the greater portion of the territory in New Madison above mentioned. The fertile red clay lands were covered with a forest of towering poplars and the river bottoms and low lands were a thick canebrake with narrow paths traversing them to the rivers. The country was full of game and was a favorite hunting ground for the sportsmen from the older portion of the county. John Gurley and Thomas M. King had settled near the big spring, south of the Vincent place, then a clear, lasting and large basin of water, and their hospitable home was a favorite resort of Thomas Brandon and other lovers of field sports during the hunting season.

At the land sales Thomas McBroom located the present Gurley homestead, and Caswell B. Derrick was just north of him near the Steger spring. John Gurley purchased and built at his old homestead, and west of him, extending down to the corporation line of Gurleysville, John and Charles McCartney purchased half a section of land, and out west near the cedar ridge where the homes of George Lane and Thomas Ferguson. Robert Rountree lived at the present homestead of Wm. R. Gurley. For many years thereafter the land round Gurleysville was in the woods with no public road except the old Belle Fonte road on the east running near the county line. The settlement along the base of Keel's Mountain consisted of a few small clearings, isolated from each other by a heavy forest growth. But the country improved very fast, and the industrious farmers, with abundance of fine building material in easy reach, constructed many substantial dwellings of hewn poplar that still remain in good condition. The old Gurley homestead, the McBroom and McCartney homesteads have been destroyed by fire, the two first during the war, the last since, but the houses built by Robert Reagan, Mai (sic) Taylor and David Cromer still remain in a good state of preservation. John Gurley became the owner of the greater portion of the lands east and north of Gurleysville, and there were but few better plantations in the county than the body of land he possessed. The Taylor place was entered by Wm. Keel, who sold to Mai Taylor in 1832 and settled on the mountain at the Chalybeate Spring where he lived for a long time and gave the mountain its present name. Wherey Whittaker also settled at the base of the mountain, afterwards removed to the top, and thence to the neighborhood of New Hope, where he is now living. He and Mai Taylor are the only survivors of the old settlers of the land in Ashburn's Cove.

David Cromer and John Gurley built the first mills on lower Hurricane, both of which were kept up for a long time. Robert W. Peevy purchased the lands now owned by John W. Grayson at the spring, and Peevy's spring was the muster ground of the old militia battalion for over a quarter of a century. Just west of Gurleysville lived Samuel Barron, a school teacher of the olden time. He was of Irish birth, a man of will and varied information, with old orthodox idea of training and discipline, and for the best of reasons is well remembered by scores of the old citizens of New Madison, who were boys when he was in the prime of his

physical and intellectual strength. He left two sons, Dr. Wm. J. Barron, of Huntsville, and Samuel B. Barron, a lawyer, and present Clerk of the County Court of Cherokee County, Texas. Thomas M. King, one of the oldest citizens of the county, was a Methodist minister widely known and highly respected in his time.

On the old Deposit road from Allen Sanford's to Peevy's spring there was no settlement for many years, and this whole country around to Gurleysville was a vast cattle and hog range for the people near the mountain. Some-times the traveller would meet a drove of one or two hundred hogs roaming the woods, and their owners generally let them run in the woods until they were two or three years old before they were penned, fattened on corn and then made into bacon. These droves of porkers when interrupted by dogs, were sometimes quite formidable, and hunters on foot sometimes had to take to trees and logs for safety, while their dogs had to run for their lives. On one occasion Thomas Brandon with a small hunting party was enjoying the hospitality of old brother King, and while on a hunting expedition had a severe battle with a drove of hogs that resented the intrusion of the hounds on their domain. After a lively skirmish their porcine antagonists were routed, but two or three of their best dogs were badly cut up in the encounter. They put their dogs in a wagon and carried them to Parson King's. As was usual in slave times the kitchen was some distance from the house, and after supper while the Parson's cook, Manda, a full-blooded African, full of the superstition of her race, was getting the dishes together to carry to the kitchen to wash, the party went out to see about their dogs. A chilly drizzling rain had set in, and the dogs were shivering from cold and loss of blood. Parson King suggested that the dogs should be wrapped in their bright-colored blankets and carried into the kitchen and laid around the wide fireplace to dry, and his suggestions were promptly carried out. The more pretentious of our county people at this time were discarding the old-fashioned pewter and were beginning to make a display of delf ware and China on special occasions. Therefore it so happened that Manda started to the kitchen with the whole precious lot of her mistress's finest table ware, and just before she reached the door she saw the pile of dogs in ghostly garb, and with an unearthly yell she dropped her precious burden on the ground and breaking it in pieces she fled to the house, and could not be induced to go back until the dogs were unveiled.

John McCartney was a keen sportsman and a celebrated bee hunter, and as bee trees were abundant he would go out and locate the course of the swarms, blaze a few trees to indicate the converging directions from different points, and then with a company prepared with axes, old rags, pails and pans he would unerringly ferret out the hiding-places of the wild swarms, and the party would return laden with the rich deposit of the despoiled hives.

About this time the rough canebreaks about Cole's spring were the resort of a gang of rogues and counterfeiters that gave considerable trouble to honest citizens, and there is a tradition that, under pretense of manufacturing saltpetre, they carried on their counterfeiting operations in the saltpetre cave on the Cole place. This gang was broken up through the potent influence of Captain Slick, whose name was at that time the terror of evil doers. A considerable amount of saltpetre was manufactured in this cave by the citizens to use in making gunpowder, and the remains of their old hoppers are still (to) be seen. Keel's Mountain is about six miles across, and by the roads it is about eighteen miles round the mountain, and on it there are coal deposits that may prove at some day to be valuable.

From the corner of the Cherokee cession south of Guilford Bennett's the old Indian line runs on an air line to the Tennessee river, skirting Flint river from the McClung place to where it crosses over Wood's mill, and from that point all the country between Flint and Paint Rock is in the twelve miles square reserved by the Indians for educational purposes. From near Maysville to the old Larne Ferry on Paint Rock below New Hope there were but few settlements prior to 1830. There was an old settlement at the Cave Spring, and George Russell and Davis Lemly located on public land at Vienna, now New Hope, at an early day. Among the purchasers in 1830 in the neighborhood of Collier's store and Cave Spring were Clement Baldwin, Jonathan Collier, Thomas Ellison, Bryant and R. W. Cobb, Josiah Cook and William and Richard Glover and George Eason. Jonathan Collier, an old militia captain, settled the old Wm. Wright place, and has many descendants still living in Collier's precinct, and Thomas Ellison was a prominent and influential man at that time. His son in-law, Joseph Collier, a son of Jonathan Collier, is the oldest living repre-

sentative of these families. David Cobb settled at an early day near Cobb's ford. His sons, Bryant and W. R. W. Cobb, were both prominent men in their time. Bryant Cobb was in the mercantile business for some time, in which he met disasters that seriously effected his business enterprises, but for half a century he was a prominent figure in that country, and died some two or three years ago at an advanced age. W. R. W. Cobb was raised in that neighborhood, and commencing life as a plow boy he became successively clock peddler, general trader and merchant. Removing to Jackson county he was elected to the legislature and then to congress, in which he served for fourteen years, and being invincible before the people would, but for the war, have remained there until he thought proper to retire to from the field. His natural shrewdness and intimate knowledge of human nature obtained by a wide experience made him the most formidable opponent ever encountered by an aspirant for congressional honors, and the utter rout, at the polls, of such men as William Acklen, Jere Clemens, C. C. Clay and James M. Adams, all for his superior in educational advantages, was to him but child's play. The Cobbs, with their other remarkable characteristics, were Titans in stature, towering several inches above ordinary men. During the days of W. R. W. Cobb's supremacy, when he mingled among his constituents at their political gatherings, he was the observed of all observers. The suavity of his address, his towering stature, the reach of his arms, his coolness, self possession and undaunted courage and perseverance more than counterbalanced his lack of early educational facilities and extended his popularity with the people of his district. The Cobb family is still numerous and influential in the county, and Dickson Cobb, now the oldest representative of the family, had served many terms as county commissioner. John Allison, a man of Irish descent and brother-in-law of Bryant and W. R. W. Cobb, was for a long time county commissioner, and was an early settler near Cave Spring, where from an humble beginning he by industry and economy accumulated a fine property which is still owned by his heirs, of which there are many, he having left no direct descendants.

The lands thrown open to purchasers in 1830, which lie along the Deposit road from John W. Grayson's to the Cave Spring were taken up rapidly, and the whole region soon became thickly populated by a moral, intelligent and industrious community, whose descendants still form the best element of the lower Flint country.



## Chapter XII.

## Land Sales of October, 1830—Poplar Ridge and Vienna.

South of Collier's Store Keel's Mountain and a low detached ridge extending westwardly from Cave Spring to the Fleming place, reaching nearly to the old boundary line, before the county districts were divided with reference to the sixteen sections formed a geographical as well as legal division between Collier's Store and the large district south of it, all of which was originally in the Vienna precinct. This country now includes four voting precincts, to-wit: New Hope, Owen's X Roads, Poplar Ridge and Cloud's Cove, of which Poplar Ridge was formed many years before the civil war. Among citizens of the older part of the county who were here with the first settlers and selling out lands in Old Madison permanently located in this part of this county were Jabez L. Drake, George Dilworth, George and Robert Woody, the Middletons, Brazletons, Ledbetter, Joseph and Isham Collier and Jason L. Jordan, and the Whittakers.

Around Bethel Church, at the south base of Keel's Mountain, was a body of fine poplar land that was located at the land sales of October, 1830. In what is now known as Manning's Cove the upper portion was entered by Wm. Honea, who made his first improvement at the head of the Cove, and the part including the Big Spring was entered by Wm. Babb, who built the houses still standing near the spring. This spring is the head of what is known as Trimble's creek that meanders southward four or five miles over some fine lands to Paint Rock. Francis Flippen, who purchased his first quarter section at the land sales to which by subsequent purchases he made considerable additions, came here from Virginia about the year 1819 or '20, and settled the place now belonging to the heirs of Dr. Isaac Sullivan, who was one of the pioneer Methodist ministers of that period and was afterwards a physician of high repute in New Madison.

The largest purchaser of land in that neighborhood was Edward Maples, who not only entered all the lands on the original homestead now owned by F. T. Butler, one of his descendants, but likewise made some purchases apart and separated from his homestead, among which was what is known as the "Cole eighty,"

north of "Bethel Cemetery." The Maples family have probably contributed a larger quota of pioneer population to the southern and western country than any other family in the State. The family came here from East Tennessee a short time before the year 1830, and their immediate ancestor, Noah Maples, was a soldier of the revolutionary war, and one of my first recollections of him was the prominent position assigned him at fourth of July celebrations and on public occasions as the surviving representative of the revolutionary war in his community. To the best of my recollection he was but once married, and he and his wife raised a family of nineteen or twenty children, the large majority of whom were boys, nearly all of whom reared large families in Madison and Jackson counties. The family generally had many of the old pioneer traits characteristic of their ancestry and also their pluck and enterprise, and as they grew up sought new homes in the west, where they, as a general rule were prosperous. Although the family have numerous representatives in Madison and Jackson counties, yet in many counties of Missouri, Northern Arkansas and Texas we find them as fully represented as here in their original home. Of the sons of old Noah Maples, Ed, Peter, George, Josiah and James settled in New Madison, and several of the family, among whom were Moses and William, in Jackson county. Josiah Maples entered eighty acres of land east of Guleysville, but I think he soon sold out and moved westward. Peter Maples now lives on the lands he purchased at the land sales in the house built by him nearly fifty years ago. He has been pastor of the Primitive Baptist Church for nearly forty years, and being well known to every old citizen of New Madison and still living in the enjoyment of health and with but little impairing of mental or physical vigor, I will not shock his modesty by paying that tribute to his sterling qualities of head and heart that my long and intimate acquaintance would justify.

Thomas Woodall and Wm. Barclay purchased lands near Bethel Church, and Barclay's place was afterwards purchased by John C. Grayson, a man full of energy and enterprise, who put up a mill and cotton gin that ran all winter by the waters of the falling spring that during the large part of the season forms a romantic and beautiful little waterfall in the heart of the mountain above Bethel. Thos. Woodall established a hemp factory on his place, and but for the hard times of 1830-40 coming on them in

the beginning of their enterprises they would have succeeded in making the Bethel neighborhood a considerable industrial center. From Bethel towards Paint Rock, Thomas Riddles, Joseph Manning and Job Wilhelms and Abe Atchley were the only purchasers of the land sales of 1830—the Woodalls and Kennibrough (sic) and Bryant Cobb at Cobb's mill making their entries a year or two later. From Bethel towards New Hope was an unbroken wilderness down to old Jimmy Taylor's place, where they was a settlement occupied by James Taylor, James G. Holmes, the Wooddys, George Dilworth, Henry Stammers, John Harless and others, on which lands there were but little improvements made and but few houses built.

What is now known as the big bend of Paint Rock remained vacant for some years longer, when it was occupied by the Whitakers, Staples, Vanns, Ikards, and others, many of whom still live on their old homesteads. In fact both on Paint Rock and Flint but little of what is known as river bank land in this region was cleared until after the year 1865. At that time there was hardly a break in the timber along Paint Rock from Cobb's mill to the mouth of Cedar Creek, but now it is almost one continuous field of cleared land of as fine corn land as can be found in the county. Jason L. Jordan, of Old Madison purchased land near Vienna. I believe it was the lands afterwards owned by Mr. Davis (sic) Moore. Thomas Vann, Sr., located the lands north of the town. The quarter section on which the town is located was purchased at the land sales by James McCartney and Robert Owen, and the town was laid off into lots for Robert Owen and Wm. B. Fant shortly afterwards.

The Deposit road was opened in time of the Creek war by General Jackson from New Market to Deposit Ferry, and was long called Jackson's trace. I do not know when Geo. Russell settled at Vienna, but I think he was keeping a hotel there for several years before the land sales. Aaron Harrison and Wm. Allison entered the lands south of the quarter section line and lived there for many years. Wm. Cloud was the first merchant there, and the town was first called Cloud Town, but in the year 1832 it was incorporated under the name of Vienna, but under the postoffice regulations forbidding two post-offices of the same name in a State, and there being another Vienna in Alabama, the post-office was called New Hope, from the Methodist Church in the town, and

the town was recently incorporated under that name. John Kenningh commenced the mercantile business there in the early days of the town, and was successful and prosperous in business. William Stone established a tan-yard there, and was long one of its most influential and prosperous citizens, and just before the war he emigrated to Talladega. It is said that his brother, George W. Stone, now Justice of the Supreme Court of the State, lived there a short time before he went south in pursuit of fame and fortune.

There was but little of the public lands sold in 1830 east of New Hope in the bend of Paint Rock, Joseph Stapler and one or two others being all who located their lands that year. West of New Hope on Paint Rock and along the Cedar Ridge there was a considerable settlement, the ancestors of the Hamers, Vanns and Hannahs being among the number who settled there. Reuben Lemley and Benjamin Inman entered the lands on the Phipp's place near the old fish trap. Many of the Lemley family are still citizens of the county, but there are but few representatives of the old Inman family remaining in the county. There are but few people aware of the fact that the Inmans, some of whom are bankers in Georgia and others merchant princes in New York and Philadelphia, who were proprietors of the famous Inman line of ocean steamers plying between New York and Liverpool, a little over forty years ago, were poor boys living on Flint river. Benjamin Inman entered land on Flint in 1830, and the elder sons of the family who went northward to join his brothers about the year 1838 left Vienna on a sorry pony, and he is now one of the richest merchants in the city of Philadelphia.

Out towards Ashburne's Ford John D. Wylie and Elisha Bell entered large and valuable tracts of lands, and west of the river John Ashburn, the Gardners, Stephen Richards, Sol. Spence and John Hobbs, all locating large bodies of lands, occupied nearly all the fine fertile lands from the mouth of Flint to the Cherokee line at John Logan's, including Chickasaw, now Hobbs Island. A small portion of the Big Cove was in New Madison, and Burgess and Robert McGaha, Francis Worley and John Neal came across the old boundary line and settled west of the river near Wood's Mill. The mill, now owned by Walter O. Carpenter, was put up by Thomas D. Leonard and John C. Grayson, and is one of the old land marks of New Madison. The land on which the mill is located was a fraction entered in 1830 by Dickson Cobb, and he and

Azariah Cobb and Nancy Cobb owned the land west of the public road for two miles.

It was in the year 1830 that Major Fleming made his first purchase in the "Tall Timbers," as he named this region, and for over a quarter of a century was the most popular and influential man in that region. Before the war he had purchased a large plantation in that region, that is now cut into smaller farms, with many settlers. A large number of old citizens who came into the county many years before this period located in this country and bought homes within a few years after the land sales, among whom may be mentioned the Elletts, Greens, Ledbetters, Carpenters and Millers, whose descendants form a numerous and influential element of their community at the present day. The Ledbetters were among the oldest settlers in the county, some of them being here in the year 1809 or '10, and many of them were prominent citizens, of whom John W. Ledbetter was the first tax collector elected by the people from the south-eastern part of the county. He was afterwards a prosperous merchant at New Hope, since the war a number of our State legislature, and now lives at Weaver's Station, in Calhoun county.

New Madison increased in population very rapidly, and soon became an important and influential section, as in the days of exclusively white suffrage its almost solid white population gave it the balance of power in our local elections.

I have now detailed the occupation and settlement of the last addition to our county limits, and in future articles my history will relate to the county with its present boundaries, which have not been materially altered since the land sales of 1830.

### Chapter XIII.

#### Public Men from 1830 to 1835

From the year 1820 to 1830 the population of Madison county increased from 17,481 to 27,990, or a little over ten thousand in ten years. In the south-western portion of the county the occupation of the fertile and valuable farming lands of that region had largely increased the slave population, which outnumbered the whites until the advent of a large white population of small farmers into

New Madison, just before the land sales, restored the balance, so that, by the census of 1830, the whites and slave population were nearly equal. In the year 1830, the anti-bellum population of the county attained its maximum, as from reasons to be given hereafter, there was a decrease of over two thousand in our population from 1830 to 1840, and but little difference in that number up to the census of 1860.

From the year 1830 all the lands in our present limits have been open to entry and settlement, and for many years after the land sales many of the best farming tracts in New Madison remained vacant. An act of congress had appropriated four hundred thousand acres of the unsold land in and adjoining the Tennessee valley to the State of Alabama, to be sold by the State and the proceeds applied to the opening of the Muscle Shoals. This land was sold in lots from twenty acres upwards, and the greater portion sold in Madison county under this act was purchased by speculators, as there was but little demand for this class of lands for purchasers. The swamp lands, as they were called, sold under this act, were generally in the river bottoms and covered with cane, and the portion purchased by land-owners generally consisted of small tracts adjoining their farm, to prevent future intrusion or for the timber where their original purchases included land, all of which was susceptible of profitable cultivation.

From the settlement of New Madison until the advent of railroads the intercourse between the people in the eastern and western portions of the county was restricted, and the greater portion of the trade of small farmers was with merchants in their own localities. There was but little cotton raised east of the mountains, and that little was generally bought by the country merchants, who either sent it to Nashville in wagons that returned laden with goods, or they consigned it to commission merchants, who advanced them money on it and sent it down Tennessee river to New Orleans, and, except those peddling to Huntsville, very few of our small farmers living at a distance from the county site ever had occasion to come here on business.

The roads across the mountains toward Maysville and the Big Cove were newly opened and rough and difficult in winter, and Flint River, without bridges, frequently interposed a serious obstacle to travel. There are many citizens of New Madison who

now visits Huntsville every week, raised in the county, who, until they attained their majority, had not visited the county site half a dozen times.

The older portion of the county, occupied by opulent slaveholders making cotton bales by hundreds, gave Huntsville its original prosperity, and while there is doubtless a great increase in the mercantile business of the town, yet it is of quite a different character from that of 1830 to 1840. At that time a large majority of our planters raised their supplies at home, and corn or meat was seldom if ever seen on sale at the stores. But luxury and extravagance among the wealthier classes became the order of the day, and the merchants found their profit in the sale of goods, wares and merchandise pertaining to well ordered households and to customers who did not haggle over prices but turned over their cotton to their merchants at the close of the year, with the simple direction "Take my account out of it and keep the rest until I call for it." In those days suspicion or distrust seldom arose between merchant and customer, and the long and intimate business relations subsisting between these parties, some of them for over a quarter of a century, is unquestionable evidence of the honesty and fair dealing of the merchants of that period. John Vining was State Senator from 1830 to 1835, and in addition to several of the representatives already mentioned the names of Henry King, James G. Carroll, Samuel Pette, George T. Jones, Jabez Leftwich, John D. Phelan and Wm. H. Glasscock, all of whom are favorably known to the older men of the present day, appear in the list of our members of the lower house. The county did not endorse rotation in office, as regarded political offices, but elected, year after year until they voluntarily retired, such men as Dr. Thomas Fearn, Samuel Walker, James W. McClung and James Penn, the latter of whom was speaker of the house in the years 1830 to 1831.

In the year 1833, Arthur F. Hopkins, one of the most brilliant and popular men of his time, and afterwards the leader of the Whigs in the State of Alabama, made his debut in politics as a member of the legislature from the county of Madison. Hon. Samuel Chapman, Judge of Madison County Court, had gone into office on the creation of the county court in the year 1823, and retired from the office in the year 1832, having been elected at that time the judge of the seventh judicial circuit where he occupied the judicial bench until the year 1849, making over a quarter of a

century holding a judicial office in our State. John C. Thompson, a man well known to the old citizens of Huntsville, succeeded him and held the office for twelve years.

Thomas Brandon, who held the office of clerk of the county court while Alabama was a territory, and afterwards, by successive elections by the people, to 1832, was in that year succeeded by Richard C. Purdem, who had served a term as assessor and collector for the county from 1829 to 1832, and who now entered on the duties of clerk of the county court, which he formed acceptably for a period of twelve years. Lemuel Mead, who was deputy clerk in the superior court under Francis E. Harris, a member of our State convention, was elected clerk on the organization of the courts in 1820, and was the only old officer who held over after the general election in 1832, resigning his office in 1836, when Wm. H. L. Brown succeeded him. Many of the books of these old clerks are models in chirography and accuracy, with few erasures or blots, and must have represented a vast expenditure of clerical labor, as many of the books, from beginning to end, are but little inferior to copper plate and will compare favorably with the records of any age or country.

The constitution enforced rotation in the sheriff's office, which had become a lucrative one, and in 1830 was filled by Jeff. Mills, long a prominent and influential citizen of Madison county and son-in-law of Thomas Brandon. He was succeeded by J. R. H. Acklen in 1831, and he by Daniel B. Turner in 1834, who on the expiration of his term of office served three years in the State Senate. He also served a term as postmaster of Huntsville, and was one of the most popular and influential of our public men. He died in the year 1866, and living through our civil war, in addition to the wreck of fortune and the usual calamities attending that disastrous period, experienced the saddest affliction in the death of his only son, James Camp Turner, one of the most promising young men of his time who fell in the first battle of Manassas.

James McCartney, Gross Scruggs, Stephen Biles and George T. Jones served as county commissioners for the greater portion of this time, and the county never had an abler or better board. On the death of James McCartney the vacancy was filled by Thomas McCrary, a man of fine business qualifications, who remained as member of the board until 1854, being the longest term of service in our county on record.



In the selection of officers to the time of which I write our county was peculiarly fortunate, as they were without exception, selected from the best of our citizens, and were so acceptable to the citizens of the county but there was but little disposition to change. There was but little of the political element in the selection of county officers, and when the old officers chosen on the formation of the constitution retired to private life they were succeeded by younger men full of energy and imbued with the progressive ideas of the period, who gave to the county prosperity at home and an enviable reputation abroad.

#### Chapter XIV.

##### Madison County 1835 and '36—The Texas Revolution.

In a former chapter I gave a brief sketch of the old militia organization in the county and names of some of the old company commanders. For many years prior to the period of which I now write there had been a military organization under different names in the city of Huntsville. In the year 1816, John W. Walker, in a letter to the Secretary of the Treasury, asking that the old Planters and Merchant's Bank at Huntsville be made a bank of deposit for government bonds, after detailing the wonderful prosperity of the new county and city, states that there are two regiments of militia in the county besides a company of light infantry in the city. In the militia law of the legislature of 1821 the light infantry company of Capt. Jno. K. Dunnis exempted from its provisions, and this was probably the first company in the State regularly enrolled as "State troops". But in the year 1829 the old "Huntsville Guards" was organized, and for many years comprised in its ranks many of our best citizens and earned a reputation for tone and discipline. This company organized under the auspices of John K. Dunn and Payton (sic) S. Wyatt, both men of military predilections, who, if they had not lived in a peaceful era, might have gone down to posterity with heroes who lived in later days. It numbered among its officers men like John C. Spotswood, Judge John C. Thomas and John W. Otey. In 1832 Payton S. Wyatt was elected Colonel of militia and was succeeded by Capt. John C. Spotswood, under whom the company was in its highest state of efficiency, and on

his removal from Huntsville to practice his profession in Athens, John W. Otey was elected to succeed him and was an able and zealous officer of the company for many years. This company and its successor, the famous "Huntsville Rifles," the larger portion of whose members died on the battle-fields of civil war, were the training schools of many of the officers of the Madison county companies who made a lasting reputation during that ventful period. Dr. John C. Spotswood, as far as I know, is the last surveying (sic) officer of the old Huntsville Guards, and there are but few of its old members now living.

Between the years 1830 and 1836 emigration from Madison county to Texas commenced. From the year 1803, when Louisiana was ceded by Spain to France, this has been debatable land with a disputed boundary, and when the United States with its restless border population, obtained possession of the lower Mississippi valley there were a series of battles around San Antonio and the old Alamo, the most serious of which was the defeat and wholesale massacre of a revolutionary army, 2500 strong, near San Antonio in 1836. But when Mexico formed a Republic and Moses and Stephen Austin had planted a flourishing American colony in the heart of Texas, there was a large emigration in that direction. The emigrants from Madison county went to New Orleans in flat-boats and thence on ship-board to Galveston. The first large body of emigrants from this county who went down the Mississippi and across the gulf in the early autumn of 1832 were most unfortunate. Before the vessel on which they embarked reached the mouth of the Mississippi the Asiatic cholera, that had gradually crept down the Mississippi from Canada and the great lakes broke out on board of the vessel. The officers of the panic-stricken ship concluded to make a push for Galveston, but a storm arose and delayed their voyage for three days, and the storm raging without and the cholera preying on the panic-stricken passengers shut up in the hold of the vessel intensified the horror of the situation. Before the ship reached land, out of one hundred and thirty passengers over sixty had died and had been buried in the sea, and many others died after they reached the land. The Nimmos and Davises were among the sufferers, three brothers of the Nimmo family dying on the voyage; but the survivors of this unexpected calamity pushed on into the upper country and performed their part in the stirring military events that were soon to follow.

At the commencement of the Texas Revolution the emigrant population of twenty thousand in that State had come principally from the Southern States of Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama and Mississippi, and the news of the bloody tragedies at the Alamo and Goliad, in February and March, 1836, aroused the whole southern country to arms. There were in every county friends of the murdered heroes, and at the time of the battle of San Jacinto of the sudden termination of the invasion of Texas, thousands were en route for the theatre of the war. I have already mention Capt. Peyton S. Wyatt. He was a brother-in-law of B. S. Pope and uncle of Mrs. Frank Martin, and raised a company in Madison county in the spring of 1836 and marched them into Texas. He arrived there much to his chagrin too late for the battle of San Jacinto, but participated in the closing scenes of the war and then came back with many of his command. He married a daughter of Col. Routt, an old citizen of Madison county, and returned to Texas a few years afterwards, where he died a victim of consumption. George D. Spotswood, a brother of Dr. J. C. Spotswood, was a member of his company, a promising young man, who died shortly after his return. The other members of the company that I can remember were Green Hamlet, Jno. C. Grayson, Wm. Wilson, brother of Mrs. Jack Fariss, Jas. V. A. Hinds, the last known survivor of the company, and Peter Daniels their fifer. Jas. V. S. Hinds, for a long time our county surveyor and a man well known to our people, spent several years in Texas. William Wilson, who never married, died about two years ago, and was an old, well-known citizen of the county. Peter Daniels was a freedman of color, a barber, and the most famous fifer of the day. If his history as I have heard it is authentic—and I do not doubt it—he was a hero of the Texas revolution deserving a monument for courage and fidelity. It appears that Peter Daniels' reputation as a musician has spread over into Mexico, and when Wyatt's company disbanded he remained in the Texas service, and in the desultory warfare following the battle of San Jacinto was captured by a band of Mexican troops. They gave him the alternative of immediate death or enlisting in their service as a fifer. He scorned their offer, told them he would die before he would play them a single note, and refusing even when confronted with his executioners he was riddled with bullets. This is a striking illustration of the intense hatred of the Texan soldiery against their Mexican invaders and of the cold-blooded barbarity of the latter, which was

retaliated by the Texans, at and after the victory of San Jacinto. Several of our old citizens lost friends and relatives either at the Alamo or Goliad, and even the school-boys were ready to march to the rescue. Circulars were distributed asking contributions in money and the names of volunteers, and there was doubtless a considerable sum raised for the cause. I have seen one of these old documents in the handwriting of Capt. Joseph Rice, of New Market, dated May 18th, 1836. The battle of San Jacinto had been fought on the 21st day of April, and in those slow-moving days out people probably had not heard full details of its glorious results. The document pledges the parties whose names are subscribed to contribute the amount opposite their names to the support of the cause of Texas if needed, and Joseph Rice, Elkanah Echols, Reuben Shotwell, Thomas Miller, Wm. B. Miller and Parhem N. Barker subscribed twenty dollars each, and many others sums from one dollar to ten, the whole amount pledged being one hundred and eighty-one dollars. The name of Wm. Smith is recorded as a volunteer, but the triumph of the Texans rendered any further material aid unnecessary.

While our county enjoyed profound peace this period, yet there was considerable excitement about Indian troubles in the central portion of the State, and they became so serious that Hon. C. C. Clay, in 1836, as Governor and commander-in-chief of the Alabama militia, ordered out the State Troops and took the field in person in co-operation with General Scott and Jesup. Several companies were organized in Madison county and their services tendered to the governor and they were enrolled, but the troubles were soon ended by the submission of the Indians, and our troops were engaged in no active services.

During the period of which I now write Byrd Brandon was United States Attorney for the northern district of Alabama and actively co-operated with Gov. Clay and General Jesup in organizing the militia of the northern district for a war that seemed inevitable. Col. Brandon was a young brother of Thomas and William Brandon, whose names have so often appeared in this history, and was superior to either of them in native talent. He studied law under Governor Clay, and had hardly attained his majority when admitted to practice, and when he was thirty years of age, had been associated as partner with such men as Judges Taylor, White and Silas Parsons, had been commissioned as aid

of Governor Israel Pickens with rank of lieutenant-colonel, and on General Jackson's accession to the presidency received the appointment of Attorney General, which office he held through General Jackson's administration. The state of his health requiring a change of climate, he was appointed by President Van Buren consul to Campeacy, and died in that country in 1838, at the age of thirty-eight. His career was a short and brilliant one, and by his death Madison county lost one of the most promising of a brilliant array of statesmen that gave us the prestige we enjoyed in our State and national councils. Jno. D. Brandon, of our city, is a son of Col. Byrd Brandon, a worthy son of a distinguished father, who being well known throughout the State as one of the leaders of the bar of North Alabama and being intimately acquainted with the people of our county, requires no eulogy from my pen.

## Chapter XV.

### Madison County to 1840.

The period in our county's history of which I now write was an uneventful one. Except the rumor of Indian troubles, to which I alluded in the last chapter, in which companies under command of Capt. John W. Otey, Capt. Rob't. W. Peevey, and others not remembered, were enrolled for service, there were no wars nor rumors of war. Our people had gone on in the even tenor of their way and were devoting their energies to the cause of education and internal improvement. Green Academy had, until within a few years of this period, stood without a rival in North Alabama, and was the nursery in which were trained many eminent citizens scattered throughout the State, who were now on the threshold of a brilliant future. On the 15th of January, 1831, under the auspices of the Presbyterian Church, the Huntsville Female Seminary was duly incorporated, with Arthur F. Hopkins, John M. Taylor, J. J. Pleasants, Wm. Clark, Thomas Fearn, B. S. Pope, James G. Birney, John Martin and Harry I. Thornton trustees, and launching out under the control of such an array of able and distinguished names. It is not strange that its reputation became national. It would be interesting, if possible so to do, to detail the long list of names of talented and cultured women who have been trained within its

precincts during its more than half a century's existence. Throughout the whole Tennessee valley its students are dispersed, the mothers and wives of the older school of divines, lawyers, statesmen and politicians.

While our educational facilities were improving, our works of internal improvement, commenced under favorable auspices, experienced the disasters of the financial crisis covering the decade in our whole country's history from 1836. The causes of these disasters belong to national history, and I shall not attempt to discuss them, interesting as the subject would be. I shall merely note their influence on the local interests of our county, and detail not the cause but the effect upon our county's welfare. One good effect produced by the financial crisis was the abolition of imprisonment for debt in 1836, an old law which, separate and apart from a humanitarian view, would soon have been imperative, as in the course of a year or two the debtors outnumbered the creditors.

The old Planters' and Merchants' Bank of Huntsville, the oldest in the State on expiration of its charter, was succeeded by a branch of the State bank, and taxation was so light that when the State tax was abolished in 1836 the expense of the State government being paid of the State bank, it was considered hardly worthy of mention; and when, on account of financial disaster to the banks, the legislature of 1843 levied a State tax—the first in seven years—there was no opposition and very little discussion of the matter.

Roads and turnpikes were considered as important by our fathers as by the present generation, and but for the financial crisis of 1836 our roads of the present day would be on quite a different basis. During this period the Decatur and Tuscumbia railroad, the oldest in the State, was constructed. The works of internal improvement that our fathers contemplated were the following: First, the opening of the Muscle Shoals, in which Madison county, on account of its enormous cotton crop, was most vitally interested. This failed on account of the inadequacy of the proceeds of the swamp lands donated to the purpose and the straight-laced opposition of the Democratic party, then in power, to appropriations for internal improvement, though some of the work on the Muscle Shoals was permanent and excellent in its

character and the money not entirely thrown away. In connection with this was also the incorporation of the Madison Turnpike Company, in 1834, and the building of the turnpike from Huntsville to Whitesburg, which has been of lasting benefit to our people. This work was undertaken and completed when the favorite project of a canal from Huntsville to Triana was abandoned as impracticable, though persisted in by the projectors until the undertaking threatened them with bankruptcy. It was the intention of our people to construct a turnpike from the Tennessee river, and if the enterprise had been undertaken ten years earlier, the project would doubtless have been accomplished.

In the year 1838 the Meridianville and Hazel Green Turnpike Company, under the auspices of Rodah Horton, Valentine Pruit, Dr. Wyche and other public-spirited citizens of Meridianville and Hazel Green, was incorporated. They were authorized to establish a stock company with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars to construct a turnpike from the terminus of the Whitesburg turnpike at the Green Bottom inn to the Tennessee line. The line of this road lay through a region of wonderful fertility, the greater portion of which had been purchased at the land sales of 1809, and a large portion of the lands had been cleared and was in a high state of cultivation, yielding enormous crops. But while few of the incorporators tided over the financial difficulties of the times many of the citizens along the route were seriously embarrassed by the financial disasters of the period and a large number utterly ruined and the enterprise was abandoned. The financial pressure prevailed so long that the people did not recover sufficiently to renew the undertaking until just before the war, the blighting effect of which laid our industries prostrate, and our people lost the opportunity of carrying out an enterprise that would have been a nucleus to an improved system of roads that would have proved of incalculable benefit to our people.

In opening Tennessee river to navigation it was thought that Flint river, traversing the eastern portion of the county, and Paint Rock, skirting our southeastern portion, could be opened to navigation, and it was conceded that a portion of the two and three per cent fund could be legitimately appropriated to that purpose. A slight appropriation had been made for the improvement of Flint that was of but little benefit to the people. The Flint River Navigation Company, incorporated at an early day, had been able

with a favorable tide to freight cotton to the Tennessee in bateaux or keelboats, but neither they nor the State government made it a navigable stream. Paint Rock being a narrower but deeper stream was considered more available. In the year 1839 the State legislature appropriated ten thousand dollars to the improvement of the navigation of Paint Rock. The counties interested in the work were Madison, Jackson and Marshall. Three commissioners were appointed, to-wit: W. B. Robinson, of Marshall county, Eldred W. Williams, of Jackson, and Dr. Alfred Moore, of Madison, with authority to employ competent persons to examine the river and make estimate of the costs. Then they were to let the work out to contractors, make all payments, receive vouchers and make return of their work to the legislature, embodying a full report of all proceedings under the law. This proved to be an ill-advised and unfortunate expenditure. The commissioners faithfully performed the duties enjoined by the law in having the river examined, estimates and contracts assigned, and scrupulously disbursed the appropriation for the work done; but the great mistake made was in attempting to open the stream for navigation by the expenditure of so small a sum. The river was lined to the water's edge by a luxuriant growth of white oak and other heavy timber, and it was decided to begin the work by clearing the stream of all timber likely to fall into it and obstruct its navigation. The contractors concluded to cut down all such timber into the river, on the theory that the high floods of winter would float it into the Tennessee and clear the river of all obstructions of that character. The work was done in summer when the trees were full of sap and covered with foliage. The river for nearly half a century has sent its annual floods to the broad Tennessee, yet the trunks of the prostrate giants of the forest lie buried in sand and drift in the bed of the river, in many instances not a dozen yards from their first resting place, and as far aught we know may lie there buried for ages to come. When winter came the logs refused to float, and so many were there that, unless at high tide, upper Paint Rock became the most unnavigable stream in the State. Nearly all the fords were obstructed and had to be cleared out, the boys dared not take a header into the tempting waters unless by close examination of the theatre of operations they were satisfied there was no danger of flattening out by contact with a hidden log or impalement on a treacherous snag, and seining in these waters was unheard of.



More than all the disappointment and chagrin attending the failure of the enterprise and the wasting of the money was the sickness that followed. The people along and near the river who had hitherto enjoyed average health with other portions of the country were several seasons scourged by miasmatic diseases which they reasonably attributed to the obstruction in the course of the stream and the decay of so much vegetable matter, the lighter portion of which was on account of the obstructions in the current thrown into the sloughs and ponds to generate miasma during the summer months. The lapse of time has improved the stream and restored health to the country, but Paint Rock would now be better adapted to navigation if not a dollar had ever been appropriated to improve it.

During the time of which I treat the old jail was taken off the square and a new one erected on the present site and the present court-house commenced.

## Chapter XVI.

### Representative Men from 1830 to 1840.

This chapter will be partly retrospective. In past articles I have had frequent inquiries concerning certain of our older public men, which I propose to answer. Men like John Hunt, Leroy Pope, David and Alfred Moore, John W. Linter, Governor Clay and some others who spent their lives among our people do not require any further mention, as their whole history is familiar to our people. But a few of our earlier statesmen died before the memory of the present generation and many at the time or soon after the rapid settlement of the Tennessee valley in 1813 and '19 followed the ride of emigration and became leaders and pioneers in their settlements.

Many of the great statesmen of the South, born and raised in the county, went southward on the settlement of the Creek lands, and at the time of which I write were entering on a brilliant career. Many of the younger men of this latter class still survive, and wherever their lot is cast they are trusted and honored leaders among the southern people.

Dr. Henry Chambers was one of the most distinguished of the early politicians. He was a Virginian by birth and a member of our first constitutional convention. He was a man of ability, of high literary attainments, in easy circumstances and one of the most popular men in North Alabama. He was twice beaten for Governor by Israel Pickens, one of the most popular and influential men of his time, and in the year 1825 was elected to the U. S. Senate over Judge Wm. Kelly, also a Madison county man, but died in Virginia in February, 1826, before taking his seat. His family emigrated to Mississippi, where his sons became prominent, one of them representing the State in Congress. The good old county of Chambers was named in honor of him. James Titus is said to have been the oldest member of the bar in North Alabama, having been admitted to practice long before Madison county was organized. He was a member of the territorial legislature for several terms, and when Alabama was formed into a territory, in 1818, was elected a member of the council, as the upper house was called. It so happened that he was the only member of that august body, was of course president, opened and adjourned and did all the voting, and enjoyed the honor of being the only man who ever held the office of member of the council of Alabama territory.

Judge Wm. Kelly, who came here from Tennessee about the year 1817, was then in the prime of life and had been judge of the circuit court, brought with him a high reputation which he fully sustained. He was elected to Congress in 1821, when the whole State was his district, succeeding John Crowell our first member of Congress. He was soon after elected U. S. Senator and served until succeeded by Dr. Chambers in 1825. He was a member of the legislature of 1827, and soon afterwards removed to New Orleans, where he died about the year 1835.

Wm. J. Adair, nephew of Gov. Adair, of Kentucky, and a distinguished lawyer, came here about the time of the land sales of 1818, served in the legislature in 1823 and '24, was elected circuit judge in 1832, and died in office in 1835. The brothers, Harry I. and James I. Thornton, were raised in Madison county. Harry I. Thornton was district attorney during the term of John Quincy Adams, and was elected judge of the supreme court in 1833. He resided for many years in Green county, which he represented in the State senate, was afterwards appointed to the lucrative office

of land commissioner of California, and died in San Francisco in the year 1862. Jas. I. Thornton read law in Huntsville and was the law partner for a short time of Judge Henry W. Collier, who, after a short residence of two years in Huntsville settled in Tuska-loosa. Jas. I. Thornton removed to Green county, was Secretary of State from 1824 to 1834, and a prominent and influential man in Green county.

Neither must I omit to mention Judge Jno. E. Moore and Col. Sydenham Moore, sons of Dr. Alfred Moore, noble scions of distinguished family. They both read law and were licensed to practice in Huntsville. John E. Moore, the elder brother, removed to Florence and entered on the successful practice of his profession. He represented Lauderdale county in the legislature of 1847, and was elected judge of the fourth district in 1852, and remained in office until the war, and upon the occupation of North Alabama by the federals he removed to Green county, where he died in 1864. Col. Sydenham Moore settled in Eutaw about the year 1833, after Capt. Otey's company of volunteers, of which he was a member, disbanded. He was judge of the county court of Green, served a year in the Mexican war, was appointed judge of the circuit court in 1837, was soon afterwards elected to Congress by a large majority, from which he withdrew on the secession of the State of Alabama, was elected Colonel of the Eleventh Alabama, and was mortally wounded in the battle of Seven Pines. He was a veritable chevalier Bayard, gentle and courteous in behavior, of graceful demeanor and of undaunted courage, a man without fear and without reproach.

Judge Richard Ellis, of Franklin, was an old resident of Madison county, coming here at an early date, was delegate to the constitutional convention from Franklin in 1819, was first circuit judge of the fourth circuit, serving from 1819 to 1825, was a prominent actor in the Texas revolution and president of the convention that declared its independence. He was related by marriage to the Garths, then of Morgan county.

John D. Phelan, one of Alabama's distinguished jurists and the father of Major Ellis Phelan, our present Secretary of State, was born in New Jersey but raised in Madison. He was for a time editor of the Democrat, and in 1836 was elected State's attorney. He represented Madison county in the legislature in 1834

and '35 and Tuscaloosa county in 1839 and was speaker of the house. He was circuit judge of that district from the year 1841 to 1852, when he was elected judge of the supreme court and was clerk of the supreme court until the war, and after the war was professor of the law in Sewanee University. His brother, James Phelan, was born in Madison county, learned the printer's trade under Philip Woodson, was State printer in the year 1841, afterwards removed to Aberdeen, Mississippi, and was Confederate States Senator from 1862 to the close of the war. Jas. Phelan was an able journalist and as an orator had few if any superiors in the south. He married a daughter of Dr. Alfred Moore.

John McKinley came to Huntsville in 1818. At that time he was about forty years of age and a distinguished lawyer. In 1826 he was elected to the U. S. Senate, and about that time settled in Lauderdale county, and was again elected in 1836, but before taking his seat he was appointed associate justice of the supreme court, which office he held until his death in 1852. The old war horse of Democracy, David Hubbard, of Lawrence, settled in Huntsville about the time he attained his majority 1814 or '15, working here as a carpenter. Young as he was he had served in the year of 1812 and was wounded at the battle of New Orleans. He read law here and about the year 1819 or '20 opened a law office at Moulton. He was a man of strong common sense, a shrewd politician and popular with the masses. During a public life of over forty years, he was solicitor, member of the legislature either in the senate or lower house for several terms, was member of congress in 1839 and 1849, but was thrice defeated by General Geo. S. Houston who was invincible in his district. Maj. Hubbard lived many years after the war, and I believe died at an advanced age in Tennessee, his native State. Wm. L. and Dr. David Hubbard McLain, two worthy citizens of our county, are his lineal descendants.

Madison county has furnished so many eminent men who became prominent throughout the south that it is impossible to enumerate them. Among them were Dr. J. P. Coman and Luke Pryor, of Athens, Gov. A. E. O'Neal, of Colbert, Gov. John J. Pettus, of Mississippi, Gen. Jones M. Withers, Judge A. R. Manning and Dr. Claude Mastin and Hon. Percy Walker, of Mobile, Wm. B. Modawell, of Perry, and A. J. Hamilton and Morgan Hamilton and chief justice Wm. Moore, of Texas. Many of them,

at the time of which I write, were in the prime of life and at the Meridian of fame, while others, many of whom are still living, were just entering on a successful and honorable career and belong to a later era.

Gov. Reuben Chapman, one of the most noted men of his time, when an old citizen of Morgan county, coming to Madison about the year 1850, when he retired to private life and was a citizen of this county until his death in 1882. He was a native of Virginia. He came to Huntsville in the year 1824, read law with his brother, Judge Samuel Chapman, and was admitted to practice in Huntsville, but about the year 1825 removed to Somerville. In 1832 he was elected State Senator from Morgan county, and remained in office until 1835, when he was elected to congress, defeating Robert T. Scott, of Jackson, and William H. Glascock, of Madison. In 1837 he was elected over ex-Gov. Gabriel Moore by a large majority, after which he was reelected four successive terms with but little opposition. In the year 1845 Joshua W. Martin, an independent candidate, had defeated Col. Nat. Terry, the regular nominee of the Democratic party, for Governor by near six thousand majority. This was owing to divisions in the party on local questions, and the Whigs were very hopeful of electing Col. Nich. Davis in 1847 and obtaining control of the State. The Democratic convention, in 1847 nominated Gov. Chapman without any solicitation or effort on his part, and he was elected by a handsome majority, and his wise, prudent and economical administration relieved the State from its embarrassing financial position and restored confidence in and gave permanent control of the State to his party. But the Democrats who had voted for Joshua L. Martin resented his exclusion from a second term and united with the supporters of Hon. Henry W. Collier in opposition to Gov. Chapman's renomination. In this crisis Gov. Chapman set an example that later politicians could well imitate. A majority of the convention were favorable to him, but under the two-third's rule, though his success was quite probable, yet there was danger to the party in a heated contest for the nomination, and Gov. Chapman, for the sake of harmony, voluntarily retired from the contest and gave his influence and support to his distinguished successor. Gov. Chapman, at the earnest solicitation of our people, became a member of the legislature in 1855, but served only a single term and filled no public position since that date, except

presidential elector in 1860. Gov. Chapman was largely gifted with practical sense, eminent tact and farseeing political sagacity, and as an active, vigilant and resolute public officer had but few equals and no superior. He did not shine as an orator, possessing but little personal magnetism, boasted of none of the arts of the demagogue, and his deportment rather repelled than invited undue familiarity. Yet with all these serious obstacles to popularity his endowments were of a character to give him a strong and lasting influence with the people. His financial ability was of the highest order and gave him a prominent place on the congressional committees. His mind was a store-house of useful knowledge and his fine colloquial powers enabled him to give his sound practical convictions on the issues of the day in an intelligible and impressive manner that edified and enlightened his hearers and gave him an enviable reputation for honesty, sincerity and sagacity. In his old age he was the Nestor of our younger politicians, a wise and disinterested councillor, eminently liberal and conservative and deeply solicitous of the welfare of his adopted State.

During this decade the most distinguished Emigrant to our county was Judge Wm. Smith, who came here about the year 1834. He had already been supreme judge and U. S. State senator in South Carolina and the political antagonist of John C. Calhoun, and left South Carolina on account of his disapproval of the nullification tendencies of his people. When he came here he had passed his seventieth year and had already made a national reputation. He served in our State legislature from 1836 to just before his death in 1840, when he left an immense estate, and his descendants of the fourth generation still own considerable property in Huntsville and vicinity.

## Chapter XVII.

### Huntsville, 1830 to 1840.

I have brought up the history of the whole county to the year 1840, but I have not for a considerable period of time alluded to the city of Huntsville. I heretofore endeavor to picture the appearance of the city in the days when, by the building of the store-houses of the old merchants, the public square, with the old brick courthouse on an eminence in its centre, began to take form

and shape, and the substantial brick residences south of Williams street formed an elegant suburb rather than a part of the city. In the year 1830, with the exception of the comfortable brick tenements embowered in native forests, scattered around the city and generally environed by fertile fields in a high state of tillage, the town was compactly clustered round the three sides of the square east of the spring. The water-works, commenced by Hunter Peel and James Barclay in 1823 were in successful operation, and the old breast-wheel in its ceaseless round was furnishing the city with an ample supply of pure water. The greater portion of the city was included in the old corporation between Lincoln, Williams, Gallatin and Holmes streets and much of the city beyond these limits was then in cultivation, with old-fashioned worm fences reaching the streets on either side. Old Green Academy stood nearly isolated and embowered in a grove of primitive forest trees with open fields on the north, west and south. From the junction of Green and Holmes streets Levin Sheperd, Major Fleming, John Neely, Jere Murphy and some others had built north of Holmes street, with no settlements south. The residence and the lots, negro quarters and outbuildings of Thomas and William Brandon were located near the junction of Jefferson and Holmes, and there was a burial ground a little north of this point, through which Jefferson street now extends, and it is probably that beneath this busy thoroughfare are the last resting places of some of the forgotten dead of the early city.

Martin Miller lived in a substantial log house on the site of Mr. Weil's present residence, and at the foot of the hill the old tan-yard was in successful operation, and through its open gates there was a constant throng carrying in hides and returning loaded with the leather, that was distributed throughout the farms in the county and made into shoes by itinerant cobblers who traversed the county with their kit of tools and made up the shoes for the farmers. On a large number of these plantations they made shoes both for black and white, and there was but little difference in the style and finish of the work, except that the farmers laid in the leather for negro shoes of the russet shade, as it came from the tannery, and bought a side or two of finished black leather for the family supply.

The road to Whitesburg was much traveled, and in the winter season became almost impracticable (sic) and outside of the old

city limits there was not a hundred feet of McAdamized road in the whole county.

The population of the city in 1830 was about two thousand, and the Methodists, Presbyterians and Primitive Baptists had erected houses of worship and were supported by large and liberal congregation. From the year 1830 to 1840, though embracing a period of great financial distress, yet was included a period of great improvement in the city and vicinity. The corporation extended one quarter of a mile from the court-house to each side of the 160 acres of land in its bounds, from which was excepted the negro quarters of Thomas and Willam Brandon on Holmes street, then called the western road. The old jail was built on the present jail lot in the year 1832, and the market house on the public square had been taken away and the market place removed to the Holding Block. The old brick court-house on the public square had become dilapidated and insecure, and after discussing ways and means for several years the commissioners finally let out the contract for the building of a new one. George Steele, a fine mechanic and a scientific architect, planned the building and drew up its specifications. Geo. Steele had come here from Virginia young and poor, but by his energy and mechanical skill contributed largely to the development of architectural taste among our people and soon made a wide reputation and acquired wealth. He married a daughter of Col. Matthew Weaver and raised a large family, among whom were the accomplished wife of the lamented General E. D. Tracy, Matthew W. Steele the well-known architect, and Col. Jno. F. Steele, a celebrated civil engineer. But one of the men who constructed the court-house from corner-stone to minaret still lives in our midst, one of the last survivors of the celebrated mechanics of that era, whose finished and skillful workmanship gave both elegance and stability to our public and private edifices. Our fellow-citizen William Wilson and James Mitchell were awarded the entire contract, and broke ground for the new building in the month of July, 1836, and the first court held in the new court-house in the fall of 1838. The excellent blue limestone of the foundation was quarried on Russell Hill. The white limestone of the steps into the hall and of the upper stone work was quarried on the spurs of Monte Sano, and the paving material from "Round Top." Messrs. Wilson and Mitchell's contract included grading the site of the new court-house and removing the old one, and the



workmen, in grading the square and digging the foundation, excavated a considerable quantity of loose flat rocks, which they used in covering fissures in the rocks of unknown depths across which the foundation walls were carried. To look upon the level green sward of the public square and the substantial basement of the court-house would make it difficult to realize that underneath are yawning caverns reaching down to the hidden waters of Huntsville Spring, with arches cleft by fissures extending up to the foundation walls of the court-house. Yet so sure and solid was the foundation laid that there was not on its completion nor has there since ever been any perceptible change or difference in level, except a slight depression of its north-east corner. The bricks for the court-house were made by Messrs. Wilson and Mitchell on the lots now occupied by George M. Neely and Fred. A. Howe, which were afterwards graded to the street level and sold for building lots. The court-house cost about fifty-two thousand dollars, and when finished it was considered one of the finest edifices of the kind in the Southern States. Messrs Wilson and Mitchell quarried the stone in the mountains, made the brick, superintended hauling and transportation of all the material, and also directed and managed the inside work and plastering, and when they delivered the keys of the completed building to the county authorities they left to future generations a lasting testimony of their skill and fidelity as master builders.

While the court-house was in progress of construction George Steel was building the bank edifice, now occupied by the National Bank, which is another monument to the skill and fidelity of the builders of that time.

Bartley M. Lowe, at that time in the meridian of his prosperity, contributed greatly to the improvement of the city by erecting store-houses near the court-house square. Andrew Beirne erected the present Post Office building. Robert J. Manning built the present Bell Factore store and also the costly residence north of the Holmes street afterwards occupied by Dr. David Moore, and Judge Wm. Smith built the substantial and costly establishment covering what is now known as the "Calhoun block" or United States court-house.

Although the banks had suspended and a large proportion of its paper currency was worthless and nearly all at a heavy discount, yet the town was steadily improving, and the period from

1830 to 1840 was remarkable not only for the erection of our public buildings and many private residences that have contributed to the reputation of the city, but also for a vast amount of work in extending and grading the streets and improving the drainage. The completion of the Whitesburg turnpike was of great benefit to the people of the city and entire county in facilitating the transportation of our large cotton crop to the Tennessee river.

I have now brought this history down to the year 1840. Here I propose to conclude my work for the present. Should time and opportunity be afforded to resume the subject in the future I will write of men who still survive or live in the memory of the older citizens now living. Since entering on this work I have obtained much valuable information from our old citizens, both verbally and by reference to many interesting papers they have kindly placed at my disposal, and should I ever revise my work by the information so obtained I will be able to correct some errors in former articles and also to add materially to the subject matter. While from county records and other resources I have been able to give short biographical sketches of public men who were prominent in their several vocations, I have been able to glean but little of the history of our periodicals and journalists or of our pioneer churches and ministers who came here with our ancestors and built up our religious denominations as the country progressed. The abundance of the material available for the chronicler of events from 1850 to the present time and the necessity of careful and judicious selection demands more time and attention than I can, at the present time, bestow. Should it be my good fortune to collate and properly arrange material for the continuation of these articles to later times, I will then undertake the task of completing the history of the county to the present time.

THE END.

FOR SALE

History of Alabama  
and  
Dictionary of Alabama Biography

A Four-Volume Work By

THOMAS M. OWEN

—Price \$20.00 per set

This work is now out of print and constitutes the most  
valuable compilation of Alabama history material yet printed.

---

Order from

MRS. MARIE B. OWEN

World War Memorial Building

Montgomery, Alabama